

Introduction

I ran and ran until I couldn't anymore my feet were hurting running on a gravel without shoes was no child's play to top it all we were experiencing one of the heaviest storms. I sat on the grass trying to catch my breath then I remembered my little sister's voice "yummy I'm scared" I cried out loud i wailed letting the rain mix with my tears. I had no choice but to return home she couldn't hide under the bed for the entire night. I walked back home feeling defeated as soon as I opened the door I was welcomed by a hot slap

Me: "baba im sorry please" he kicked my stomach I felt something brake

Dad: "you little hoe who told you to put your hand on me" he kneeled in front of me forcefully opening my legs my panties were already torn from earlier on when he tried to rap me and I hit him which is why I ran away

Me: "baba please I'm still sore" he slapped me again

Dad: "ei voestek" he slammed into me hard I cried out loudly i was as dry as a desert, it got worse every time he did it

Dad: "mmh Jesus mmh you taste better every time your mother has nothing on you" he groaned moving faster and harder on top of me his sweat wetting my already wet face

Dad: "kiss me" I shook my head crying which only gained me a fist to my jaw he put his lips on mine I kissed him back. He pulled back then started strangling me I knew he was about to come

Dad: "grrrrr sssh" I was running out of air then he stopped collapsing on top of me he kissed me I had no choice but to kiss him back

Dad: "if you abort my child again I will kill you yamkelani" I didn't say anything he wiped my tears "do you hear me"

Me; "yes"

Dad: "yes, what? Am I dog"

Me: "yes baba"

Dad: "good" he got off me "go to bed I have an early day tomorrow at work and I want porridge for breakfast"

Me: "yebo baba" I got up went to our room I pulled Masisi out under the bed she was asleep. I put on the bed got in behind her holding her close I cried myself to sleep.

Hi. Im Yamkelani Siphosihle Duma I'm 16 in grade 10, from Umzinto KwaDumisa. I have a little sister Masisi Snenhlanhla she is 8 in grade 3 she's my life my everything the only reason I haven't killed myself I can't leave her alone with this cruel people we call parents.

This is my life story

Part 1

I woke up early when the alarm rang at 05:30 I quickly turned it off before Masisi woke up. I put on my flip flops I walked out the bedroom closing the door behind me, took a 25 liter bucket from the kitchen I walked for 15 minutes to the taps where I collected the water as I was about to put the bucket on my head someone took it our hands touching I quickly let go

and looked up

Me: "oh it you"

Nzuzo: "let me carry it for you"

Me: "I don't want to get into trouble Nzuzo" Nzuzo went to my school but in grade 12 he lived few houses away from mine

Nzuzo: "you won't, come let's go" I sighed and let him carry the bucket "why didn't you go get the water yesterday"

Me: "didn't you see the storm" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "oh ja I saw it hawu"

Me: "where you coming from so early"

Nzuzo: "had to leave the cows at fields" nzuzo's uncle had cows so he took care of them for extra cash

Me: "ok" the sun was coming out I found him staring at me he put the bucket down and held my cheek

Nzuzo: "your father is home"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "im grown and im strong now let's go before you get me in trouble" we continued walking just faster when we got two houses away from mine he put the bucket on my head

Nzuzo: "I will see you at school"

Me; "ok" I walked home when I got there I boiled the water in the kettle while I made lunch for my father my sister and myself, the water boiled before I was done with the lunches I started making porridge when the water boiled I poured it in a bathing dish boiled another kettle. I put the cold water in the dish making it warm then I took it to my father's room I

knocked he opened the door all naked

Dad: "saw' bona Yamkelani"

Me: "yebo baba I brought you water" he let me in I put the dish down when I stood up he was standing behind me I could feel his hard penis on my back

Me: "I have to go the porridge will burn"

Dad: "I won't take long" he threw me on the bed

Me: "baba please we going to run late I have a test" he slapped me

Dad: "shut up so I can finish quickly" he pulled down my track pants and spit on my vigena before turning me around he fucked me hard when he was done he turned me around and kissed me I got off the bed got dressed I went to the kitchen wiping my tears I don't even know why I still cried. The porridge had burnt I had to start afresh I finshed making the

lunches took water to Masisi so she could bath

home it felt warm I could feel his heart beating his smell filled my nostrils but it didn't suffocate me like dad's it didn't make me cry instead I smiled then he pulled back letting go of me

Nzuzo: "I got you okay all you have to do is hold my hand and cry out to me no matter what just cry out, okay?"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "you worth everything I could give you and so much more"

Me: "I want to believe you"

Nzuzo: "I'll spend the rest of our lives proving it to you. Now come let me buy you a popsicle it a hot day" I smiled as we turned a corner going to the tuck shop he bought 3 popsicles

Me: "why two"

Nzuzo: "it's for Masisi"

Me: "thank you" We were almost at home

Nzuzo: "look at your sister playing nabo tokoloshe" he was laughing I pushed him

Me: "leave her alone" Masisi was playing alone in the yard we didn't have friends our parents didn't want us to have apparently all the girls around are bad influences

Nzuzo: "she is so cute though just like her big sister"

Me: "so you saying im cute?" I chuckled

Nzuzo: "you know you cute"

Me: "bye I'll see you Monday"

Nzuzo: "I'm going to Mzinto tomorrow need to post my cao form I'll buy you a phone"

Me: "I won't accept it"

Nzuzo: "I need to communicate with you, June exams are around the corner I won't have time I'll be going to school early coming out late"

Me: "I won't take it" Masisi ran to us we had stopped by my house

Masisi: "hello Nzuzo" I gave her the popsicle "thank you"

Nzuzo: "hello Masisi"

Me: "Nzuzo bought it for you"

Masisi: "thank you, Yammy im hungry"

Me: "bye Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'll meet you by the river tomorrow at 17:00" I sighed

Me: "ok" I took Masisi's hand we walked in the yard Nzuzo watched us until we got in the house

Masisi: "nzuzo likes you"

Me: "what you know about liking?, go change I'll make lunch" she went up singing zongthola mbhlome lanjeni by mafikizolo I laughed joining her in we sang loudly, I warmed yesterday's food and was only going to buy bread on Sunday afternoon I left the pots on the stove went to change.

*

Saturday we woke up late I made porridge we ate while watching yotv after breakfast I cleaned she washed the dishes, I did our washing I left it outside on the line to dry we watched tv she had already took a bath around 15:30 I went to bath I got dressed in jeans and t-shirt with pumps I tied my hair making a high bun we had long hair naturally straight

Masisi: "Yammy you look beautiful"

Me: "awu come on Masisi it's just simple clothes that you always see me wearing"

Masisi: "mmh go bring me back popsicle"

Me: "it late you can't it when the sun has gone down"

Masisi: "ok"

Me: "are you sure you okay with being here alone"

Masisi: “yes I will keep the door locked if baba comes home I’ll run and hide under the bed”
I sighed and kissed her forehead

Me: “I’ll be back soon” she nodded I took a bucket and left after making sure she locks the door. I walked to the taps I found Nzuzo already there with some girls I filled the bucket and watched them he hadn’t seen me when it was full I asked another girl to help me put it on my head that’s when he saw me

Nzuzo: “hawu Yamkelani why didn’t you tell me you here”

Me: “you were busy” he took the bucket of my head

Nzuzo: “I came here for you”

Me: “didn’t seem that way” I said with a little attitude he chuckled

Nzuzo: “are you jealous”

Me: “what? Me? Ofcos not” he just laughed hard

Nzuzo: “wait here” he ran to the group of girls and came back with a plastic

Nzuzo: “hold here and let’s go” I took it we walked

Me: “so did you post”

Nzuzo: “yep”

Me: “you applied late”

Nzuzo: “it just 2nd options I already applied at Wits” that left an unsettling feeling

Me: “hope everything goes well”

Nzuzo: “me too, we should hurry it getting dark and Masisi is alone” we walked faster when we got to home he gave me the bucket I gave him back his plastic

Nzuzo: “it yours, charge the phone for the whole night”

Me: “im not taking the phone” he kissed my cheek and left running I looked at him as he disappeared running I knocked

Me: “Masisi it me” she opened I gave her the plastic went to leave the bucket in the kitchen went back to the lounge (we had a 4 room house just 2 bedrooms a kitchen and lounge) she was already taking the things out

Masisi; “wow! You must go to Nzuzo all the time” I just smiled I felt uncomfortable he had bought a pink Nokia Asha, chips and chocolate all in two, 2 streetwise 2 with a 2 liter coke and bread

Me: “start eating I’ll go charge the phone” I went to our room charged the phone went back to my sister we ate she couldn’t stop laughing we had had kfc before if baba got paid but we always shared the 2 pieces.

*

Baba didn’t come back again the whole of the following week. But Friday when I came back I found both him and mom home watching tv I got in and greeted they greeted back I went to my room Masisi’s bag was on the bed I closed the door and looked under the bed she was there

Me: “hey”

Masisi: “yammy” I pulled her out “I’m scared”

Me: “don’t be baby im here now change and wear tracksuits okay don’t show your skin” I don’t even know how that was going to help we both changed wore tracksuits I went to make lunch for the both of us they had bought groceries which means I would have to take masisi’s lunch money as well in order to pay for her transport we ate in the kitchen I washed the dishes and started preparing dinner my father had to have meat with all his dinner mom got in

Mom: “what are you cooking”

Me: “chicken and rice”

Mom: “your father wants beef” I put back the chicken took out beef

Me: “he could have said so earlier now I have to defrost this then he is going to complain that dinner is late” I was mumbling thinking she had left but when I felt a hot slap I regretted even

thinking

Mom: “just because you fucking my husband doesn’t mean you get to talk to me like that” she walked out I cooked with tears running down Masisi was in our room playing games on my phone. I finished cooking dished up for everyone we had dinner later everyone went to sleep I had Masisi sleeping on the couch with her head on my lap I was still watching tv when my phone rang it was on silence I took it out answered

Me: “hello”

Nzuzo: “im outside I need to see you”

Me: “dad is home”

Nzuzo: “im leaving for durban now so please ma’Duma wam please”

Me: “2 minutes”

Nzuzo: “ok thank you” I carefully lifted Masisi then sneaked out

Nzuzo: “I have to go with my uncle I’ll be back Sunday”

Me: “have a safe journey” we hugged he kissed my head I ran back in but I froze when I found my father in a lounge with a sajmboke and my phone on the table I touched my pocket then remembered I hadn’t put it in my pocket

Me: “ba.... Baba” he threw it on the wall then stood up coming to me

Dad: “you cheating on me, who is this man buying you things” he started hitting me I was crying begging for mercy at one point I was even begging for the lord to take me

Dad: “you.are.mine.yamkleni” he emphasized each word “i am not going to share you with anyone in anyway I give you love and you return that by being a bitch nxa” he walked away I just cried I couldn’t even move a finger every part of my body was hurting I was still crying when I felt small hands on my face I looked up it was Masisi

Masisi: “im sorry yammy” she was crying as well

Me: “help me up” she did every step brought excruciating pain we got to our bedroom I took off my tracksuits and stood in front of the mirror I had bruises all over

Masisi: “wait here” she ran out came back with a basin “I put cold water and detol” I laid on the floor she wiped my bruises

PART 3

I had hardly slept I was in so much pain, Masisi had to sleep on the floor because she kicks in her sleep she was hurting me.

Masisi: “Yammy” she was hitting my face lightly

Me: “im up Masisi, what’s wrong?”

Masisi: “I brought you breakfast sit up” I did ignoring the pain

Me: “did you eat”

Masisi: “no mom said you will make your own egg and sausage so I giving you mine”

Me: “go get another 3 slices of bread and juice we will share the egg and sausage” she nodded and ran out I cut both the egg and sausage in halves when she came back □ we ate

Masisi: “I got you something” she got off the went under the bed and came out with my phone

Me: “how did you get it”

Masisi: “I stole it in their bedroom it wasn’t broken I put it back together for you it still working”

Me: “don’t ever! Ever ever! Go back to that bedroom Masisi am I clear”

Masisi: “yeah”

Me: “Masisi are you hearing me?!”

Masisi: “yes I’m sorry” she looked down

Me: “thank you” she nodded and came back to bed I had lots of missed calls and sms from

Nzuzo

Masisi: "I don't know how to boil water guess we not bathing today"

Me: "yeah" she took the dishes to the kitchen I sent Nzuzo a please call me he called back immediately

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "hey why weren't you answering your phone I've been worried" something in his voice just made me cry

Me: "baba found the phone last night when I came back from you he hit me so bad Nzuzo I can't even move everything hurts" he let out a lot of swore words

Nzuzo: "I'll kill him I swear I'll kill him" we came from a place where everyone minds their own business, where there's no faith in the justice system reporting my father wouldnt do me any good I've reported him before he didn't even spend a night in jail on the other side I got a beating of a lifetime I slept outside in the cold weather for two nights without food after that they left for the whole month leaving us without food or money we both didn't go to school for a week because I couldn't move due to pain.

Me: "just calm down"

Nzuzo: "I wish I was there"

Me: "it hurts so bad Nzuzo I'm in so much pain"

Nzuzo: "I'll send Thandi to buy panado at the tuck shop I'll call you when she is by your house send Masisi to go get them" Thandi was his cousin

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I love you Yamkelani"

Me: "nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I know you can't love me, you don't know how to love me I've heard it all before. All im saying is I love you"

Me: "ok"

Nzuzo: "let me call Thandi" he dropped the call.

Later on the door opened and mom came in

Mom: "you busy sleeping here who do you think is going to cook dinner"

Me: "im sorry im coming"

Mom: "good, your father bought chicken you have to slaughter it and make steam bread"

Me: "ok"

Mom: "heard you got a boyfriend" she laughed clapping her hands" I don't even know who would look at your ugly face you nothing but a worthless bitch nxa" she walked out I stood up covered Masisi nicely with the blanket she was asleep, the pills Nzuzo got me were helping the pain was a little numb. I went downstairs started with mixing the steam bread then I cut the kitchen which I had to chase around the kitchen first after cutting it I cleaned it up then boiled it I was peeling potatoes when I smelt him before he even said anything he kissed my neck from behind

Dad: "mmh I love your food sthandwa sam" I moved from him but he pulled me back roughly he started biting my neck while rubbing my vigina under my track pants

Me: "baba you hurting me my body is sore from the beating" he just clicked his tongue and walked away. I finshed cooking hours later we had dinner when my parents went to sleep I cleaned and washed the dishes I also went to bed I chatted with Nzuzo on whatsapp until I slept.

.
2 months later I had hardly been seeing Nzuzo and dad was home a lot sometimes he even forced me to sleep with him in his bedroom I wouldn't sleep those nights he would have sex with me the whole night. I hadn't gotten my periods for the whole two months when I woke up vomiting I knew I was in trouble having an abortion scared the living shit out of me when

Me: "thank you"

Him: "I'm gift"

Me: "Yam.."

Nzuzo: "walk away" he shouted from a little far he was rushing to us

Gift: "hawu Nzuzo bru sorry I didn't know she is yours"

Nzuzo: "well now you know so voestek and play far" gift stood up and walked away

Me: "that was unnecessary"

Nzuzo; "yes it was" he sat next to me and kissed my cheek "what you eating"

Me: "polonoy, do you want?"

Nzuzo: "yes" I gave him some we shared my lunch "are you okay you look a little bloated"

Me: "I'm okay"

Nzuzo: "so I got accepted at Wits" my insides clenched

Me: "you going to leave me" he held my chin

Nzuzo: "I'll be back before you even know it I'll take us out of this place I promise you"

Me: "don't make promises you can't keep you leaving I'll be here you will meet better girls that side who will give you everything you need and want things I can't give you and I can't even hold that against you so don't promise me anything you don't owe me anything"

Nzuzo: "I owe you my heart I love you thembalami"

Me: "ok"

Nzuzo: "and I will come for holidays my uncle said June holidays are long at varsities so I will visit" Nzuzo parents died 5 years ago in a car accident so he stays with his uncle and cousins

Me: "whatever"

Nzuzo: "don't be upset"

Me: "I have no right to be upset"

Nzuzo: "im doing this for you for Masisi for us, we need this so I can take us out of this place"

Me: "ok"

Nzuzo: "now tell me what's bothering you I heard you were zoning out in class"

Me: "who told you that"

Nzuzo: "someone I asked to keep an eye on you for me"

Me: "I.." I got tongue tied where would I even begin to tell him im having my father's baby he will hate me and see me for what I really am a dirty bitch who fucks her father

Nzuzo: "talk to me"

Me: "I'm just tired Nzuzo school is draining that's all"

Nzuzo: "ok thembalam" we had finished my lunch "come let's go buy juice and chips I'm still hungry" he stood up and pulled me up we walked to the auntys and bought then went back meeting Hloni and her crew on the way she made that I will cut your throat sign

Nzuzo: "she won't do anything to you or she will have me to deal with" he screamed a little so they could hear him

Me: "you getting me in trouble Nzuzo I will have to deal with them when you leave next year"

Nzuzo: "I'll take you with me" he laughed I just smiled which caused him to laugh more I ended up laughing because of his laughter I was still laughing when he held my cheeks we looked at each other

Nzuzo: "you so beautiful ndoni yami yamanzi" I blushed he put his lips on mine I breathed out he started kissing me i wanted to kiss him back but I didn't want to kiss him like how that man I call a father taught me to kiss him, he pulled back

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry I just thought .."

Me: "no it's okay I just don't know how to uhm ..."

Nzuzo: "to kiss" I nodded he laughed

Me: "don't! It not funny"

Nzuzo: "oh yeah it is Yammy" the bell rang "I have to go I won't see you after school I got a class but send me a call back when you going to fetch water I'll meet you at the taps"

Me: "ok" he held my chin brushed his lips on mine

Nzuzo: "maybe I can teach you how to kiss" he said jokingly

Me: "go away" I pushed him he left running and laughing I also went to class.

Later Masisi and I went to the taps after I had sent Nzuzo call back my parents were both not at home, we found him already by the taps playing with his phone Masisi ran to him when I got to them my little sister was in stitches

Me: "what's funny"

Nzuzo: "it our little secret, right Masisi?"

Me: "mmh" I collected water while they played around when I was done with both buckets

Nzuzo took mine I took masisi's we walked home I listened to them talking making jokes and laughing. When we got home Masisi said goodbye to Nzuzo she took her bucket and left

Me: "you make her happy"

Nzuzo: "I wish I could make yoh happy"

Me: "when she's happy I am happy" he just stared at me nodding he came closer to me I involuntary went closer to him he cupped my face

Nzuzo: "I'm going to kiss you now okay just follow my lead"

Me: "ok" he got closer to my face his lips touched mine we both breathed out he started sucking on my bottom lip I sucked his top one he didn't just shove his tongue in my mouth like dad this felt good it sent foreign feelings through my stomach he let go of my face his hands went down my body he held my waist bringing our bodies even closer it felt magical I didn't want it to stop we kissed for the longest time until Masisi screamed from the yard crying I pulled ran to the yard but nzuzo ran right past me

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Masisi: "I saw a snake" nzuzo and I looked at each other then bursted out in laughter

Masisi: "don't laugh I was scared"

Nzuzo: "where is it"

Masisi: "it ran when I screamed"

Nzuzo: "sorry" he went to get my bucket

Me: "im sorry" I opened the door she got in I waited outside for Nzuzo he put down the bucket

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "bye" he left after kissing my cheek I got in locked the door

Masisi: "saw you kissing him"

Me: "shut up" she giggled

Masisi: "Yammy and Nzuzo sitting in the tree K.I.S.S.I.N.G" she kept singing until I smacked her head lightly we laughed I cooked after cooking I ironed our uniforms.

The following day was friday after cooking I sat Masisi on the pillow down between my legs I was doing her hair

Masisi: "ouch!"

Me: "sorry but be still please"

Masisi: "it's hurts"

Me: "you the one who wanted it braided now be still" the door opened my heart sank when my father got he greeted he had plastics with him

Dad; "go unpack Yamkelani" I stood up took the plastics the kitchen he had bought some groceries I unpacked putting everything in its place "fry me that liver Yamkelani I want it

with brown bread” he screamed from the lounge

Me: “Masisi come” she sat with me in the kitchen I fried the liver mixing it with onions when it was cooked I served dad I had to be on my knees as a sign of respect

Dad: “thank you sthandwa sam” I gave him a fake smile, playing along to him meant I won’t be getting a beating I went to sit next to masisi

Masisi: “can I have some” she whispered in my ear I looked at the dad’s food he was busy eating and it looked flipn delicious I looked at Masisi and shook my head, at home you don’t ask for something you wait until it given to you asking just annoys them

Me: “let’s go play in our room” we stood up went to our room Masisi was frowning

Me: “I left some okay when his asleep I’ll cook it for you” she beamed

Masisi: “just like that with onions?”

Me: “yes” she clapped excitedly I giggled “come let’s play” we sat in front of each other started playing hand games until it late I missed nzuzo I just had this feeling of wanting to be with him all the time. Late at night dad went to the local tarven we got a chance to fry the livers Masisi couldn’t stop jumping around in the kitchen we ate it in front of the tv while watching Live after it we watched a movie then went to sleep.

I was still asleep when I felt the bed move I looked up and dad was getting in bed next to Masisi

Me: “what you doing”

Dad: “I want sex”

Me: “she’s just a baby”

Dad: “then give me sex dammit”

Me: “ok let’s go to your room” he got off the bed I followed him out the room to his room

Dad: “take your clothes off I don’t have all night” he stated irritably I took my clothes went on the bed he joined he spat on my vagina and started penetrating me I just zoned out there was seriously no point in fighting him but out of nowhere he punched me I felt like I was losing a tooth

Dad: “don’t be just a frozen chicken move” he slapped me again I started crying silently “move like a bitch you are” I didn’t even know what to do he has never had a problem with me not moving so I just froze like always

Dad: “nxa you just useless” he got off me and collapsed next to me it didn’t take long he started snoring loudly I got off the bed for dressed and went to our room I pulled Masisi close to me and just cried silently my jaws were hurting really badly.

The weekend was just okay dad left Saturday morning.

Monday woke up 06:00 boiled the water while it was boiling I made our lunches I had to add more sandwiches on mine since nzuzo ate with me the whole time now. When the water boiled I mixed it did Masisi went to wake her up she started bathing I also took a bath, after getting dressed we had instant porridge then left waiting for her transport first. School was just school as usual I spent my lunch with Nzuzo. After school I was walking alone Nzuzo had afternoon classes I felt like changing my way when I met with Hloni and her friends at the corner that leads home

Hloni: “if it isn’t Nzuzo’s skinny bitch”

Me: “please just let me pass I don’t want trouble”

Zama: “you should have thought about that before you stole her man”

Me: “I didn’t steal Nzuzo we just friends” qwaaa she slapped me I really needed to develop a resistance to pain

Hloni: “you think I’m your fool” they started beating me up I was still screaming for them to stop when I felt unexplainable pain then I felt something warm gushing down my legs I heard the panic in their voices before they ran away I screamed for help until I passed out.

When I woke up I was in pain I looked around I was in hospital the room was filled with people who had visitors a nurse walked past and I called her

Her: "yes"

Me: "can I have some water please" she smiled and gave me a glass the door opened and Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "hey you up" I nodded

Me: "can I get something for the pain"

Her: "later after dinner" she went on

Nzuzo: "how you feeling"

Me: "I'm in pain, Nzuzo Masisi is alone" felt panic brewing

Nzuzo: "she's okay I took her home Thandi will sleep with her"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I bought you some food and fruits I don't know when you getting discharged but call me. I have to go now or I won't catch a taxi back home"

Me: "oh ok thanks"

Nzuzo: "they say you had a miscarriage and you broke a rib but that's all" there was no emotion whatsoever

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "you should have told you have someone, you fuckn let me fall for you and you played me for a fool that whole I never kissed before shit. That was a shitty thing to do Yamkelani I should have believed Hloni when she told me you sleeping with half the school." He was shouting through his teeth he stood up "let me know in time when they going to discharge you so I can come get you" after that he left I just pulled the blanket over my head and cried

PART 5

I just went on crying non stop until announcement that visiting hours are over was made. I turned the other side and just cried about everything my fucked up parents, my fucked life even my little sister. I was still crying when I felt someone shaking me I pulled back the blanket quickly with hope that it Nzuzo but it wasn't, it was another girl

Her: "hi, whatever it is that you and your boyfriend were fighting about it will work out. Everything will be just fine give him time to cool off"

Me: "thank you" she smiled I sat up "I'm Yamkelani"

Her: "Sindiswa, what are you in for"

Me: "miscarriage and broken rib"

Sindiswa: "did he hit you? that why you lost the baby"

Me: "no ofcos not Nzuzo would never hurt me. His ex and her friends hit me"

Sindiswa: "I'm sorry"

Me: "thank you" she took out juice started drinking it I looked at the plastics there was 5 pieces of kfc, bread, mixed fruits, chips, juice and toiletries with pjs I took my phone and sent him a call back

Sindiswa: "where you from?"

Me: "Dumisa and you?" We continued talking getting to know each other she was here because she had a backstreet abortion and went horribly wrong. dinner was served but I didn't eat after dinner we got our pills I just laid on the bed trying to fall asleep. My phone rang it was Nzuzo I had sent him a call back hours ago

Me: "hello"

Nzuzo: "hi, are you okay?"

Me: "yes how is Masisi"

Nzuzo: "she's sleeping"

Me: "thank you Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "for what"

Me: "taking care of me and Masisi"

Nzuzo: "it what you do for someone you love"

Me: "I'm sorry Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "who is he?"

Me: "you don't know him it was a once off thing Nzuzo I'm sorry I should have told you"

Nzuzo: "k" he dropped the call. I know I should have told him but I couldn't, I couldn't risk him looking at me and just seeing dirt the girl who fucks her father. I cried myself to sleep. In the morning the doctor came to see us he told me I will be discharged after they cleaned my wounds. I sent Nzuzo a call back and he called me during lunch time at school, said he will come he will have to go to the principal and ask for leave . So I stayed for about 3 hours I had already signed the discharge papers when Nzuzo came

Nzuzo; "hi, here I hope they fit I don't know you sizes" I took the mr price plastic went to the bathroom changed out of the pjs he had bought me a black maxi dress and denim jacket with sandals it all fitted me. This thing of Nzuzo spending money on me worried me because the Nzuzo I know didn't have money he took care of his uncle's cows and played soccer for extra cash. I went back to him he had collected my food

Me: "thank you it fitted"

Nzuzo: "you look beautiful let's go" we left in silence taking a taxi to Mzinto then from there another taxi to Dumisa all in silence he was angry and if there's one thing I know about angry man is that you let them be or you will find yourself with a half swollen face. We got off at the taxi stop walked home once again in silence

Nzuzo: "does he know you lost the baby"

Me: "we don't talk I told you it was a once off mistake" He stopped walking and looked at me his eyes were red I could see his veins on his forehead

Nzuzo: "you don't get to do this Yamkelani! You don't get to hurt me to lie to me then dismay it like that" he wiped his tears with the back of his hand "you don't get to fuck me up then simply say sorry it was a once of thing. No Yamkelani you don't get to do that to me!" He was crying and shouting

Me: "Nzuzo I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "yeah well I'm also sorry but whatever this is it over and done" he gave me the plastic he was carrying "I'll bring Masisi but I don't ever want to talk to you or even see you" he left I turned and got in the yard I opened the door and got in I was still in a little pain I sat on the couch watched tv while eating leaving some for Masisi. After awhile she got in and threw herself at me

Masisi: "i was so scared Yammy, Nzuzo told me you went to the hospital"

Me: "I'm ok Masisi" she pulled out of the hug and pecked my lips softly

Masisi: "Nzuzo said I must take care of you and you two are not friends anymore" I felt my tears falling Masisi wiped them "it's ok Yammy I'm still your friend and I won't stop okay I promise"

Me: "thank you" she smiled and sat next to me

Masisi: "woo kfc!" She took some started eating "now that you and Nzuzo are not friends he won't be buying us nice stuff" I giggled

Me: "I'll buy us nice stuff when I start work" we stayed watching tv and eating until it was late we took baths then went to sleep.

The following day we went to school at lunchtime Nzuzo didn't come to me I had actually not seen him when the siren rang indicating that we had to go back to classes I put my lunch

box in my bag stood up and started walking to class. I ran into Hloni she looked horrible she had a bruised eye it was swollen and closed all navy and black

Hloni: "what you staring at mxm"

Me: "nothing, I wasn't staring"

Hloni: "voestek" she walked away so did I. After school I was looking alone as usual when I saw Nzuzo walking with some girl from school he was even carrying her bag I felt something brake inside me I went pass them he didn't even greet they were talking and laughing. I found my little sister at home already playing alone outside

Masisi: "hey Yammy"

Me: "hey how was school"

Masisi: "I got 96 for my tests"

Me: "heck yeah smarty pants" we high fived then got in the house

Masisi: "I was the highest in the whole grade Yammy everyone clapped hands for me"

Me: "I'm so proud of you" I kissed her head "tonight I'll make you whatever you want me to make"

Masisi: "anything?"

Me: "anything"

Masisi: "I want fried beef and pap with chakalaka"

Me: "ok" she jumped on the bed we were changing I wore leggings and a vest with the jacket Nzuzo bought me

Me: "finish up and come for lunch" I went to soak our uniforms made lunch, after lunch I washed our uniforms then we went to the tap. I found Nzuzo there with his boy cousins talking with a group of girls by the tap

Masisi: "Nzuzo has new friends"

Me: "I see it like his everywhere now"

Masisi: "hello Nzuzo" she screamed for him he looked at us and called her over

Me: "give me your bucket" she did then she ran to Nzuzo I waited for my turn when it came I filled up our buckets then I called Masisi who was kicking a soccer ball with Nzuzo we went home I cooked after dinner we watched tv until 21:30 I cleaned we took a bath then did out homework.

Days went by with Nzuzo ignoring me it hurt so bad I saw him almost everyday with that same girl they were in a relationship sometimes i would find them kissing around school she was in his class. Months later we started with final exams, my parents hadn't been home since before I went to the hospital they just sent money with a taxi driver for me to buy food. Exams came and went soon enough reports came out my sister and I obviously passed she was way smarter than me.

We were on our 2nd week into December holidays Masisi and I were just chilling watching tv while talking when the door opened and dad got in he looked a little tired if you get over him being cruel you could actually notice that he is not a bad looking person his light skinned actually both him and mom are light skinned.

Dad: "hello kids"

Us: "yebo baba"

Dad: "I'm so tired Yamkelani can I get bathing water then food"

Me: "ok" I went to fix him water then took it to his room he took a bath while I warmed up dinner then I dished up for him

Masisi: "when is he leaving" I just laughed

Me: "don't be rude that's your father"

Masisi: "he is not my father he doesn't even look like me"

Me: "hayi Masisi don't talk like that"

Masisi: “mxm I’m going to sleep”

Me: “but Zalo hasn’t played”

Masisi: “ayi I’m not in the mood anymore” she went to our room I continued watching tv after awhile dad came down I gave him his food

Dad: “thank you” he started eating “your mother doesn’t take care of me not that she doesn’t want to she just can’t she’s lazy in everything that I fell in love with you because you know how to take care of me I wish I could marry you”

Me: “oh”

Dad: “you love me right? I mean I know I’m old but I’m still attractive and I make you happy I take care of you”

Me: “you my father you can’t talk to me like that”

Dad: “mxm you so foolish” I stood up

Me: “goodnight”

Dad: “whatever” I went to our room Masisi was playing games on my phone or rather her phone because I don’t use it anymore since Nzuzo doesn’t call me anymore even on whatsapp he didn’t chat to me he was always online putting his girlfriend’s picture as a profile picture or a picture of the both of them even writing status about her and she was really pretty.

Me: “switch that phone off I want to sleep”

Masisi: “but I’m still playing”

Me: “sleep”

Masisi: “don’t transfer your anger to me”

Me: “Masisi don’t forget your age I’ll smack you” she sat up

Masisi: “what are you waiting for? Do it! Hit me Yamkelani actually kill me because I don’t want live the life you living because I know it will get that”

Me: “I don’t know what you talking”

Masisi: “mxm” she went to sleep facing away from my side I changed into my pjs and joined her in bed I pulled her close to me

Me: “i love you little sister” she started crying

Masisi: ” I’m sorry I spoke to you like that”

Me: ” it’s ok”

Masisi: “i love you too” we sang to her while brushing her hair until she fell asleep.

The following day I woke up made breakfast for everyone, after breakfast I cleaned.

Basically that was my life chores and tv.

Dad had been home for 2 week everything was okay he was okay no insults and no sex certainly no beating he was just normal Masisi and I were even comfortable, mom came home for Christmas. We didn’t have extended family never met any of my grandparents or even cousins and aunts and uncles we didn’t even talk about them it was just us 4. After Christmas mom went back to Mzinto I was napping I had a headache I woke up when I heard Masisi scream i quickly followed her voice she was in the lounge dad was busy on top of her I just saw red I started hitting him but he pushed me off I hit my back and head on the wall I stood up ran to the kitchen the first thing I saw was a knife I ran back to the lounge and stabbed him on his neck blood started oozing out. He collapsed on top of her I pushed him off and pulled her up she was crying and covered in blood I put her on my back and ran out in was already dark I ran and ran until I couldn’t breath Masisi had stopped crying I sat on the grass put her down her eyes were closed

Me: “Masisi wake up” but she didn’t move I screamed for her to wake up wailing I shook her hard even slapping her but she wouldn’t wake up.

I slapped her hard she woke up coughing

Me: "oh my God! You scared me I'm so so sorry Masisi please forgive me I'm so sorry I never meant for any of this to happen. We should have ran away long time ago I'm sorry" I was crying loudly

Masisi: "I'm cold" I looked at her and was naked

Voice: "who is there?" I quickly put a hand over masisi's mouth "hello who is there? Come out of the dark" we still didn't say anything I heard the footsteps going away we remained in silence until I could hear the footsteps anymore I took off my hoody and helped Masisi wear it I stood up and put her on my back again

Masisi: "please don't take me back there please I would rather live in an orphanage please" she was crying and begging

Me: "we not going there" I started walking my feet were hurting I wasn't even wearing shoes when we arrived at Nzuzo's home the lights were already switched off and the gate was locked

Me: "Nzuzo!!!! Nzuzo help!!!" The dogs started barking but I didn't stop screaming for him I saw the light in one of the rooms inside the main house getting switched on and his uncle stepped out

Him: "who is there?"

Me: "it me uncle Scelo it Yamkelani Duma, can I see Nzuzo?"

Him: "at this time? He is sleeping"

Me: "please I need help it my little sister"

Him: "ok" he went to the boys flat and knocked I heard voices then Nzuzo came running to the gate

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani"

Me: "help me please" he opened and I got in he closed it after that

Nzuzo: "come" I followed him back to his flat when we got in he closed the door locking "what happened" I put Masisi down on the couch "Jesus Yamkelani what happened to her" Masisi had fallen asleep again

Me: "I found baba on top of her" his jaw dropped

Nzuzo: "what?" I just nodded with fresh tears falling he kneeled in front then pulled her knees apart

Me: "get off her!!!" I shoved him off he hit his shoulder on the corner of the coffee table

Nzuzo: "fuck ouch!"

Me: "you man are all the same" I stood up taking Masisi

Nzuzo: "I just want to check on her"

Me: "fuck off!!" He stood up and held my hand when I was about about to open the door

Nzuzo: "you came to me because you know I can help now let me help you" he took her off my back put her on the couch he opened her legs looking at her in her vagina "well there is no sign of penetration so he didn't actually rape her" I slid down using the wall I let out a choked sob

Me: "but the blood"

Nzuzo: "it not hers"

Me: "oh thank God"

Nzuzo: " I'll get warm water to bath" he went out I just sat down crying and rocking myself back and forth after awhile he came back "wake her up and bath her so you can put her to bed I'll wait outside" he gave me the toiletries and went out I woke Masisi up

Masisi: "where are we"

Me: "Nzuzo's flat"

Masisi: "okay"

Me: "come let me bath you so you can sleep" she sat up I pulled off the hoody and gave her bath I wrapped a towel over her then went to call Nzuzo he got in and gave me his t-shirt I dressed Masisi

Nzuzo: "I'll take the couch you take the bed"

Me: "thank you"

Masisi: "thank you" we got in the bed I held onto Masisi for dear life

Nzuzo: "goodnight"

Me: "goodnight" Masisi just fell right back to sleep I couldn't sleep time just went by Nzuzo was tossing and turning on the couch "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "yeah" I sighed

Me: "he rapes me he has been doing it since I was 14 I got pregnant twice, the first child mom took me for an abortion I didn't even know what was happening until he came home drunk and angry swearing at me saying I killed his child that day he stabbed me I stayed in the hospital for 2 weeks and the 2nd child I lost it when Hloni beat me up. My own father treated me like a sex slave and I still had to obey n respect him" I felt his hands snaking around my body I was just crying "and mom knew she knew from the start she let him take my virginity something so pure and amazing she let him take it from me Nzuzo I hate her I hate them both" he had turned me around I just cried with my face on his chest "they were supposed to protect me from all the evils of the world but they did this to me they damaged me beyond repairs. I know I could handle it I thought if I kept giving him what he wanted he wouldn't touch Masisi dammit I should have protected her and now he almost... He almost.." I couldn't even say it

Nzuzo: "it's okay it's all going to be okay but he is going to pay for this" his voice was also braking he was crying

Me: "I stabbed him on his neck there was so much blood"

Nzuzo: "I hope he is dead"

Me: "me too" he held me as I cried myself to sleep

.

I woke up when someone was shaking I slowly opened my eyes and met Nzuzo's beautiful smile (Nzuzo was beautiful though a nice light skinned guy with medium body size and a little taller than most

people his age he had a T silver tooth.his mother was a nurse and his father was a manager at Lewis furniture shop. He lived in Mzinto at hazel wood only came here when his parents died)

Nzuzo: "morning I brought you food"

Me: "where is Masisi"

Nzuzo: "she's eating in the main house with the other kids" I sat up pulling my vest down

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "you really beautiful, do you know that?"

Me: "stop" he laughed and got under the blanket next to me

Nzuzo: "you should have told me Yamkelani we've been friends for years"

Me: "tell you so you can judge me? No thank you" he held my chin

Nzuzo: "look at me and tell me what you see"

Me: "hhu?"

Nzuzo: " I'm hurt Yamkelani you hurt me by keeping this from me and you hurting me even more by thinking I could ever judge you. This is me Nzuzo your Nzuzo"

Me: "well you not mine anymore"

Nzuzo: "and that's your fault"

Me: "yeah blame me for having a father who fucked me up in every way"

Nzuzo: "that is below the belt and what's fucked up is you using that as a get away card" he got off the bed "I need to bath I'm going to my girlfriend today"

Me: "oh I'll leave" I also got off the bed made it "please call Masisi for me so we can leave"

Nzuzo: "you not leaving... Well at least not today and Masisi needs to be around children her age for now so she can be distracted"

Me: "I thought you needed to be with your girlfriend" he laughed

Nzuzo: "you so jealous it's cute. You can stay here Thandi will keep you company and take care of you"

Me: "ok, can you call Masisi for me"

Nzuzo: "no she's playing" he went out I went back to bed continued eating (nzuzo's room was huge with a bed, a large L shaped couch and a coffee table, a closet) he came back with a basin and started taking his clothes off

Me: "what are you doing?"

Nzuzo: "taking my clothes off I need to bath"

Me: "I..." He looked at me and started laughing

Nzuzo: "you look sick Yammy"

Me: "shut up" I got under the cover and stayed there until he was done and all dressed up

Nzuzo: "do you need me to get you something before I leave"

Me: "I'm fine"

Nzuzo: "cool I'm out of here" he walked to the door

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "yeah" I looked down

Me: "can you stay with me just for today"

Nzuzo; "Yammy"

Me: "just today" he huffed and took his shoes and jacket off and got in bed with me

Nzuzo: "you owe me for this"

Me: "so I owe you for asking you to make sure I'm ok"

Nzuzo: "well don't put it like that"

Me: "mmh" we stayed in bed the whole day with me crying my eyes out over how fucked up my life is and him crying with me at times, I only saw Masisi once when we were bathing. At night Nzuzo went out to get us dinner instead of him coming back his aunt did I quickly sat up straight pushed back my hair

Her: "hello" we exchanged greetings "had to see this girl that had my son looked up in his room"

Me: "oh" she sat on the couch

Her: "he told me you having problems at home"

Me: "something like that"

Her: "my husband and the boys went to check on your father unfortunately they found him dead"

Me: "good"

Her: "excuse me"

Me: "nothing"

Her: "they will be home a little late they waiting for the mortuary people. So Nzuzo said I should bring you dinner actually he sent Thandi but I wanted to see you"

Me: "thank you"

Her: "you beautiful" I kept on avoiding to look at her in the eyes

Me: "so are you" she stood up

Her: "well you can eat, Masisi will sleep in the house with the girls"

Me: "ok" she left I ate

.

The following day we went back home I scrubbed the blood on the floor then cleaned up the whole house. I kept on thinking mom will come home but days went by even the Saturday that I thought the

funeral will be on came and passed. Nzuzo was really good to us he came to check on us everyday we were even back to chatting. It was already the following year I was going to be in grade 11 Masisi in grade 4 and Nzuzo will be leaving for Jhb to study medicine. On Monday Masisi and I were watching tv while I was doing her hair it was growing to fast when the door opened and mom got in she didn't even greet us she just went straight to her room

Masisi: "do you think she knows his dead"

Mom: "yes I know you skinny black bitch!!" She screamed coming to us with a sajmboke Masisi and I both jumped up "I will kill you both yall killed my husband you hoes" we were already outside ducking

Me: "what was I supposed to do"

Mom: "do whatever he wanted you to do"

Me: "you sick mom do you know that!! You a sick twisted woman who should have never given birth God was supposed to make you infertile you cruel woman" she screamed and stormed in the house Masisi just laughed I added up joining her people walked pass looking at us like we crazy after awhile mom came out pulling two suitcases we looked at her confused

Mom: "I hate you both I curse the day I give birth to you, I should have let that good for nothing father of yours take y'all back to Nigeria with him" she pulled her suitcases leaving us dumb folded

Masisi: "I told you he wasn't our father"

PART 7

Time went by Masisi and I were happy just alone at home but I was starting to worry it was now a week before we had to go back to school mom hadn't came back or sent money for us. We were running out of food, Masisi needed new uniforms she had outgrown the ones she was using the previous year at least I could wear my old one. I was really stressed but my little sister was not aware of the financial crisis we were in she was just happy our parents were not around or should I say our mom and stepdad were not around. I was still confused by all of this I had questions that only mother had answers to but she was nowhere to be found like how is it that our father was Nigerian because our stepdad was the only man I knew he was there before Masisi was born I don't remember another man but him. And why would he raise another man's children and why would our father leave us with this cruel woman I was confused and angry but I didn't want to show Masisi all of this or she would worry and that wasn't necessary. Rumors were dad got buried at his home in Mthwalume and mom wasn't even allowed to attend the funeral because they hated her and they didn't even know about us. Nzuzo was just the best there could be after I told mom left after dropping a boom on us he just said good riddance, even though he was still with his girlfriend he still checked on us Masisi was friends with his 2 cousins Akhona and Aphelele they were around the same age group.

I got up Masisi was still asleep I went to wash my face then rinse my mouth, after that I got in the house boiled the water so I can make porridge. I took out chicken so it could defrost and I could cook it for lunch and dinner there was only 4 pieces left after taking it out the only thing left in the fridge was cold water and Rama all of this just added to the stress I went to sit outside sun bathing while I cried, I felt her hands circling around me

Masisi: "it's ok Yammy don't cry everything will be okay" I looked at her

Me: "how will everything be fine Masisi we running out of food and you don't have school uniform"

Masisi: "mom will send us money she has to"

Me: "no she won't" I stood up went to cook the porridge when I looked at the sugar bucket we were out of sugar I felt like throwing the bucket against the wall. I quickly boiled the chicken not to a point of it getting cooked just boiled it enough to get a good soup out of it so I dished up for both Masisi and I poured a little bit of chicken soup on the porridge we started eating in front of tv

Masisi: "mmh" I looked at her she was frowning

Me: "what's wrong?"

Masisi: "it doesn't taste nice"

Me: " I'm sorry, I will have to wake up early tomorrow so I can go look for a job"

Masisi: "what job are you going to get without even grade 12"

Me: "cleaning someone's house"

Masisi: "what about school"

Me: "you will go back to school" she looked at me "it ok Masisi I'll handle things"

Masisi: "mom really isn't coming back" I shook my head

Me: " I'll take care of you"

Masisi: "and who will take care of you" I chuckled

Me: " I'm old I'll take care of myself"

Masisi: "this really sucks"

Me: "yes it does, now eat up your porridge so you can grow and be strong"

Masisi: "do you think our father loved us like our real father"

Me: "I don't know Masisi"

Masisi: "maybe his the king of the castle like princess Sofia's dad"

Me: "who is that now"

Masisi: "cartoon I was watching at Akhona's house yesterday, hha Yammy they have so many channels"

Me: "it a dstv Masisi"

Masisi: "what's that"

Me: "it makes your tv have many channels"

Masisi: "why don't we have it"

Me: "because it bought and it expensive"

Masisi: "when you working you going to get us many channels"

Me: "yes"

Masisi: "I'm worried Yammy"

Me: " don't be Masisi it my job to worry, you need to focus on school so you can pass and be what you want to be so you can build me a huge house and take care of me" she laughed

Masisi: "I'll take care of you" she kissed my cheek.

After eating we took our baths i accompanied her to Nzuzo's home she was going to play I got home and cooked while watching tv, I was chatting to Thandi on whatsapp

Thandi: "I swear to you"

Me: "lol maybe he did but it doesn't matter now he has his girlfriend"

Thandi: "I've been telling you that he doesn't love that girl he just wants sex"

Me: "good thing then because I could never give him that"

Thandi: "he is leaving in 2 weeks Yamkelani tell him how you feel"

Me: "I can't"

Thandi: "can't or won't"

Me: "I can't Thandi don't force me on this"

Thandi: "mxm both you and Nzuzo need to put your pride aside, all he does is talk about you"

Me: "where is he"

Thandi: "in his room"

Me: "is she there"

Thandi: "uhm yeah .. Sorry"

Me: "it's fine I'm fine"

Thandi: "no you not"

Me: "this sucks!! Nzuzo is supposed to love me"

Thandi: "lol come over will watch tv and gossip properly"

Me: "ok meet me halfway I'm leaving now" i closed all windows locked the door and left. I met up with her halfway we hugged we walked back to her having meaningless conversation about her boyfriend when we got there she went to get cool drink and cakes we sat in front of the tv watching music videos. A while later we were sitting outside watching the kids play when Nzuzo came out with his girlfriend she was really beautiful all yellow with hips and ass she was the total opposite of me

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani" he looked shocked "I didn't know you here"

Thandi: "she's here for me not you"

Nzuzo: "uhm ... Flip okay cool"

Me: "cool" we stood there staring at each other until she cleared her throat

Her: "Nzu lets go"

Thandi: "Nzu" Thandi and I laughed out loud they just left

Me: "Nzu lets go" we laughed harder

Thandi: "bloody barbie doll" we stayed outside until Nzuzo came back walking with Masisi

Nzuzo: "let me walk you guys home" I stood up said my goodbyes to Thandi then Nzuzo walked us home

Nzuzo: "you and Thandi are friends now"

Me: "she's cool"

Nzuzo: "school is opening Monday"

Me: "uhm yeah"

Nzuzo: "has your mother sent money"

Me: "yes" he stopped walking so did I Masisi was walking in front of us

Nzuzo: "you don't learn do you"

Me: "what you on about"

Nzuzo: "honesty!! Don't lie to me"

Me: "don't yell at me"

Nzuzo: "Masisi says you out of food and your mother hasn't sent money and you not going back to school"

Me: "Masisi talks to much"

Nzuzo: "and you don't talk at all"

Me: "I'm not your responsibility"

Nzuzo: "that's the thing Yamkelani you and Masisi are my responsibility"

Me: "no we not!"

Nzuzo: "fuck off" he started walking fast until he caught up with Masisi. I just walked behind them slowly when we got home Masisi went in

Nzuzo: "we will take a 10:00 taxi to Mzinto tomorrow Masisi will go home please be ready" he left after that I got in

Me: "ei wena Masisi come here now!!" She came out of the kitchen

Masisi: "what?"

Me: "why you talking about our business to people didn't I tell you I'll take care of you"

Masisi: "Nzuzo asked and his not people his your friend"

Me: "Jesus! I feel like smacking you right now"

Masisi: "do it" she folded her arms over her chest

Me: "just move from my face" she went back to the kitchen

The following day we woke up had yesterday's leftovers we took a bath and got dressed I left my hair loose

Masisi: "you look beautiful" I smiled

Me: "shut up it just old clothes" I was wearing a short umbrella peach dress with an open back and sandals

Masisi: "that you hardly wear"

Me: "whatever let's go" we left Nzuzo called when we were halfway to his house asking where we are. Soon enough Nzuzo and I were in a taxi to Mzintso he wasn't really talking to me I kept my mouth shut. When we got there we started with uniforms 3 sets for both Masisi and I, we went to open a bank account he gave me the card then we got school bags, we went to kfc for lunch

Me: "Nzuzo" he looked at me and laughed I just giggled "I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "just don't keep things from me Yamkelani, Masisi shouldn't be the one to tell me things"

Me: "I know I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "it cool I love you and you my responsibility"

Me: "I want to love you"

Nzuzo: "I understand I'll be patient"

Me: "it's hurts.... You know you being with her I get this foreign feeling"

Nzuzo: "hhu"

Me: "where do you get the money nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I turned 18 last year got my mother's money from the government"

Me: "you should be saving that for school"

Nzuzo: "I got a bursary"

Me: "oh mr smarty pants" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "you know me, now finish up it getting late we still need to buy groceries" I felt tears threatening to come out

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I love you and you my responsibility so don't thank me"

Me: "don't even know what we going to do when you leave"

Nzuzo: "I'll send you money every month and if it runs out you just have to call me"

Me: "I don't just mean money wise I mean with everything else"

Nzuzo: "I'm only one call away I'll be there to save the day superman got nothing on me I'm only one call away" he sang softly I giggled

Me: “you stupid” we finished eating went to buy groceries he bought us everything even things we’ve never eaten before and lot of junk.

When we got home I unpacked everything I had never seen our fridge and cupboards that full after that I went to get water nzuzo accompanied me we went past his home and got Masisi then he went back Masisi couldn’t shut up about everything she even cried.

.

Days passed schools opened and for the first time ever we had something else to carry for lunch instead of french polony. Everything was cool until Saturday nzuzo was leaving the following day at night he asked me to sleep over and I agreed so during the day he met us halfway, we spent the day in his room while Masisi was out playing with his cousins she was going to sleep with them I still didn’t understand why would he want me instead of his girlfriend but I wasn’t complaining. So after dinner we were just talking assuming how Jhb will be for him next thing I know his lips are on mine we kissing it all felt so magical but I started crying when he got on top of me he pulled back

Nzuzo: “it me and I won’t hurt you I promise just relax” I nodded we went back to kissing we kissed for the longest time he took off my top and moved from my lips he started kissing my neck softly biting on it I was just letting out soft moans he moved further down and popped my breasts out of my bra rubbing them when he started sucking them hard biting my nipple I let out a louder moan he moved back to lips we kissed again before he got off me and lifted me up putting me on top of him

Nzuzo: “I love you”

Me: “I love you too” he kissed my forehead and started brushing my back softly until I fell asleep.

The following day in the afternoon he walked us back home when Masisi got in the house he held my face and kissed me

Nzuzo: “take care of yourself and Masisi I’ll be back before you even notice I’m gone and I’ll call everyday”

Me: “ok, you also take care of yourself” he kissed me again only this time my tears just fell I had this really bad feeling that I couldn’t shake off

Nzuzo: “don’t cry ma’Duma please thembalam June is around the corner”

Me: “I’m not crying” he chuckled and wiped my tears

Nzuzo; “I love you ndoni yam yamanzi” he gave me a soft peck and left I went in the house straight to my bedroom and I just cried myself to sleep I really couldn’t shake this feeling

PART 8

I slept with my phone in my hand I woke up 5 times during the night even irritating Masisi she even snapped at me telling me to call him or go to sleep we both sat up I called him but it went straight to voicemail my lips started trembling I called again it still went to voicemail I just cried

Masisi: “ooh Yammy don’t cry please, please don’t cry Nzuzo will call you when he can”

Me: “why is his phone on the voicemail Masisi he should have called! He said he will call”

Masisi: “I’m sorry Yammy but please let’s sleep we have to be up soon please I want to sleep”

Me: “ok” we laid under the blankets she put her head on my chest we slept.

In the morning the alarm rang at 06:00 the first thing I did was check for missed calls but nothing. I woke up boiled water for Masisi while frying patties for lunch I made lunch while Masisi took a bath, I also took a bath after I got dressed tied my hair in a neat bun after we were both done I made corn flakes for us we ate

Masisi: "he still hasn't called"

Me: "no he hasn't, maybe he has forgotten about us"

Masisi: "he wouldn't, I trust Nzuzo Yammy have faith" I nodded she wiped my tears and gave me a soft peck "Nzuzo is safe, okay?"

Me: "okay" she smiled we continued eating after eating I locked up Nzuzo had changed the locks for us Masisi also had her own keys. After locking up we left I wasn't waiting for her transport anymore she was waiting alone

Me: "I love you be good" I kissed her head

Masisi: "love you too my Yammy" I left her there walked to school. School went by with me checking my phone every five minutes. School was out and still nothing, I went home found Masisi in our room doing her homework

Me: "hey kid"

Masisi: " I'm not a kid"

Me: "yes you are"

Masisi: "I'm not a kid!!" She wanted to cry I sat next to her

Me: "hey what's wrong"

Masisi: "nothing"

Me: "talk to me"

Masisi: "he won't be my friend he says I'm a kid but I'm not a kid" she was crying I pulled her to my chest

Me: "who is he"

Masisi: "sizwe from school his in grade 6"

Me: "well Masisi you are a kid compared to him and you shouldn't be friends with boys"

Masisi: "you friends with Nzuzo and his older"

Me: "We older and in high school"

Masisi: "mxm you not being helpful"

Me: "if he doesn't want to be your friend then it his loss because you a great friend and you my best friend" she threw her arms around my neck we hugged

Masisi: "you my best friend too"

Me: "good now let's go eat" we let go of each other we had lunch.

The day just went by still nothing from Nzuzo we even went to bed. It was after 23:00 Masisi and I were just talking when he called, I sat up pulled down my pjamae top I pushed back my hair fixing it

Masisi: "he can't see you over the phone"

Me: "oh ja" I answered "hello, Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "thembalam"

Me: "hi, how are you"

Nzuzo: "I'm so tired I wish I could just go to sleep with you in my arms"

Me: "i waited for your call"

Nzuzo: "I know I'm sorry, I had a very busy that I got here in the morning went to register then went to register for res the queues were so long. After getting res I had to take a taxi there I got lost a little" he chuckled "ok maybe I got lost a lot, then I had to find shops so I can buy things you know bedding, groceries and appliances at least the fridge and stove is provided. I'm only sitting down now and eating now I'm sorry baby I should have at least sent a text to let you know I arrived safely"

Me: "you okay and that's all that matters"

Nzuzo: "I miss you already"

Me: "I also miss you and June is so far"

Nzuzo: "yes it is, but you will see school will get so busy you won't even notice the time flying by"

Me: "how is Jhb? Is it as great as we see on tv"

Nzuzo: "it's absolutely beautiful Yamkelani everything is bigger and better"

Me: "I'm sure the girls are also better and more beautiful"

Nzuzo: "I don't know I haven't noticed I'll see properly once we start classes"

Me: "mxm" he laughed

Nzuzo: "no one will ever be better than you and why would I be looking at girls here when I have my beautiful girlfriend back at home"

Me: "your girlfriend?"

Nzuzo: "yes ofcos you my girlfriend, are you not?"

Me: "I am"

Nzuzo: "number 1"

Me: "I miss you"

Nzuzo: "ncooh shame"

Me: "don't be sarcastic it's not you"

Nzuzo: "what's me"

Me: "straight forward and funny"

Nzuzo: "oh yeah"

Me: "who you sharing a room"

Nzuzo: "some guy Luyolo from malahleni"

Me: "is he nice"

Nzuzo: "his cool baby"

Me: "is he there" he laughed

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "is that why you can't talk about him"

Nzuzo: "yep"

Me; "is he bad"

Nzuzo: "kinda baby"

Me: "I love you" he sucked in breathe

Nzuzo: "you do"

Me: "yes I do"

Nzuzo: "I love you so much more"

Me: "I'm glad it makes me happy"

Nzuzo: "where is Masisi"

Me: "she just fell asleep"

Nzuzo: "you two are being careful? Keeping the doors locked, you still got food?"

Me: "Nzuzo you just left yesterday and you checked things yourself we good"

Nzuzo: "promise me you won't hide things from me"

Me: "I promise"

Nzuzo: "ok good, I miss your lips and feeling your hot skin against mine" I giggled

Me: "I miss yours as well"

Nzuzo: "those sexy moans you make"

Me: "stop"

Nzuzo: "I can't wait to make love to you baby"

Me: "oh"

Nzuzo: "I'm not rushing you though"

Me: "I know and I love you for that" we spent an hour talking about useless things.

.

Time was just flying by Nzuzo sent me money every month actually lot of money that I was even saving some and I would buy Masisi and I one outfit every month. This one time we had been talking about sleep overs and stuff I told him he couldn't sleep over at home because Masisi and I shared a bedroom and I couldn't always be sleeping over at his home because of Masisi, that month end he sent me money to buy Masisi a single bed and change our parents bedroom to hers. I changed everything in that bedroom even managed to buy pink paint so we painted it by the time we were done all traces of our parents were gone, we sold all the furniture to a second hand shop I bought her a cute little chest of drawers for her clothes even got her a princess Sofia bedding. This time I was taking her out to celebrate her June results she had gotten all A nothing below 95 so we were at Scottburgh , we went to the mall bought her some clothes then we had lunch at Wimpy after that we just took a walk around the mall window shopping. We ran into mom she looked so beautiful she had those long weaves on wearing a beautiful body hugging dress she was walking with some white man holding hands they looked so in love

Masisi: "look it mom"

Me: "ignore her" as we were about to pass each other she saw us and whispered something to the man he kissed her cheek then went straight ahead

Mom: "I see you two are still alive"

Masisi: "and happy"

Me: "shut up Masisi"

Mom: "you can afford to do your hair, go shopping actually y'all even know where the mall is at now"

Me: "we surviving"

Mom: "I wonder whose husband you fucking to get the money"

Me: "don't worry it not your husband" she looked at us up and down with so much disgust then she opened her bag pulled out a journal and a pen she wrote something down then gave it me it was a number

Mom: "it for prostitution you know so you can get extra cash" I wanted to slap so hard

Me: "you are so evil you so fuckn evil" I was in tears

Mom: "oh don't be dramatic Yamkelani can't you take a joke it your father's number" she walked away laughing her heels clicking as her foot met the floor

Masisi: "it's okay Yamkelani don't let her spoil our day"

Me: "let's just go home"

Masisi: "ok" we went to take a taxi to Mzinto then another one to Dumisa the whole way home I was just crying silently I hated my mom so much I hated her with a passion. Is that she sees when she sees me a walking vigena someone who should just be fucked for money. We got home I just went to sleep while Masisi watched tv. When I woke up I saw him sitting there on the corner of the bed looking so hot he even had a fade hair cut he looked like a light skinned version of Usher he just smiled

Nzuzo: "thembalam" I jump on him almost knocking him off the bed he just laughed and held me tightly "woah looks like I've been missed"

Me: "you have no idea" I pulled back from the hug and kissed him he was moving back still with me on top of him until he was laying in the middle of the bed we just kissed he took off my dress and rolled us over getting between my legs we kissed even deeper tasting each other his hands were all over my body touching and squeezing I pulled off his t-shirt the feel of his warm skin on mine turned my stomach into a pool of butterflies he pulled me up a little then took off my bra he let a groan that matched my moan when he cupped my breasts squeezing them I was feeling things I've never felt before things I couldn't even explain he moved from my lips started kissing my neck going down when he got to my inner thighs he was lightly biting them and every bit sent shockwaves through my body he took off my panty with his hands shaking

Me: "Nzuzo" he looked at me his eyes were red and he was shaking "baby you okay you scaring me" he closed his eyes for a while he breathed out then opened them

Nzuzo: " I'm sorry I got a little carried away" he came back up and slept behind me

Me: "what's wrong"

Nzuzo: "nothing baby, I've missed you these months were awful"

Me: "I've also missed you" I snuggled even closer to him I could feel his hard penis on my back

Nzuzo: "how was your day Masisi tells me y'all ran into your mother" I told him he turned me around and wiped my tears kissing my eyes "don't worry baby your mother will get what's coming to her"

Me: "she's so evil Nzuzo God shouldn't have given her a womb"

Nzuzo: "so you going to call your father"

Me: "should I"

Nzuzo: "it's your choice baby"

Me: "he doesn't want us if he did he wouldn't have let us grow up like this"

Nzuzo: "whatever decision you make I'm behind 1000%"

Me: "there's no such a thing as 1000%" I pecked my nose

Nzuzo: "I love you so much Yamkelani Duma"

Me: "I know" he chuckled and held my chin kissing me "when did you come back"

Nzuzo: "in the morning"

Me: "you didn't tell me"

Nzuzo: "you worry baby when I travel so I didn't want to worry you" I pouted he kissed me "come let's eat"

Me: "I haven't cooked"

Nzuzo: "then we'll have bread I'm hungry" he got off the bed putting his t-shirt back on

Me: "you joined gym"

Nzuzo: "I'm playing soccer" he kissed my cheek and gave me my dress I got dressed we went to the kitchen passing Masisi who was still watching tv. I made food for the 3 of us after eating we went to sleep.

PART 9

I woke up first in the morning I put my head up balancing with my hand and elbow I just looked at Nzuzo, before my heart solely belonged to Masisi but now Nzuzo also owned a part of it. I guess he could sense I was staring at him because he stirred a bit then his eyes opened he blinked a couple of times before fixing his eyes on mine he just smiled

Nzuzo: "morning ma'Duma"

Me: "morning baby" I gave him a soft peck

Nzuzo: "why you staring at me baby"

Me: "you beautiful"

Nzuzo: "I'm not gay" I giggled

Me: "I know you not gay ungumuntu wam remember" he smiled

Nzuzo: "kiss me" I laughed and leaned in we kissed I ended sitting on him he had his hands on my ass squeezing it the door opened I jumped off him and fell on the floor Nzuzo just cracked up in laughter

Masisi: "what going on"

Nzuzo: "Yammy is being stupid" I stood up

Me: "why didn't you knock" she shrugged her shoulders

Masisi: "sorry but I'm hungry"

Nzuzo: "I'll make breakfast, now look away Masisi" she laughed and walked out Nzuzo stood up and got dressed he had slept in his boxers we washed our faces and rinsed our mouths I went to sit with him in the kitchen while he made us breakfast he was singing some song while moving a little everything he did was just effortlessly I couldn't keep my eyes off him, he moved from the stove and came

Nzuzo: "as long as you love me we could be starving we could be homeless we could be broke, as long as you love me I'll be your platinum I'll be your silver I'll be your gold, as long as you love I'll be your whole world I'll be your soldier fighting everyday for your dreams girl just take my hand, as long as you love me you love me you love me you love me he" sang while staring at me then gave me a soft peck

Me: "I love you" he smiled and gave me another peck

Nzuzo; "I know and it feels amazing"

Masisi: "I'm still hungry njalo ni'busy with I love yous here" we laughed Nzuzo dished up we ate

Nzuzo: "it your birthday next week Wednesday"

Me: "no it not"

Nzuzo: "I saw your ID" I frowned looking down I hated my birthdays it was just a reminder of my mother

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "hey, you okay?"

Me: "yeah"

Nzuzo: "baby?"

Me: "later"

Nzuzo: "okay" we finished eating i accompanied Nzuzo he was going home

Me: "you coming back"

Nzuzo: "yeah, baby we celebrating your birthday next week"

Me: "it not my thing"

Nzuzo: "from this year it will be" I stopped walking with a huff "what's wrong ma'Duma"

Me: "you are what's wrong!!" He looked at me all hurt and confused

Nzuzo: "what did I do thembalam"

Me: "you coming into my life like this making changes getting me used to certain things, what will I do when you walk out of my life? How will I survive when you dump me"

Nzuzo: "aibo Yamkelani when did I say I was going to dump you mfwethu why ungicabangela !!"

Me: "don't yell at me"

Nzuzo: "stop frustrating me Yamkelani please just trust me"

Me; "whatever I'll see you tonight"

Nzuzo: "maybe I shouldn't come clearly you pmsing" I just turned and went back home. I got home cleaned, took a bath, cooked then went to bed. The pillows and blankets smelt like him I just sobbed loudly I don't even know why but one thing for sure was the thought of losing Nzuzo freaked me out, I didn't want to feel this way I didn't want to be dependent on him in such a way that when or if he leaves me I'll be destroyed. Man have the tendency of building you up, getting you used to things that only he can provide you whether emotionally or financially even sexually in such a way they start owning you, you find yourself deep in their life without noticing that as they build you they also taking your being away. When they finally done you left as a weak person you look at yourself in the mirror and not even recognize what you seeing and I didn't want that. I don't want that for myself Nzuzo came to my life as this amazing hero who slaughtered dragons for me I love him so much and I'm so grateful but I'm also scared because I know that the day he decides to walk away he will leave with a huge piece of me.

I woke up awhile later I put on a jacket on top of my pjамie I went to the lounge I could hear voices I couldn't hide my smile when I saw Nzuzo they were playing some board game with Masisi and Akhona

Me: "hi"

Akhona: "hello sis Yammy"

Me: "hello Akhona"

Akhona: "mah said I could sleep over is that okay with you"

Me: "yes it's okay"

Masisi: "see I told you" they went back to the game

Nzuzo: "we playing monopoly, wana join us" I shook my head he stood up came to me, he took my hand leading me to my bedroom as soon as he closed the door he smashed his lips on mine we kissed for awhile then he pulled back

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry i didn't mean to yell"

Me: "I'm also sorry" we kissed again

Nzuzo: "come let's play I'll teach you" he took my hand we played until the kids got hungry so I dished up and after eating we had ice cream and snacks while watching a movie then we went to sleep.

.

Few days later it was my birthday I was woken up by singing voices I sat up smiling Nzuzo and Masisi were singing me happy birthday Nzuzo was carrying a tray with food

Me: "I love you guys"

Them: "love you too"

Nzuzo: "eat up baby we got a busy day ahead"

Masisi: "I'm going to Akhona"

Me: "okay I'll walk you once I'm done eating"

Masisi; "I can walk alone"

Me: "no!"

Nzuzo: "eat and bath baby I'll walk her"

Me: "ok" they left they both had already taken a bath, I finished eating took a bath I was moisturizing when he got in

Nzuzo: "can't get over how sexy you are"

Me: "I'm all skin and bones"

Nzuzo: "you slender baby you got a model's body and it fucking sexy" I looked at him he was laying on the bed wearing black skinny jeans, a white t-shirt and black biker with white superstars I decided to put on a black cotton high waist tight fitting maxi skirt with a matching long sleeve crop top and white sandals I left my braids lose

Me: "I'm done" he stood up smiling

Nzuzo: "you look breathtaking ma'Duma"

Me: "thank you Khumalo" he kissed me softly

Nzuzo: "let's go" I grabbed a sling back we left taking a taxi to durban it was my second time there I didn't have happy memories over that place we took another taxi by Mashu rank we went to Gateway I was watching everything with open eyes we finally got there

Me: "woah!!" He chuckled and kissed my cheek he took my hand

Nzuzo: "it beautiful right"

Me: "amazingly beautiful baby"

Nzuzo: "when I start working I'll buy us a house around here baby our children will grow up around this" I looked at him with a huge lump in my throat "I know that look Yamkelani please do not cry people will think I'm harming you" I nodded

Me: "ok" we went to watch a movie after that he took me to circus circus everything was so fancy I felt out of place but he made relax we ended up having fun. After that he took me shopping then we bought cake and took a taxi home.

When we got there he put the cake in the fridge we were going to eat it tomorrow with Masisi, Akhona and Thandi. I boiled water for us he took a bath first then I did after him he was laying on the bed with his hands under his head wearing just boxers I finished bathing just as I was about to put my pjs on he swept me then put me down on the bed getting between my legs

Nzuzo: "hi" I smiled holding his head

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "had fun?"

Me: "best birthday ever"

Nzuzo: "I'm glad, your happiness is my happiness" I lifted my waist he smiled and kissed me we kissed for a long time his hands running all over my body he spread my legs apart and started grinding on me while we were kissing I wanted more than just that I felt an ache inside me he moved from my lips kissed me all over my body we were both breathing heavily he started licking my vagina I let out such a moan that he stopped and looked at me

Me: "stop" he started laughing so did I, I was still laughing when he went back to licking me he was licking and sucking I felt something building up he started rubbing and pinching my nipples I felt joy overflowing like a shockwave I exploded with a loud moan

Nzuzo: "can I please" I nodded he kissed me I held his head we kissed deeply I could feel his erection on my entrance he tried putting it in my stepdad's face just flashed through my mind I shoved him off with all my power he fell over the bed

Nzuzo: "fuckn hell!!!" I quickly sat up pulled the cover over my body I was crying and rocking myself back n forth

PART 10

Nzuzo got off the floor and got on top of the bed sitting next to me he wrapped his arms around me

Nzuzo: "it's ok baby I'm sorry I shouldn't have rushed you it's ok" I just cried

Me: "I'm sorry Nzuzo you don't deserve this you don't deserve me, you deserve someone who will dedicate themselves to you in every way"

Nzuzo: "you are what I want, What I need and deserve" he kissed my head and held me tightly when I was done crying he laid on the bed properly and pulled me to him

Me: " I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "don't apologize" He kissed my nose "know there's a story that my mother used to tell me growing up whenever I had nightmares or I was sad"

Me: "mmh" he started telling me the story until I fell asleep.

The following day I woke up first I put on my pjamas since I ended up sleeping naked the previous night. I went outside rinsed my mouth and washed my my face I went back in started making breakfast scrambled eggs with mushrooms, cocktails grillers and patties I was done frying just dishing up for us "morning baby" I turned and he was standing by the fridge

Me: "hi" he came to me and held my waist

Nzuzo: "how you feeling today"

Me: "I'm well I feel better"

Nzuzo: "that's good, now where is my morning kiss" I give him a soft peck but he just laughed and held my neck kissing me deeply. After that we had breakfast then took a bath, we watched tv until midday Nzuzo was hungry again like he is always hungry. I was in the kitchen making us sandwiches when he walked in

Nzuzo: "I miss you mani"

Me: "I'm right here"

Nzuzo: "kiss me" I giggled and put my arm around his neck we kissed he lifted me up I wrapped my legs around him he pressed me on the wall "no wonder you won't come home" he pulled back and put me down it was his aunt

Nzuzo: "awu malumekazi it was just yesterday that I didn't spend at home"

Her: "you haven't slept at home since you got here Nzuzo Phiwokuhle Khumalo!!" Nzuzo just laughed I was standing awkwardly behind him

Nzuzo: "you just miss me" she laughed

Her: "whatever! You should just marry her at once" nzuzo pulled me to the front

Nzuzo: "soon"

Her: "unjan na sisi"

Me: "ngiyaphila mah"

Her: "I heard you got cake"

Me: "yes, it was my birthday yesterday" Masisi walked in with Akhona and Thandi

Thandi: "we here for cake!" I just giggled

Nzuzo: "I'll get it go sit down" they went out the kitchen nzuzo looked at me frowning "hhe I'm still hungry"

Me; "you eat a lot nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'm sex deprived" I looked at him tears blinding my vision "shit baby I didn't mean it like that" I just nodded and walked out making my way to my room "Yammy I'm sorry" as I got in I could hear

his aunt asking what's wrong I threw myself on the bed and cried silently the door opened I smelled him before he said anything

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby I was joking, I didn't even think about how insensitive it is I'm sorry"

Me: "it's okay I'm being stupid it's not like you lying I am depriving you of it and I'm sorry I know that I'm damaged goods and you deserve better that's why I think we should break up"

Nzuzo: "now you fucken acting crazy and you pissing me off nxa" he walked out banging the door I stood up wiped my tears and followed him out everyone looked at me I gave them a fake smile

Me: "so where is that cake" Akhona and Masisi clapped Nzuzo stood up went to the kitchen after awhile he came back with the cake it had candles they sang for I made a wish that Nzuzo never leaves my life I cut the cake we ate it with cool drinks over light conversations and jokes. Later on they all left Masisi and I were left alone we had dinner then went to bed sleeping together.

.

Days went by Nzuzo and I were inseparable his aunt gave up on complaining if he was not sleeping over at home I was sleeping over at his home. Schools were already open it was a week before he had to go back to Jhb and the week was moving too fast. Masisi was already asleep Nzuzo and I were making out on the couch it was hot and steamy I was on top of him grinding on him like how he taught me he had his hand under my night dress rubbing on my vjaja he swiftly entered two fingers in me I let out a moan biting his lip the door opened "well well now I get it" it was my mother she was standing there Nzuzo pulled out his fingers and I stood up so did Nzuzo he stood behind me

Me: "what are you doing here"

Mom: "it's still my house Yamkelani even though you've turned it into a hoe house, is this how you getting money? Fucking a guy who looks after cows or is he one of your customers"

Me: "what do you Thenjiwe" she laughed

Mom: "today you calling me by my name" she looked at Nzuzo up and down then gave him a slutty smile "never realized you this good looking, I can see your .." She pointed to his penis which was hard and showing through his sweatpants

Nzuzo: "that's inappropriate" she giggled

Mom: "I was around thought I should check if y'all still here, didn't your father come to get you two?"

Me: "I didn't call him"

Mom: "well you should have, I have two leaners coming to rent here a.."

Me: "you can't do that!" I cut her off

Mom: "it my house, they will share a room I was going to give the other room to another two but you can keep it for now I will get other learners next year"

Me: "please don't do this mom please" I went on my knees but Nzuzo pulled me up

Nzuzo: "don't beg" mom giggled I hated the way she was looking at him like his the last piece of cake

Mom: "good" she opened the door "you can come in" I went to see it was a delivery truck from the furniture shop

Me: "you can't do this!!"

Nzuzo: "baby don't"

Mom: "baby hhu Mmh Yammy got a boyfriend" Nzuzo took my hand leading me to my room

Nzuzo: "let's move wake up Masisi we will move your things to her room baby" I nodded it was the biggest room we woke Masisi up we moved masisi's bed putting it on the corner then moved my bed to that room and my closet along with everything else. I watched as the moving people put in two singles bed in my room and two chest of drawers and a small fridge

Mom: "well bye babies the boys will come tomorrow"

Nzuzo: "you said boys?"

Mom: "yep"

Nzuzo: "how cruel can one person be you going to bring strange teenage boys who are sex crazy driven by hormones to stay with your daughters"

Me: "she's the same person who let her husband fuck her daughter she doesn't care"

Mom: "you right I don't care" she walked out shaking her ass that has seen better days

Nzuzo: "God I want to kill her" Masisi walked out I followed her she took a stone and threw it at the car she was driving the window broke she came out flying matching for Masisi but I pushed her off she fell hitting her head she stood up Nzuzo was laughing

Mom: "you better call your father to come get you two before I kill y'all" she got in her and drove off we all got in the house laughing

Nzuzo: "dang Masisi do you know how expensive an Audi is"

Masisi: "don't know don't care kona what is an Audi" I just laughed Nzuzo pulled me to him kissing my head

Me: "go to bed Masisi we have school tomorrow" she smiled

Masisi: "see you in our room my roommates"

Nzuzo: "shut up" she went to the room laughing Nzuzo held my face I leaned in on his touch "I'm worried"

Me: "I love you so much"

Nzuzo: "maybe I should ask Uncle Scelo to take you guys in"

Me: "we going to be fine, I don't want to burden your family" I kissed him

Nzuzo: "I wish I didn't have to leave"

Me: "you doing it for us remember" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "don't use my words against me" we kissed slowly and passionately pouring everything into the kiss for a long time we pulled apart after sometime

Me: "let's sleep baby" he nodded we went to bed after locking and switching off the lights he got in behind me and kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I love you thembalam"

Me: "I love you too khumalo" he held me we slept

.

The following day Masisi and I woke up and prepared for school I woke Nzuzo up we all had breakfast then left he was walking me to school when we got to the gate he cupped my face and we kissed some boys who were walking past whistled and made silly comments I pulled back

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" he smiled and gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "see you later" we went our separate ways. Time flew by and during break time I went to my corner I felt like running when Sbu came to me he had been courting me since February

Sbu: "Hey Yamkelani"

Me: "hi sbu" he sat down and gave me juice

Sbu: "I see Nzuzo hasn't left"

Me: "no he hasn't"

Sbu: "he will leave soon though"

Me: "I really don't want to talk" he nodded we sat in silence until break was over. Soon it was after school Nzuzo was waiting by the gate speaking to some girls they were busy giggling at whatever Nzuzo was smiling I felt like wiping that stupid smile off his face I stood there with my hands crossed over my chest I had this territorial feeling over him I was tapping my feet "lover boy is back to his player way" I turned it was Sbu

Me: "shut up and walk away" he chuckled and did Nzuzo said something the girls giggled louder one even touched his stomach I just left I was halfway from home when my phone rang it was him

Me: "ja"

Nzuzo: "aibo baby I've been waiting here for so long, where are you?"

Me: "almost at home"

Nzuzo: "what the fuck Yamkelani" I dropped the call continued walking until I got home I found Masisi outside

Me: "why you outside"

Masisi: "forgot my key"

Me: "sorry" I opened we got in "change then lunch"

Masisi: "yebho yes" we went to our bedroom changed I went to soak our uniforms then made lunch after eating I washed our uniforms, we went to get water we came back I started cooking someone knocked Masisi went to open

Masisi: "Yummy!!" I went to check and it was Sbu with some guy I've seen around school carrying bags and other things

Me: "what you doing here" Sbu just smiled

Sbu: "I had no idea you stay here Zwelakhe and I will be renting the room"

Zwe: "hi Yamkelani"

Me: "hi this is my little sister Masisi"

Sbu: "Zwe is my little brother I'm sure you've seen him around school he is in grade 8"

Me: "ok get in, Masisi show them the room" I went to the kitchen continued cooking they came back

Sbu: "this is good I got myself a smart study buddy"

Me: "we going to be sharing the stove and the cupboards"

Zwe: "cool but we going to do our grocery tomorrow so Sbu lets go buy bread"

Sbu: "sho" they left

Masisi: "you know Sbu"

Me: "we have economics and accounting together"

Masisi: "Zwe is cute"

Me: "hayi Masisi" she laughed and went to the lounge, I finished up cooking we sat watching tv Sbu and his brother were back. Someone knocked and the door opened Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "awu sho majita" they greeted him back he came to where I was sitting and lifted me up he sat down and put me on him "baby"

Me: "mmh" he kissed my neck

Nzuzo: "bedroom please"

Me: "after dinner" he nodded "Masisi you hungry"

Masisi: "yes" I stood up Nzuzo followed me to the kitchen I dished up went back to the lounge we ate while nzuzo spoke to the boys after dinner I washed dishes while Masisi took a bath when she was done I did then we did our homework. She went to sleep when she was done I continued studying until nzuzo came to bed he let me study until I was done

Nzuzo: "I don't like what you did today"

Me: "and I'm supposed to like you hanging out with girls"

Nzuzo: "we were just talking"

Me: "you were so caught up on them you didn't even see me"

Nzuzo: "I would see you with million people around you" I looked at him we were sitting across each other on the bed he leaned in to kiss me I noticed something like a bite mark on his neck

Me: "Nzuzo is that a bite mark on your neck" he froze I just got off the bed ran out the room crying I bumped into a buff chest I looked up it was Sbu

PART 11

Sbu cleared his throat

Sbu: "are you okay?" I was just looking at him "she is okay" that was Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "come on baby" I shook my head

Me: "no"

Nzuzo: "baby please let me explain" Sbu moved and went to their room I just walked to the lounge I wanted to cry without disturbing Masisi I sat on the couch he came to kneel next to me

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani I would never hurt you like this"

Me: "you should have left me you shouldn't have made me fall for you like this"

Nzuzo: "baby come on"

Me: "I told you I was damaged that I couldn't give you what you, I tried letting you go but you wouldn't let me. Now you hurting me you hurting me nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani stop!!!" My eyes shot up in shock and fear "I would never do that to you I love you"

Me: "the bite mark" he looked down

Nzuzo: "nothing happened I swear it didn't go that far"

Me: "but something did happen"

Nzuzo: "but I stopped it baby you have to believe me"

Me: "I don't believe you"

Nzuzo: "you have to ma'Duma I'm begging you"

Me: "who is it"

Nzuzo: "hhu?"

Me: "the girl who gave you that bite mark"

Nzuzo: "it no one baby" I pulled myself together stopped crying I wiped my tears

Me: "okay, you can leave my house now"

Nzuzo: "baby don't do this not to us baby"

Me: "please leave I would like some sleep its a school day tomorrow"

Nzuzo: "I'm not going anywhere, the only place im going to is that room to get in bed with the most important person in life and fall asleep with her in my arms"

Me: "fine by me I'm used to sleeping with someone who has hurt me who I hate" he gasped and sat on the floor I stood up and went to bed I silently cried until I fell asleep.

.

I woke went to out of our bedroom Nzuzo was sleeping on the couch I shook him and he woke up

Nzuzo: "baby"

Me: "go to bed"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby"

Me: "go to bed Nzuzo we will talk when I come back from school"

Nzuzo: "I love you" I huffed irritably

Me: "I love you too" he cupped my face and we kissed

Nzuzo: " I'm really sorry Yammy" I nodded went to boil water while he went to sleep I woke Masisi up she took a bath I made us lunch while the water was boiling. Just as I was pouring my water Sbu got in the kitchen

Sbu: "morning Yamkelani"

Me: "hey how are you"

Sbu: "I'm good and you"

Me: "I'm good"

Sbu: "wana talk about what happened last night"

Me: "nope"

Sbu: "when you need a shoulder and an ear I'll be here"

Me: "thank you" I went to bath, Masisi and I finished preparing we had breakfast when we were done I went to wake up Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "I'm leaving"

Nzuzo: "you want me to walk you"

Me: "no I'll walk with Sbu and his brother" he got off the bed put on his jeans and shoes

Nzuzo: "let me wash my face then we'll go" I nodded and took my bag I went to tell Sbu to leave me behind when Nzuzo was done we left he was holding my hand

Nzuzo: "baby you still mad at me"

Me: "no I'm just really disappointed and hurt, what hurts the most is that you not being truthful but you always preaching honesty"

Nzuzo: " I'm sorry" I just nodded he brought me closer to him putting his arm around my neck "I love you so much Yamkelani"

Me: "I love you too m, just promise me you will stop fucking whoever it is that you fucking"

Nzuzo: " I'll stop I promise okay and it was just once"

Me: "okay" he kissed my head

Nzuzo: "so do you know those boys you going to be staying with"

Me: "yes I have a two classes with Sbu and his been asking me out for awhile now"

Nzuzo: "wow!! Just perfect fuckn perfect"

Me: "don't yell"

Nzuzo: "I'm pissed Yamkelani you going to be staying with a guy who has feelings for you, I know how guys think and behave"

Me: "it doesn't matter I know who I love"

Nzuzo; " don't like this at all"

Me: "tough"

Nzuzo: "really?"

Me: "sorry"

Nzuzo: "I'll speak to him we need to set few things straight"

Me: "ok baby"

Nzuzo: "I know that you can have any man you want but still you choose me and I love you for it"

Nzuzo: "I don't want to lose you Yamkelani"

Me: "you will"

Nzuzo: "ayi Yamkelani!"

Me: " I'm serious Nzuzo if you keep coming home to me with bite marks"

Nzuzo: "that will never happen again I swear to you"

Me: "I would never cheat on you Nzuzo in anyway, I would never create a bond with someone else whether it emotionally or sexually I would never do you like that. I'm not unappreciative" he stopped walking and cupped my face

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry ma'Duma I'm so sorry it was a once slip up thembalam and it will never ever happen again I love you" I was about to say something when he shut me up with a kiss I held onto his hoody I could feel my knees going weak when he pulled back I was breathing heavily

Nzuzo : "I love you" I was smiling like a fool "look at those cute dimples" he was laughing he took my hand and we continued walking and having meaningless conversation when we got near the school gate he kissed me I went in.

.

Days went by finally it was the day I've been dragging it was Saturday Nzuzo was leaving at night, we had spent the previous night just talking and making out like crazy he hadn't tried to have sex with me

since that night on my birthday. I've been wanting to do because it pretty clear if I don't give it to him he will continue getting it from somewhere else but I didn't know how to initiate it when I took his clothes off he would pull back and say lets cool off at first it really hurt I felt like he didn't want me anymore but he said we not in the rush blah blah blah, the only thing that was ringing in my mind is that he has found better.

In the morning after having breakfast we went to his home he sat on the bed playing music on his laptop watched me as I packed his things, I pushed his hoody aside

Nzuzo: "no ways baby I love that hoody"

Me: "I also love it"

Nzuzo: "hayi ngeke baby I'll give you money to buy your own"

Me: "you buy a new one this one smells like you" he smiled shaking his head

Nzuzo: "come here"

Me: "need to finish packing before your uncle starts yelling at you"

Nzuzo: "I don't care come here" he pulled me to him I was laughing he rolled us over getting on top of me "I love you ma'Duma" he kissed my cheeks

Me: "make love to me"

Nzuzo: "not yet"

Me: "please I want you to take away my bad experience"

Nzuzo: "no we going to do it when you ready and when you want to because you want us to create an amazing bond not because you want to replace something"

Me: "I'm ready" he laughed and pulled my dress up leaving it around my waist he went down on me after I climaxed he came to my face we kissed I kept on thinking he will put it in he will put it in now but like always □we kissed until he came to lay next to me I just sighed stood up and continued packing

Nzuzo: "don't be mad you not ready"

Me: "whatever baby" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "you so cute" I smiled

Me: "shut up"

Nzuzo: "my little foreigner" I threw a t-shirt at him laughing I finished up packing while laughing at his stupid jokes. When I was done packing we watched a movie the rest of the day flew by, his aunt n uncle were taking him to the bus station at 19:00 for a 22:20 bus. So at 18:30 he walked us home when we got at home Masisi went in we stood outside just staring at each other

Nzuzo: "I'll be safe"

Me: "and?"

Nzuzo: "and faithful I'll call everyday, I'll text you every morning, I'll stay true to us and I'll love you always" I smiled I wrapped my arms around his neck we kissed he was grabbing my ass I didn't want to let go but eventually we had to

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "love you so much more"

Me: "call me as soon as you get there"

Nzuzo: "yebo mah"

Me: "whatever" he gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "get in wifey I gotta go work for us"

Me: "yeah?"

Nzuzo: "yeah" we kissed again

Me: "you better take care of yourself Nzuzo"

Nzuzo; "I will" we kissed again

Me: "don't go" he laughed and kissed me again

Nzuzo: "we doing this for us remember"

Me: "yeah yeah" we kissed again "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you" he opened the door and kissed me softly "see you soon"

Me: "see you soon" he held my waist and kissed me deeply then let go kissing my head

Nzuzo: "don't cry" he wiped my tears "in a blink of an eye I'll be back you will be sleeping in my arms on my chest"

Me: "just go Nzuzo so I c.."

Nzuzo: "you can go cry yourself to sleep"

Me: "shut up" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "don't cry"

Me: "go before you miss your bus" he gave me a soft peck then left running "I love you !!!!!!!" He stopped running

Nzuzo: "I love you Yamkelani Duma!!!!!!" I laughed and got in

Sbu: "lover boy finally gone" I just rolled my eyes and went to my room

PART 13

After making I texted Luyolo to not call me anymore I'll call him when I can. I got off the bed put on his t-shirt I went to watch him cook

Me: "smells heavenly baby what you making"

Nzuzo: "spaghetti and meatballs"

Me: "You've never cooked for me before"

Nzuzo: " I'm a man we don't cook"

Me: "yabusa boh" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "I'm joking, you just a better cooker"

Me: "baby is it wrong of me to have guy friends"

Nzuzo: "yes you don't need them, I'm your guy friends"

Me: "you my lover"

Nzuzo: " I'm your lover plus guy friend wrapped in one"

Me: "mmh" he turned to look at me while sighing

Nzuzo: "baby you seriously don't need another male in your life"

Me: "but Luyolo helped a little baby his a psychologist he has came across people in similar situations that I am in"

Nzuzo: "and what situation is that? Yamkelani you are not in need of anything Masisi and I give you everything you need" you know when you trying to speak to someone and they won't listen that is exactly how I felt

Me: "ok baby"

Nzuzo: "I love Yamkelani and I'm doing this to protect you from the evils of this world that come in male forms"

Me: "I understand"

Nzuzo: "good, now taste this" he came over to where I was sitting I took a taste of what he had on the spoon

Me: "wow!! What is it"

Nzuzo: "is it good? It pasta sauce mixed with herbs and cheese sauce"

Me: "it really nice" he smiled and gave me a soft peck then went back to the stove. After awhile he dished up we went eat while watching tv

Nzuzo: "next year you should apply for a school around here"

Me: "I will" which was a lie I didn't want him lecturing me I had no intention to study further after matric I had Masisi that I needed to take care of so going to varsity was not something I even entertained. Yeah sure I wanted to go to varsity study my BCom Accounting become a CA one day but that was just a dream and dreams for people like us don't really come true but one thing for sure my little was going to study and become something great, she had no responsibility unlike me

Nzuzo: "I don't believe you"

Me: "you should" he looked at me for a long time before going back to eating his delicious food

Nzuzo: "I'll personally ensure that you apply Yamkelani and you need to improve your finally results for this year so we can try to get you a bursary"

Me: "I'll improve my results nzuzo and can we move on from this topic"

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing I just don't want to talk about it"

Nzuzo: "ok, so tomorrow I'm taking you to gold reef"

Me: "what's that"

Nzuzo: "you will see"

Me: "cool! Can't wait"

Nzuzo: "I can't wait for you to come study this side" I just felt overwhelmed I didn't want this life I didn't want to be 17 and taking care of my 9 year old little sister, I didn't want to put my dreams aside for her dreams, I didn't want to be 17 and dependent on my 19 year old boyfriend who could wake up any day and find a new girlfriend, I didn't want to be continuously raped by the man I thought was my father for over 2 years have him treat me like his wife, I didn't want to have a cruel selfish mother who hated me. all I wanted was to be like people my age fall hopelessly in love simply because it wonderful and I want to, go to places have fun the only responsibility I want to have is to worry because my boyfriend didn't answer his call or worry because the girl I hate in class has the exact same pair of my new expensive sneakers. I just found myself sobbing loudly

Nzuzo: "baby talk to me"

Me: "I I can't anymore Nzuzo I don't want to"

Nzuzo: "talk to me let me help you"

Me: "something can't be helped they simply can't"

Nzuzo; "tell me what's wrong I'll fix it"

Me: "not everything can be fixed Nzuzo dammit!!"

Nzuzo: "you don't know that so just put it all on me let me handle it let me fix it baby please" I just sobbed louder

Me: "I wana die I just don't want this anymore" he cupped my face I couldn't stopped wailing I even had hiccups

Nzuzo: "baby don't speak like that" He kissed my wet lips I had snot all over them but he still kissed them than pulled me to his chest wrapping his arms around me

Me: "I don't want this" he started rocking us until I was done wailing

Nzuzo: "I love you" I moved from his chest and looked up at him "I do Yamkelani I really love you I would die without you I need you baby you my family"

Me: "I love you too" he pulled the t-shirt I was wearing up and started wiping my face

Nzuzo: "you so ugly" I chuckled

Me: "you still love me"

Nzuzo: "yes I do I really do" he kissed me "you such an ugly cryer Yamkelani hha if I were you I would never cry" the way he said it I was in tears with laughter I pushed him off the couch he fell on the carpet pulling me to him

Me: "you stupid"

Nzuzo: "yet you love me now come kiss me let me taste more of that snot" I buried my face on his chest laughing he wrapped his arms around me I could feel his chest vibrating under me he was laughing

Me: "God I love you"

Nzuzo: "mmh so I'm God now"

Me: "you my God" he moved his waist pressing his erection on me

Nzuzo: "see what you do to me" I giggled

Me: "let's finish dinner" he let go of me we ended finishing food sitting on the floor.

.

The rest of the week was amazing I was going to spend two weeks, the 2nd week his friend came back since they were opening. He was a cool guy Xolani he looked like one of those spoilt kids, Nzuzo only went to campus when he had tutorials rather than that he stayed with me we explored this beautiful that had become a home to him. Friday night they accompanied me to the park station after we had early dinner at mugg n bean it was time to go back home when we got there Xolani stood a bit far from us

Nzuzo: "I'll miss you ma'Duma"

Me: "2 months"

Nzuzo: "2 long months"

Me: "I love and I'll miss you"

Nzuzo: "I love you" he cupped my face we kissed pulled back when it was time to check in I did after putting my bag in Nzuzo gave me the warmest hug ever then kissed me lightly

Nzuzo: "I'll see you soon"

Me: "see you soon"

Time flew by, exams came and went Masisi & I both passed we were excited for a higher grade I was so happy after getting my report I called Nzuzo as soon as I got home but he didn't pick up I called again it still rang to voicemail I just figured he is in class or something. I changed made lunch for Masisi and I we sat down watching tv while eating

Masisi: "this house is so quiet without the boys" Sbu and Zwe had left after exams

Me: "you just miss Zwe"

Masisi: "maybe"

Me: "you know nothing could ever happen between you two"

Masisi: "why not"

Me: "because you are kid Masisi aibo you shouldn't even be having those thought"

Masisi: "but you have a boyfriend"

Me: "I'm old Masisi you will also have one when you in grade 10"

Masisi; "hha!!!"

Me: "yes or we are going to have problems"

Masisi: "but Zwe won't even be around when I'm in grade 10"

Me: "you will meet someone else"

Masisi: "mmh" I just chuckled she went on telling me about Zwe as if I didn't know him after lunch we went to get water then just chilled. Before going to sleep I called Nzuzo again but it rang to voicemail I was starting to worry so I called Thandi asked her to call him and she did but it also rang to voicemail I texted him that he just needs to let me know his okay that's all.

I hardly slept that night in the morning I called again but I was not expecting what happened when someone answered but a girl's voice said hello

Her: "bae's phone hello" I looked at the screen thinking I dialed a wrong number but nope I didn't "hello who is there" I cleared my throat

Me: "he...hello can I speak to Nzuzo"

Her: "who are you? Bae is in the shower" tears were already falling

Me: "just let him know I called"

Her: "your number is not saved boo thang"

Me: "he will know" I dropped the call and just pulled the blanket over my head crying silently

PART 14

I was still crying after about an hour when I heard the door open Masisi pulled back the blanket I opened my eyes ready to shout at her but when I saw that it was Nzuzo I just cried harder I threw myself at him he held me tightly brushing my hair

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry whatever it is that went wrong baby I'm sorry and everything will be fine"

Me: "how Call The shower"

Nzuzo: "you not making any sense baby" I pulled out of his arms he wiped my tears

Me: "how are you here?" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "bus babe I took a bus yesterday in the afternoon got here at dawn, sorry I came late I needed the rest and I lost my phone before getting on the bus I would have called"

Me: "you didn't tell me you coming"

Nzuzo: "because you worry baby now tell me why are you crying"

Me: "I've been calling you all night you weren't answering then when I called a couple of minutes ago some girl answered saying you in the shower"

Nzuzo: "what the fuck?! And you believed her? Yamkelani you need to trust me I would never hurt you like that"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "give me your phone" I did and he dialed his number putting it on loudspeaker

Girl: "bitch stop calling my man we busy can't you see he doesn't want to talk to you"

Nzuzo: "who the hell are you and how did you get my phone" she dropped the call

Me: "see"

Nzuzo: "I am so sorry baby"

Me: "how did she even know it me"

Nzuzo: "because your number is saved as wifey I guess she was just playing some really stupid games"

Me: "I'm sorry I assumed the worst" I put my face on his chest wrapping my arms around his waist he held me putting his chin on my head

Nzuzo: "it's okay I would have assumed the same" he kicked his shoes off I shifted he got on the bed with me "I missed you so bad I packed as soon as all my results came out"

Me: "how did it go"

Nzuzo: "really well baby, how did your results go"

Me: "really well too I'm going to grade 12 next year"

Nzuzo: "that's amazing baby things are looking up for us"

Me: "I missed you"

Nzuzo: "so did I"

Me: "no I mean I missed you missed you" he laughed getting on top of me

Nzuzo: "someone is getting naughty" I held his head bringing his face to mine

Me: "kiss me" he did we made slow long passionate love.

We were now just laying in bed naked

Nzuzo: "I sent Masisi home"

Me: "oh"

Nzuzo: "she wanted to go and I wanted to be alone with you"

Me: "you two discussed this without talking to me"

Nzuzo: "baby are you upset?"

Me: "no ofcos not I'm grateful I also want to spend time alone with you but you can't just do that nzuzo she's my little sister so talk to me first"

Nzuzo: "yebo mah" I punched him lightly "I've been saving some of my food allowance from the bursary baby"

Me: "that's good"

Nzuzo: "it's too much baby, I want us to go buy Christmas clothes for Masisi and you"

Me: "Masisi will like that very much"

Nzuzo: "what about you"

Me: "me too baby but Masisi more"

Nzuzo: "I live for you two babe you know that" i looked up to his face we kissed. Ever felt like your heart is going to pop out, been so in love that you feel like if that person walks out of your life you will die, loved someone so much that you feel physical pain at the thought of losing that person that is how I loved Nzuzo he was my hero he offered me things I've never had before I'm not even talking about money I mean he had me feeling things I've never thought I could ever feel before.

Me: "I love you Phiwo" he giggled holding me even closer

Nzuzo: "my mother used to call me that when I cried"

Me: "you miss them"

Nzuzo: "everyday baby my life would be so different if they were still alive"

Me: "I'm sorry baby"

Nzuzo: "dad loved my mother I didn't know much but I knew that he laid his world at her feet, never once did I ever hear them raising their voices at each other every time if that left the room he would kiss her first and tell her he loved her. He always held her hand when we went someone"

Me: "I want that"

Nzuzo: " I'm trying to give you that"

Me: "and you doing a very good job"

Nzuzo: "I am?"

Me: "yes my love"

Nzuzo: "my father was a good man Yamkelani and my mom was a pure goddess I wish you had a chance to meet them" I looked at him he was in tears I wiped his tears and kissed him he let out a muffled sob covered by our lips he got on top of me kissing me harder he slammed into me hard I cried out in pain he pulled back only to smash even harder by the time he roared we were both in tears I was in so much pain he looked at me and panic set all over his face when he pulled out I winced in pain

Nzuzo: "baby i.... Fuck Yamkelani did I hurt you"

Me: "I'm fine it okay"

Nzuzo: "no it's not I shouldn't have lost myself like that I'm sorry I know you have ... Uhm ... I'm sorry baby"

Me: "I have rape issues is that what you were going to say"

Nzuzo: "what? No!"

Me: "I'm fine Nzuzo really"

Nzuzo: " I'm sorry"

Me: "me too now come closer" he did holding me from behind

Nzuzo: "I will never forgive myself for this"

Me: "baby stop please you hurting me more by apologizing I'm not going to brake because we had rough sex"

Nzuzo: "which you were not ready for"

Me: "because I'm a rape victim"

Nzuzo: "stop saying that!!!" I didn't say anything after minutes of silence he sighed "I'm sorry I yelled"

Me: "are you?"

Nzuzo: "yes I'm really sorry"

Me: "ok"

Nzuzo: "have you eaten"

Me: "nope"

Nzuzo: "baby it after 12:00, I'll go make you something"

Me: "okay thank you" he kissed my cheek and got off the bed putting on his boxers I was staring at him biting my lip

Nzuzo: "like what you see?"

Me: "heck yeah" he laughed and kissed my forehead

Nzuzo: "let me get you some food" he walked out I got up made the bed put on his t-shirt I went to the kitchen he was busy frying I boiled water

Nzuzo: "you were supposed to wait in bed"

Me: "need to bath"

Nzuzo: "I like you dirty"

Me: "I don't" he lifted me up I squealed in surprise "put me down!!" He was spinning me around

Nzuzo: "I love you ma'Duma"

Me: "I love you too now put me down" he did then kissed me

Nzuzo: "go bath you smell like sperms"

Me: "it your sperms"

Nzuzo: "my tiny little babies"

Me: "you so stupid"

Nzuzo: "and I'm taking you to the clinic for pills we don't want you to get pregnant"

Me: "you don't wana have babies with me"

Nzuzo: "not when we in this situation"

Me: "yeah I know" I went to bath, he got in with food as I was drying he went to throw the water out while I moisturized then wore his t-shirt. We basically spent the day and night in bed.

.

Weeks went by everything was just amazing Nzuzo's uncle bought him a new phone. it was the 22nd Nzuzo took Masisi and I to Scottburgh mall for shopping then lunch it was amazing. We had Christmas with his family. Today was New Year's Eve around 19:00 Nzuzo was laying on the bed waiting for me as I got I dressed

Nzuzo: "not that baby" I threw the shorts at him in frustration

Me: "this is the 3rd outfit you don't approve off nzuzo, why did you let me buy these clothes when you have a problem with?"

Nzuzo: "it at night people are going to be drinking you can't wear revealing things" he jumped off the bed and gave me a soft peck "don't be upset" he went to the closet pulled out a black knee ripped ankle grazer with a black vest and a olive green bomber jacket "try this baby" I got dressed "perfect now put on your all stars"

Me: "thank you" I tied my braids into a half bun

Nzuzo: "let's go" he took my hand "you look beautiful"

Me: "I love you" we left going to his home they were having a huge braai there when we got there his cousins were sitting outside the boy's flat

Sizwe: "makoti!"

Me: "hi" Thandi stood up we hugged we all exchanged greetings

Nzuzo: "where's my beer" I looked at him kinda shocked

Themba: "in my room, we put the cooler there" that's when I noticed they were all drinking Nzuzo went in came out with a chair I sat down

Thandi: "I'm having hunters dry do you want one"

Nzuzo: "no she doesn't"

Thandi: "she can make her own decisions"

Sizwe: "stay out of it" Nzuzo went to get the cooler then sat down putting me on his lap

Me: "I didn't know you drink baby"

Nzuzo: "I'm not a drunkard so don't worry" we sat there until more of his extended family came before I knew it the yard was packed I was being introduced to so many people. As the night went on Nzuzo was getting drunk and irritating after midnight fireworks went off, after eating I went to check on Masisi then I went to sleep in his room leaving Nzuzo drinking with his cousins. I was still asleep when I felt the bed move I turned and he was getting in bed he wrapped himself around me

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "you love me" we went back to sleep.

Once January hit days moved too fast I wished I could slow down time I was in grade 12 I refused for Nzuzo to buy me a uniform so he only got Masisi a few. Sbu and Zwe were back Masisi was over Zwe and I was super happy about that my little was growing too much she was tall. 3rd week of January Nzuzo was going back to school I felt like dying instead of getting used to it, it all just got worse the night he was going to leave the follow day we made love the whole night. It was the 2nd week of February i was cooking while Masisi was writing her homework Sbu and Zwe went to play soccer when someone knocked I wiped my hands went to open only to get the shock of my life it was as if I'm looking at an older buff taller male version of me just a little darker

Him: "Lani Jesus you've grown" he had a British accent

Me: "da...dad!" He just smiled

Him: "where's your sister I'm here to take you home"

PART 15

I stared at this man who without any doubt was my father, I looked at him from head to toe everything he was wearing screamed expensive even the watch it was the same watch I had seen on tv when Nzuzo and I were watching Mtv Cribs that time I was in Jhb. His car was the same car I had once told my mother I would own and she laughed at my face it was a Range Rover

Him: "Lani are you hearing me"

Me: "what do you want?" He sighed

Him: "Lani my child can we talk about all of this later, it getting late and I can't drive in a place I don't know at night"

Me: "we not going anywhere with you I don't know you and you are a stranger"

Him: "you want introductions? I'm Marvin Demus your father now I understand you have questions and I will answer them all but for now please pack. Where is your sister?" I moved he got in the anger flushed all over his face as he took in the house "woah!!" That was Masisi I turned to see her

Masisi: "Yammy who is this"

Him: "I'm Marvin your father" yho Masisi cracked up she laughed so hard she was in tears

Me: "Masisi!!"

Masisi: "get out of here with stupid jokes our father hated you" she stopped smiling and fixed the coldest stare at him "now who are you and what you doing here" her voice was filled with so much authority even I was shocked a little Zwe n Sbu got in laughing

Him: "who the hell are you"

Sbu: "no who the hell are you?!"

Me: "they renting a room here"

Him: "your mother let you stay with boys?! That are not even family" he started pacing "I'm going to kill that woman, just take whatever Lani we leaving!! And don't forget your ID" Call me stupid or selfish

or whatever but the only thing that was on my mind at that moment was he will force us either way and I had a little hope so I pulled Masisi to our room

Me: "pack"

Masisi: "what? No"

Me: "yes we leaving, his our father and we leaving whether we like it or not" we packed we took our bags to the lounge he was still staring at Sbu like he wants to rip him apart

Marvin: "come" he took masisi's bag shaking his head it was an old shoprite carrier bag mine as well

Sbu: "so you really leaving" I was about to answer when Marvin screamed for me to come out I did he put our bags in the boot then opened the back seat we got in Masisi mouthed wow he went in the driver's seat

Marvin: "seatbelt please" I did masisi's belt then mine and he drove off in speed "where is your mother Lani"

Me: "I don't know"

Masisi: "so you knew all along where we staying but you never bothered so why now"

Marvin: "I didn't know, I would never let you grow up in that setting your mother fooled me. This is really upsetting me we will talk when I'm not driving" the rest of the ride was silence when we drove into the bright lights of durban Masisi kept her eyes fixed on the window it was the first time she came to Durban we stopped at this huge building near the beach he got out opened our doors someone came running and took our bags while the other got in the car we went the building was amazing with people all over. We got in the lift Masisi held onto me finally it stopped Masisi let out a yelping sound

Marvin: "you okay Sne?" She nodded we got off went into the room written presidential suite he paid the guy who had our bags he put them down and walked out Marvin locked the door

Marvin: "you gonna share that bedroom it has a bathroom so can a bath I got some calls to make, then we will go downstairs get dinner and we can talk"

Me: "ok" he disappeared to the other room Masisi and I took our bags went to the room it was beautiful with a big double bed everything was white

Masisi: "wow"

Me: "I know right"

Masisi: "you trust him?"

Me: "God can't hate us that much"

Masisi: "you right"

Me: "let's bath"

Masisi: "I hope there's a shower" I laughed I had told her about the shower

Me: "the hot rain" We went in the bathroom

Us: "the hot rain!!!" We high fived and stripped fast getting in the shower we stayed until the water got cold we got out lotioned and got dressed when we got out the room he was already sitting in the lounge with his head on his hands

Marvin: "y'all take long just like Claire"

Masisi: "who is Claire"

Marvin: "your big sister, now come I already got a table for us"

Masisi: "you sound funny" he chuckled

Marvin: " I'm not from here and I practically grew up in England" we left going down there was a restaurant there we sat down everything just looked fancy

Masisi: "I don't know Yammy" she whispered

Me: "me too" I mouthed we didn't know anything on the menu besides burgers so I ordered that for the both of us and orange juice

Masisi: "when are we going back home"

Marvin: "as soon as I get the paper work done"

Masisi: "I mean home home"

Marvin: "you not going back there to that slum"

Me: "that's our home, a home you let us grow up in while you lived the life of luxury"

Marvin: "Lani do you think if I had even the slightest idea I would have let that happen. Your mother fooled me I bought her a house in morning side I send her money for you kids every month I have been paying for a private school since you started grade 1 Lani. I had no idea things were like this yes I messed by not checking up on you two and not being there emotionally but I thought y'all had the best until your mother sent me an address telling me to come get y'all because she's tired of taking care of you two. I have been trying to call her since then but her number has been on voicemail I went to the house found people who said they bought that house 6 years ago I don't even know where to start looking for her"

Me: "you lying"

Marvin: "I swear on my life Lani I would never let my children grow up like that while I grew up and lived in luxury"

Masisi: "we slept without food, dad used to ra.."

Me: "shut up Masisi!"

Marvin: "no talk Sne he used to what"

Me: "nothing" Masisi looked down just staffing in her fries

Marvin: "Lani you have to talk to me"

Me: "we have nothing to say to you. All I know is that we suffered at times went to bed on empty stomachs while you dined in these type of places"

Marvin: "I didn't know"

Me: "well now you know" he brushed his head looking up

Marvin: "I swear I didn't know you have to forgive you just have to, I didn't know your mother was this cruel she had always been so sweet when she fell pregnant with you Lani my girlfriend back at home was also pregnant we were set to get married. Your mother was furious she broke up with me after that I only saw her on your 1st birthday then years later I ran into her here in durban I was on a business trip one thing led to another and 9 months later she gave birth to Masisi and that was it. When I finally came clean to my family I wanted to take y'all but your mother wouldn't hear a word about it I was stupid and weak I should have fought her but I thought staying with your mother was the best thing for you"

Masisi: "Marvin can I get another juice" he looked at her with his red eyes he was holding in tears he just nodded

Marvin: "excuse me for a minute" he stood up and left

Me: "you keep your mouth shut! I don't want people in my business"

Masisi: "I'm sorry Yammy, do you believe him?"

Me: I'm not surprised mom is capable of it"

Masisi: "so we leaving with him" I sighed

Me: "yes his our father Masisi and I also want to work on dreams not have to be dependent on Nzuzo"

Masisi: "so you just going to forget about Nzuzo"

Me: "what?! Ofcos not that's absurd, Nzuzo will understand and we going to go to the same varsity"

Masisi: "okay" the waitress bought another juice for Masisi just as Marvin was coming he looked awful his eyes were red and puffy which looked ridiculous on his dark face

Marvin: "are you girls done"

Us: "not yet"

Masisi: "what are we going to do about school"

Marvin: "it's still early and I know a few people so I'm going to get y'all into a private school in Lagos"

Masisi: "is that where we going?"

Marvin: "yes Lagos Magodo"

Me: "sounds weird" he chuckled

Marvin: "my parents home is in Ogudu but my house is in Magodo I bought it when I got married to my wife Mayowo. We have 3 kids together Justin is the oldest his 24 finishing his studies in the UK then there's Claire she and you Lani are a month apart she's older doing her senior year in high school that's where you going to school Lani then there's you Sne and Raymond he is 7"

Masisi: "never though I had other siblings"

Marvin: "you do you even a big sister" Masisi smiled

Masisi: "I'm someone's big sister"

Marvin: "yep"

Masisi: "you would never rape your own child right?" I choked on my food coughed to a point where I almost threw up he gave me water after I calmed down he answered

Marvin: "that's taboo! Any man who would harm their own children like that deserves to be killed in fact any man who would do this deserves death row. Why are you even thinking about something so unspeakable at your age Sne"

Masisi: "just curious"

Marvin: "you girls are not keeping anything from me right"

Me: "no we not" we finished eating eating went up where we spent hours talking I still couldn't tell him about my stepdad or my mother's cruel ways. We finally went to our separate bedrooms I looked for my phone I wanted to call Nzuzo I looked until I felt tears running down my face I just sat down and cried

Masisi: " I'm so sorry Yammy"

Me: "how could I leave my phone behind Masisi what am I going to do"

Masisi: "ask Marvin to lend you his"

Me: "I don't know the number" I just sobbed harder I got in bed cried myself to sleep

.

We stayed in durban for 4 days all I did was cry in bed I missed Nzuzo horribly. Masisi was getting closer to Marvin I on the other was just a shell I at times I would cry until I vomited. Marvin took us to Gateway we bought some clothes and suitcases. Soon enough we took a plane to Lagos it was the scariest thing ever, when we got there everyone welcomed us with open warm arms but our stepmom was a little off.

The house was a gigantic triple story filled with staff I couldn't believe we had been suffering while our father is wealthy man he was a businessman.

We were now a week into March everything was okay I guess I just became introvert while Masisi and Raymond were thick as thieves. School was okay Claire introduced me to her friends who I couldn't really connect with they were all just spoilt brats who thought the world revolved around them and I just missed my Nzuzo. I was in my room sleeping after school that's all I did eat, sleep and school, I had been feeling some type way I missed my period on February someone knocked

Me: "yeah" Claire came in

Claire: "hey you sleeping again"

Me: "yeah I'm tired" I sat up

Claire: "I don't mean to be forward but I brought you something"

Me: "what" she gave me plastic I took out what was in "home pregnancy test" I read out

Claire: "yeah take it"

Me: "I'm not pregnant" she just gave me bored stare read the instructions then I stood up going to my en-suite I peed on the stick then went out we stayed in silence

Claire: "oh shit daddy is going to have a heart attack" I couldn't believe it I was pregnant right there on the stick it was written 6 weeks pregnant I just wailed I cried like someone was dead I was happy that I'll have a part of Nzuzo with me but I was also sad that I was actually pregnant so much for wanting my dreams to come true.

PART 16

Claire held me until I calmed down

Me: " I'd like to be alone please"

Claire: "what are you going to do?"

Me: "I don't know Claire just give me space" I snapped

Claire: " I'm sorry but just text me if you need anything I'll be in my room"

Me: "thank you" she nodded and walked out I got off the bed took my laptop from the desk I started downloading social networks and creating accounts I was going to find Nzuzo. I started with whatsapp trying to get my old account back but that didn't work out so I spent close to an hour looking for him on facebook when I finally found him I breathed out as fresh tears made their way down my cheeks. I sent him a friend request then inboxed him *hey, it me Yamkelani* I didn't know what else to say I needed him to reply first before we can talk about me leaving and the pregnancy I waited for his reply until I felt myself drifting off to sleep.

I was woken up by someone shaking me I opened my eyes and found Masisi with Raymond looking at me

Me: "what?"

Ray: "come down for dinner"

Me: "I'm coming"

Masisi: "uryt Yammy?"

Me: "yeah"

Masisi: "you look sad"

Ray: "like you've been crying"

Me: "I'm fine, now go I'll catch up"

Masisi: "alright" they got off my bed and ran out. I know some people think I was stupid, naive, selfish etc and yes I was stupid for letting my father take us like that for trusting him when I didn't know him especially with my history. I'm also selfish for just leaving Nzuzo I'm not an optimistic person but I saw a chance at a better future that would lead to my dependency honestly speaking staying at kwaDumisa wouldn't have done me any good after passing my matric I would have went to Mzinto got a minimum paying job that would lead to me renting a shack or a back room because at the end of the day I wasn't going to go to varsity and leave Masisi behind bursary or no bursary, things would have stayed like that until Nzuzo decided to marry me even so there was a 50% chance that he might marry me and a

50% chance that he might want someone better. I checked facebook he hadn't replied so I got off the bed went to rinse my mouth and wash my face then I went downstairs to the dining area everyone was already around the table eating I greeted and sat down started dishing up for myself

Marvin: "are you okay Lani? You were crying again"

Me: "I'm fine"

Mayowo: "you shouldn't cry so much you going to get sick"

Me: "I'm fine just coming down with fever"

Mayowo: "I'll tell the driver to take you to the doctor after school tomorrow"

Me: "thank you" Marvin was just staring at me with that worried expression of his, we finished dinner over light conversations well there were talking I was just eating. After dinner I went to my room I checked on facebook still nothing but it showed that he was online 5 minutes ago so I sent him another text *i know you angry and I understand you have every right to be, but I need you Nzuzo please talk to me. I miss you so bad I didn't mean to just disappear I forgot my phone and your number was new so I didn't know it and when I tried calling my phone it just went to voicemail please talk to me I still love you I'll never stop* after sending it I went to bath then got busy with my school work I studied for four hours straight then I checked on Facebook still nothing I just went to sleep with a broken heart.

.

Days turned into weeks, weeks turned into months without Nzuzo ever replying I texted him everyday even ended up telling him I'm pregnant but nothing. I was now 3 months and 2 weeks pregnant I was starting to show just a little so I wore bigger tops i was taking driving lesson Claire had turned 18 last week they threw her a big party and bought her a bmw before that Marvin had already started with getting me driving lesson I came back from my lesson and went to look for Marvin one of the house helpers told me his in the study so I went there. I found him on the phone he was speaking his language shouting I even got scared as i was about to turn and walk out without him noticing me he called my name

Marvin: "sit" I did he finished up his call and came to sit on the couch opposite the one I was sitting on "what's wrong?"

Me: "nothing"

Marvin: "oh really?"

Me: "just came to check on you" he looked at me puzzled

Marvin: "your card still has money right?"

Me: "yes I don't need money"

Marvin: "then what's wrong" I just looked down

Me: "I'm pregnant" then there was silence for what felt like a decade when I eventually got tired of the silence I tried standing up but he pulled me down

Marvin: "how far"

Me: "3 months and 2 weeks"

Marvin: "so the father is back in South Africa"

Me: "yes"

Marvin: "I won't lie Lani I'm really disappointed but I guess you didn't really have a mother to talk to you about these things and I wasn't there as well I have no right to be angry but I am disappointed"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Marvin: "have you seen a doctor"

Me: "yes" he nodded

Marvin: "does he know"

Me: "we lost contact when I moved"

Marvin: "okay" I stood up "you don't have to worry I'm here"

Me: "thank you" I left going to my room I just got busy with my school work after awhile Mayowo got in without knocking

Mayowo: "your father tells me you pregnant"

Me: "yes"

Mayowo: "so what you going to do about it"

Me: "excuse me"

Mayowo: "you have school and your father is already speaking to various deans about getting you and Claire into varsity so a baby is just going to hold you back you have to abort it"

Me: "what?! How can you even suggest that"

Mayowo: "who is going to take care of your baby"

Me: "I will figure it out"

Mayowo: "have the abortion Lani it for your own good"

Me: "I love my baby and I'm not doing that. I can't even believe you suggesting it"

Mayowo: "mmh" she walked out after throwing pills on my desk I looked at them it was abortion pills I went flush them in the toilet the same time after that I took my phone inboxed Nzuzo that mayowo wanted me to have an abortion, call me stupid but I was inboxing him about everything and anything.

.

Months went by I got my BMW X3 on my birthday did my drivers and passed it. My baby was growing amazingly he was healthy yep it was a boy I was so excited. Still nothing from Nzuzo he had even stopped coming online. Everything was cool seeing Masisi happy decreased the guilt of leaving home, this was our home now we were settled I was cool with Claire's friends but she was my friend. Winter vacation Justin came home I thought I looked like dad but he was his twin even dark like him while Claire and Ray were light skinned. October I gave birth to a beautiful chubby boy named him Phiwokuhle Avery Demus, Masisi and I had changed our surnames after all Duma was my stepfather's surname so when Marvin asked us to change our surname I didn't even need to think about it. I wrote my exams both Claire and I did very well which was surprising for me because when I turned 5 months

I couldn't even open my books for 20 minutes without falling asleep. It was January my boy was 3 months he looked so much like Nzuzo even the skin colour which made me happy it was like I have my own mini Nzuzo. Marvin called Claire and I to his study my boy was in his sleeper in the tv room where we were watching tv I took the monitor followed Claire to the study I sat down Marvin went on telling us how he got us a place to study in London as he spoke all hope of finding Nzuzo in Jhb was vanished he went on about finding us an apartment and that we would be leaving soon

Marvin: "Lani!"

Me: "yes"

Marvin: "you zoned out"

Me: " I'm sorry"

Marvin: "I got you in for your BCom accounting and Claire is going to do her fashion design even though I wish it was something else more mea.."

Claire: "daddy please we spoke about this"

Marvin: "and I'm giving you what you want Claire even though it against my better judgement"

Me: "thank you" he smiled "is that all"

Marvin: "yes" I nodded and went to my son I picked him up went to my room he was so beautiful with his chubby cheeks knowing that i would be leaving him soon was not sitting well with me I couldn't I found myself crying silently my phone rang it was Justin

Me: "hey"

Justin: "hey kid, you crying again what's wrong? You miss Nzuzo" I chuckled through my tears Justin was such an easy person first night he came here we spent it in my room just talking Nzuzo came up

Me: "no I mean yes but that's not why I'm crying"

Justin: "talk to your brother you know I got your back"

Me: "Marvin says we leaving soon I don't wana go and leave Avery behind"

Justin: "you going to school you not leaving him because you don't want him"

Me: "I don't want to Justin! I would rather study around here"

Justin: "that's not good"

Me: "I'm not leaving my son behind Justin"

Justin: "I don't know Lani but let me speak to dad"

Me: "thank you"

Justin: "cool kid let me call him"

Me: "ok" he dropped the call

.

3 weeks later we were in London unpacking our things I started with helping the nanny unpack Avery's things I was so happy that my son was with me, we fixed up his room while Justin set up his crib and everything else. Then I unpacked my clothes in my room, Marvin had gotten us another place a town house 30 minutes from campus with 4 bedrooms, a lounge, kitchen, dining area with a corner bar. After settling in Marvin ordered dinner we ate then he left with Justin and mayowo

Claire: "finally freedom!" I just laughed

Me: "for you maybe I'm a mother"

Claire: "that's your doing you should have left Avery behind"

Me: "like hell I would have" his nanny came to take him "leave him Eloyo I'll sleep with him tonight"

Eloyo: "okay" she left

Claire: "I'm gonna go Skype Tim" her boyfriend I nodded she left going to her room I just laid on the couch put my son on my chest he looked at me smiling showing me his toothless mouth I felt happy and totally completely in love with my Phiwo

PART 17

3 years later

My baby was 3 everything he did filled me with joy even when he was being naughty I would just laugh instead of getting angry he was curious and talk active he wanted to know about everything and anything. Masisi had grown into such a beautiful person even though she had that don't fuck with me attitude which was good for her because she needed it Mayowo was just a little too much but she knew better then to mess with Masisi I was the one she just pushed around masisi was in grade 8 and had turned into a complete daddy's girl. Still nothing from Nzuzo I even stopped crying over him my life was all about Phiwo he completely had me wrapped around his finger and I wasn't complaining I hadn't dated or even entertained a guy not because of lack of opportunities I just didn't want to so if I wasn't on campus I was with Phiwo. I was doing my 4th year everything was just good.

I was woken up by small cold hands playing with my cheeks I opened my one eye he laughed and put his hand over it I opened the other one he did the same laughing loudly, I sat up fast making him lay on his back started tickling him

Phiwo: "mommy stop!!" He was in tears with laughter "lala noooo!!" I finally stopped and gave him a soft peck

Me: "morning my king"

Phiwo: "morning mom"

Me: "who got you out of your bed"

Phiwo: "jus"

Me: "oh his here" he nodded I got off the bed put on my slippers I carried him we went out found Justin having coffee while talking to Eloyo in the kitchen

Me: "morning"

Justin: "hey little sis" he pulled me in for a hug "where's the brats" I laughed putting Phiwo on the counter

Me: "she's not in this weekend" Claire had changed she joined the wrong type of friends and became a party freak it didn't help that her boyfriend Charlie was a club DJ

Justin: "Claire will kill dad"

Me: "dad is an ox" we laughed

Justin: "anyway I'm here to spend sometime with my boy"

Phiwo: "me right jus"

Justin: "ofcos"

Me: "what about me"

Phiwo: "no"

Me: "eat your food" he stuck his tongue filled with oat at me Justin laughed Eloyo was feeding him

Me: "that's disgusting Phiwo"

Justin: "we can fit you just for today"

Me: "well thank you sir you too kind" he chuckled

Justin: "call dad you didn't answer his call in the morning"

Me: "he needs to stop calling me 100 times a day I'm not an egg I will not brake his acting like I wake up screaming with nightmares"

Justin: "you can't drop a boom like that on him Lani and think he will not treat you like an egg, you his princess he feels like he failed you and his scared"

Me: "maybe coming out with this was a mistake" I had told dad about the rape and the abortion basically everything I had never seen a man cry that hard he broke down he cried so much I got scared and ran out of his study went to mayowo ever since then his been treating me like I will brake

Justin: "don't talk like that Lani"

Me: "I'll make breakfast"

Justin: "don't we'll eat out just get ready Eyolo will get Avery ready"

Phiwo: "get me ready"

Me: "finish eating first" he nodded " I'll go bath" I went to my room took a long hot bath got out lotioned got dressed in black leggings knitted black jersey I put on black thigh boots I tied my weave into a messy bun I took my hand bag putting my phone in it. I went out found Justin and Phiwo already waiting for me in the lounge dressed in similar clothes

Me: "my twins"

Phiwo: "jus says we look cool" they were wearing black skinny jeans with white navy t-shirts and black bomber jackets and black sneakers. Most of Phiwo's clothes were bought by Justin

Me: "you cool"

Justin: "yes we are now let's go I'm hungry" he lifted Phiwo and we left taking his car to the mall. When we got there we started with breakfast then went to watch a movie I had to get out because dad wouldn't stop calling he even started calling Justin so I went in the middle of the movie

Me: "dad"

Dad: "Jesus Lani I've been calling you"

Me: "I know"

Dad: "so you just decided to not answer my calls"

Me: "dad I'm fine I was fine in the morning I was fine when you called Justin an hour ago I'm fine please stop"

Dad: "you just worry me when you don't answer my calls"

Me: "I'm sorry I'll answer all your hourly calls" he chuckled

Dad: "come on it's not that bad" we laughed

Me: "yes you are daddy I'm fine truly speaking you need to stop the counseling is helping if you keep going this way I'll end up feeling suffocated"

Dad: "I don't want you to feel that way Lani. Now how is my grandson?"

Me: "his good enjoying the movie that I'm missing out on" he chuckled

Dad: "ok go but promise you will call before going to bed"

Me: "I will I promise"

Dad: "ok bye Lani" I dropped the call went in after the movie we went to the game arcade I left them there I needed to use the toilet I went in urinated got out washed my hands then got out when I got out some guy was standing there with his feet on the wall I just walked by but he followed me

Him: "hi" I walked faster "slow down"

Me: "please disappear"

Him: "no" I could feel my irritation building up

Me: "walk away" as I turned a corner I slipped and fell flat on my ass he chuckled and kneeled next to me I felt different shades of embarrassment some lady came to us apologizing saying her son dropped his juice I told her it okay I tried standing up but felt pain I almost fell again but the guy caught me putting me down gently

Him: "let me maybe you sprained your ankle" he took off my boot his fingers light grazing me indeed my left ankle was getting swollen "do you want me to lift you"

Me: "no I'm fine" he put it back and helped me stand up it was seriously hurting I could feel tears wanting to build up

Him: "where are you going to do I'll help you"

Me: "game arcade"

Him: "ok put your arm around my neck" I did and he lifted me up bridal style

Me: "people are watching"

Him: "why should you care"

Me: "oh"

Him: "you smell good"

Me: "thank you" I actually stared at him for once I found another man attractive not just Nzuzo

Him: "I'm Braddley"

Me: "Yamkelani" he chuckled

Brad: "what?"

Me: "Lani is fine"

Braddley: "sounds beautiful" I nodded and looked away as soon as we got in the arcade Justin came to us running with Phiwo behind him

Justin: "what happened Lani" Braddley put me down

Me: "I fell"

Phiwo: "mommy" Braddley looked at the 3 of us before walking away

Me: "my ankle hurts Justin"

Justin: "come get on my back" I giggled

Me: "no, just help me walk to the car"

Justin: "ok" I leaned on him while he held Phiwo with his other hand we left.

3 weeks later I came back from campus tired as hell final year was kicking my ass I got in went to check on my Phiwo he was asleep I kissed his cheek went to take a quick shower. I got out of the shower lotioned put on cotton short and Nzuzo's hoody with uggs I went to the kitchen took out lamb chops started boiling them so I could cook I made myself a cup of coffee turned on the tv opening a music channel Claire came out of her room dancing and singing along to the song that was playing on the tv

Me: "someone is in a good mood" she took my cup putting it on the table

Claire: "dance with me sis I love the song" she took my hands we started dancing "Charlie got a recording deal!!!" We screamed

Me: "that's amazing"

Claire: "I'm so happy" we continued dancing the door bell rang I went to open I just went cold I couldn't believe who was standing there with a smile on his gorgeous face

PART 18

I stared at him and he was just smiling "mmh a hottie" Claire whispered behind me a little too loudly Bradley laughed

Brad: "hey ladies"

Us: "hi"

Claire: "come in"

Me: "Claire!"

Claire: "what?"

Me: "his a stranger"

Claire: "a hot stranger"

Me: "disappear Claire" she laughed and went back in "what are you doing here?"

Brad: "you didn't give me your number and I thought calling you would make me look like a stalker"

Me: "and you showing up in my home doesn't?"

Brad: "well I didn't think about it that way Uhm now I seeeee"

Me: "how did you know where I stay"

Brad: "IT specialist and the Internet is a beautiful thing"

Claire: "Lani the pot!!!"

Me: "shit" I ran in straight to the kitchen I moved the pot aside almost burning myself when I got out the kitchen Bradley was already in the lounge talking with Claire

Claire: "Lani is cooking you should stay for dinner she's an excellent cook"

Me: "Claire slow your role"

Brad: "I'd love to stay for dinner"

Me: "okay uhm I'll be in the kitchen" I left them there went to continue with cooking Eloyo came in Phiwo

Phiwo: "mommy you back"

Me: "yes my king come kiss mommy" she put him down he walked to me I lifted him up gave him a soft peck "how's the tummy"

Phiwo: "hungry"

Me: "get him a snack please it going to be awhile before dinner is ready"

Eloyo: "okay"

Phiwo: "Avery is tired" I giggled he had this thing of referring to himself in third person sometimes I found it funny

Me: "Avery just woke up"

Phiwo: "Avery's body hurts" I put him on his high chair poured some dry cheerios for him "thank you mommy"

Me: "you welcome baby" I kissed his cheek

Claire: "the King is up" she kissed his cheek took out a bottle of wine from the fridge poured for Bradley and herself they were both in the kitchen I continued cooking with all of us in the kitchen conversations just flowing.

Brad: "so who is older"

Claire: "me ofcos"

Me: "by a month"

Claire: "still older"

Brad: "how is that possible"

Me: "half sisters"

Brad: "cool"

Phiwo: "mommy who is that" he pointed to Brad

Me: "it Bradley mom's friend from school"

Phiwo: "okay can I have chocolate milk?"

Me: "can I what?"

Phiwo: "can I please have chocolate milk"

Me: "Claire"

Claire: "I got it" she poured it for him warming it a little then gave him

Me: "what do we say Avery" he looked up his top lip already covered in chocolate

Phiwo: "thank you"

Me: "you welcome my king" When I was done Claire set up the table we had dinner, after dinner Claire did the dishes while Eloyo went to bath Phiwo, Bradley and I were in the lounge watching tv over coffee

Brad: "I wana say I'm sorry for just showing up but I don't want to lie to you"

Me: "it's okay"

Brad: "you beautiful and your son is amazing"

Me: "thank you" I kept my eyes on the tv I could feel him watching me "stop staring" he chuckled

Brad: "you can tell"

Me: "I can"

Brad: "I can't help myself you gorgeous"

Me: "uhu"

Brad: "you never speak about Avery's father"

Me: "how much did you find online"

Brad: "you grew up in SA, moved to Nigeria when you were 17, you have 2 sisters and 2 brothers, you doing BCom Accounting and you have a 3 year old son that is your whole world, you haven't dated since you moved from SA"

Me: "hha! You a qualified stalker" he chuckled

Brad: "it not like that, just that after that day I couldn't get you out of my mind at first I was irritated because I thought your brother was your son's father I kept trying to get you out of my mind eventually I gave up trying I went to my layer started looking for you"

Me: "mmh"

Brad: "I really really like you Lani if you haven't noticed"

Me: "you can't like someone you don't know"

Brad: "I know you"

Me: "I don't know you"

Brad: "give me a chance you will know me"

Me: " I ca..."

Brad: "dinner tomorrow we will take it from there"

Me: "uhm Tomorrow? Yeah I can do tomorrow" he smiled

Brad: "great so I'll call you"

Me: "my number .. Oh ja! You have it already" he chuckled looking down

Brad: "I'm sorry but I had to"

Me: "Avery will need me to tuck him in soon and I have notes to go over"

Brad: "guess that's my cue" we both stood up I walked him to the door "your sister was right you are a great cook thank you for dinner"

Me: "you welcome"

Brad: "see you tomorrow" I nodded he gave me a hug it was so tight and warm he smelled so heavenly I pulled back we stared at each other he leaned in for a kiss but I moved back clearing my throat

Brad: "uhm I'm sorry Lani"

Me: "it's ok, I'll see you tomorrow"

Brad: "I'll text you" he kissed my cheek and left. I closed the bugler gate then locked the door turning off the light in the foyer I went to Phiwo's room he was playing with his toys I joined him and after 30 minutes of play time I put him in bed read his a story he fell asleep I dimmed the lights then went to my room studied until I fell asleep.

.

The following day when I came back from campus Justin was playing with Phiwo in the lounge

Me: "you are always here"

Claire: "I know right" she was coming in the lounge she threw herself on the couch

Justin: "what's wrong with checking up on my little sisters and my boy" Phiwo was already in my arms on my lap

Claire: "you always here that's the problem, when do you even go to the office?"

Justin: "dad worries about yall so he needs reports"

Me: "daddy needs to relax we old"

Claire: "yep we old"

Justin: "yeah well, I'm here for dinner"

Me: "oh I got plans"

Justin: "what?!"

Claire: "with Bradley?" I nodded

Justin: "who is Bradley?"

Phiwo: "mom's friend from school" I could already feel Justin's judgements without even looking at him

Justin: "you already introduced him to Avery Lani!!"

Me: "don't yell you know how I feel about yelling"

Justin: "Lani"

Me: "he just showed up here and Claire invited him in for dinner"

Justin: "Claire!"

Claire: "don't you dare try to start with me mr Demus I will not take it" I just stood up went to my room with my son

Phiwo: "mommy why is Jus screaming"

Me: "I don't know baby, how was your tummy?"

Phiwo: "full"

Me: "good" he lifted his hoody "woah the tummy is really full" he nodded while smiling

Phiwo: "Jus bought happy meal"

Me: "Jus really loves Avery" he laughed rolling over my bed I laid on my stomach took my laptop I went through masisi's facebook and Instagram timeline someone knocked

Phiwo: "yes!"

Me: "you" I pulled his nose Justin came in

Justin: "I'm sorry I yelled"

Me: "it's cool"

Justin: "so tell me about this Bradley dude" I sighed and told him.

Awhile later I was taking a final look at myself Bradley was already here I was wearing a white lace badge dress above the knee with brown coat and brown platform heels my weave was tied in a messy bun I took my clutch bag breathed out and walked out my room Justin had Phiwo on his lap he was drilling Bradley

Phiwo: "you look beautiful mommy"

Me: "thank you baby" Bradley stood up

Bradley: "he is right Lani you look breathtaking"

Justin: "I'm watching you" Claire giggled

Me: "let's go before Justin embarrasses me"

Justin: "I'm offended" Bradley and I left going to the restaurant after ordering there was a little awkward silence he cleared his throat

Bradley: "you make me nervous"

Me: "is that a good thing?" He smiled

Bradley: "not really it making me feel like a fools"

Me: "I'm the one who should be nervous you my first date in like 4 years and I've only been with one person"

Bradley: "so you a good girl"

Me: "something like that"

Bradley: "I can tell, you have beautiful dimples"

Me: "uhm thank you, so tell me who is Bradley?"

Bradley: "I'm Bradley Cooper born and raised here, my father is British and mom is from SA they both white obviously, uhm I'm 25 and male" we laughed "I'm really attracted to a certain beautiful dark person called Yamkelani Siphosihle Demus" I giggled

Me: "you finally got it right"

Bradley: "the helper at home helped me she's Zulu"

Me: "you stay with your parents?" He chuckled

Bradley: "no I got my own house but I do go there for Sunday lunches"

Me: "oh"

Bradley: "I'll take you there this Sunday"

Me: "no way jose!" He smiled that killer smile of his

Bradley: "why not"

Me: "we on our first date you already speaking about meeting the parents"

Bradley: "get you on a little secret, as a guy you know within 5 minutes of meeting a girl if she's worth everything or if she's not"

Me: "so am I worth it?"

Bradley: "it and a whole lot more" I giggled

Me: "don't try to be smooth"

Bradley: "I'm not trying at anything"

Me: "ok mr Cooper"

Bradley: "tell me about your family and why you moved"

Me: "there really isn't much to say, my little sister and I stayed with our mother in SA and when I turned 17 we went to stay with our father"

Bradley: "just that?"

Me: "yep" he looked at me all curious "honestly!"

Bradley: "I believe you Lani" we finished dinner over light jokes he was the complete opposite of Nzuzo spending time with him just made me miss Nzuzo.

He opened the car door I got out he held my hand walking me to the front door at home

Bradley: "I had a wonderful time thank you so much for coming"

Me: "so did I thank you for inviting me" he held my chin and kissed me I didn't kiss him back so he pulled back

Bradley: "uhm I'm sorry" I just fake smiled he kissed me again I breathed out and kissed him back, it was slow and sweet he tasted like the mint malva pudding downed with red wine that he had for desert I held onto the color of his coat he put his hands under my coat wrapping his arms around my waist and pulled me even closer I pulled back

Me: "goodnight"

Bradley: "I'll call" I rushed in and breathed out tears started falling I sank to the floor and let out a loud sob Justin rushed in the foyer

Justin: "what did he do?!!" He held me I just cried harder "I'm going to kill that son of a bitch Lani what did he do to you" I shook my head

Me: "he he he was perfect Justin but I miss Nzuzo so bad I feel like I'm cheating on him"

Justin: "oh Lani sis" he pulled off my coat and lifted me up he walked to my room putting me on the bed

Me: "why does it have to be like this Justin?" He just held me close rocking us "I want Nzuzo I need Nzuzo"

Justin: "I'm sorry Lani"

Me: "it hurts so bad Jus"

Justin: "look change out of this I'll go get your little Nzuzo okay"

Me: "ok" we stood up he went I quickly changed to pjs then went to wash my face and brush my teeth when I got out the en-suit Phiwo was in my bed I crawled next to him and pulled him close he opened his eyes and touched my face

Phiwo: "love you mommy" he closed his eyes

Me: "I love you my king" I just cried silently

PART 19

When I woke up Phiwo was still asleep I stared at him his lips slightly parted he look so much like his dad, I gave him a soft peck got off the bed i put two pillows around him so he doesn't fall then went out leaving the door open. I found Justin and Claire in the kitchen Justin was making breakfast

Me: "morning fam"

Them: "hey sis"

Jus: "how you feeling Lani"

Me: "I'm okay I was just being silly"

Jus: "no you were not"

Claire: "what's going on? What did that Bradley do to you?"

Me: "he was so perfect and I was being a stupid girl who is not over an ex that she hasn't seen in over 4 years and knowing Nzuzo and his love for the opposite sex he has long moved on. Here I am still crying over him so yeah I was being stupid" Justin gave me a cup of coffee "I'm turning 22 in a couple of months it time I moved on and Bradley is cute and funny"

Claire: "he is not cute! He is flames if I didn't love Charlie I would dump him get myself a hot white guy"

Jus: "ok calm down princess Claire" we laughed

Me: "his hot!" Claire and I high fived while Justin rolled his eyes with a huff

Justin: "bunch of girls!"

Us: "we are girls"

Justin: "where is the king"

Me: "still asleep"

Justin: "Sne and Ray are coming up for their September holidays"

Me: "she didn't tell me"

Claire: "we don't have space here!"

Justin: "they could stay with me but I know they will want to be around Avery"

Me: "I'll share my room with with Sne and Ray can sleep in Avery's room it only for like a week"

Justin: "is that okay with you princess"

Claire: "aakikiki!! Shut up sarcasm doesn't suit you big brother" Justin served us with breakfast

Me: "where is Eloyo?"

Justin: "it her day off remember she's out said she will be back at night"

Me: "oh"

Claire: "do you think she's dating? Probably getting her freak on"

Justin: "busy bumping and grinding on top of someone"

Me: "screaming her lugs out on this cold weather" we all looked at each other bursted out in laughter
"I need to get laid"

Justin: "no you don't!"

Claire: "yes she does"

Justin: "I'll tell dad"

Me: "and I'll tell him about how you doing your p.a in the office" Claire laughed

Claire: "he is doing that skinny girl" I giggled nodding

Justin: "she has a good heart"

Claire: "and a flat ass & chest"

Me: "she's pretty" Phiwo started screaming for me "the King is up" I ran to my room "morning baby"

Phiwo: "mommy" I lifted him up went to his room brushed his teeth and washed his face "Avery doesn't like this"

Me: "Avery needs to have his teeth cleaned" he shook his head frowning I rinsed him off "let's go eat"

Phiwo: "put me down"

Me: "but I want to carry you"

Phiwo: "Avery wants to walk his a big boy"

Me: "no you my little boy"

Phiwo: "no I'm a man" I giggled and put him down

Me: "okay you a man" he ran out I followed him to the kitchen we were eating around the counter

Justin: "finish your food Lani I'll dish up for him"

Me: "thank you" Justin lifted Phiwo putting him on his high chair we sat finished eating.

Awhile later Bradley called we were watching a movie in the lounge I put Phiwo on the couch and ran to my room throwing myself on the bed

Me: "hey"

Bradley: "hey beautiful, how you doing?"

Me: "I'm good and yourself"

Bradley: "great now that you answered my call was getting worried thought I did something wrong when you didn't answer last night"

Me: "I'm sorry Avery wasn't well when I got home I had to attend to him"

Bradley: "oh I'm sorry how is he now"

Me: "his good thanks"

Bradley: "I miss you" I couldn't help but giggle

Me: "oh yeah"

Bradley: "yeah, I sent you something it should be there soon"

Me: "what is it"

Bradley: "you will see"

Me: "mmh"

Bradley; "I know it fast but you make me happy"

Me: "I'm glad"

Bradley: "I'm outside"

Me: "hhu?"

Bradley: "outside your house it raining I love the rain come watch it with me" I giggled

Me: "I'm coming" I dropped the call put on a jacket I wore my rain boots went out my room

Phiwo: "where you going mommy"

Me: "I'll be back" I kissed his cheek

Jus: "I'm watching you"

Me: "go back to your apartment Justin" Claire laughed I walked out running to Bradley's car

Bradley: "hey" he cupped my face we kissed this time it was deeper I pushed the guilt away I mentally told myself that I am not cheating and just allowed myself to enjoy it I was still lost in his lips when he pulled back

Bradley: "woah! That was good" I covered my face with my hands laughing "come on let me see that beautiful face" he moved my hands holding them "hi"

Me: "hi"

Bradley: "let's go"

Me: "where to"

Bradley: "get coffee" I nodded he drove off when we got to the coffee shop we sat in the booth close to the glass wall so we can look at the rain we just got hot chocolate and muffins we spent about two hours there talking then he took me home he parked in front of the house and pushed his chair back

Bradley: "can I pick you up"

Me: "what?" He lifted me putting me on top of me "ooh"

Bradley: "yeah" we kissed harder it felt so amazing I pressed down on him moving a little I couldn't even remember the last time I felt this way call me names but I was horny as fuck the fabric of our jeans felt so thick he let out a muffled moan I pulled back

Bradley: "so much from a tiny person"

Me: "so much what"

Bradley: "fire"

Me: "you know what they say about small packages" we shared a chuckle

Bradley: "you make it so easy"

Me: "make what easy"

Bradley: "I'll tell you some other day"

Me: "ok I gotta go" we kissed shortly then I got out the car it wasn't raining anymore so did he. He opened the back door and took out a box of fresh roses giving it to me

Me: "thank you they're gorgeous"

Bradley: "so are you" he gave me a soft peck

Me: "I'll see you"

Bradley: "soon" he kissed my forehead I went in

.

Days turned into weeks, weeks turned into months eventually it was a year. My big boy who refused to be called a boy but rather a man was 4 and going to daycare he was such a smart boy call me bias but he was the smartest little man I have ever met. I was doing my postgrad unfortunately Claire's party lifestyle cost her she failed her final year both semesters dad was furious when our results came out while I graduated with Dean's recognition she couldn't even get into an exam for two of her majors, Mayowo blamed Justin and I for not looking after her princess as if we were going to force her to focus on her books. Bradley was just the best thing right after chocolate covered strawberries we were good officially together even though it took me 8 months to tell him I love him while it took him a month I had met his parents and two little sister who are twins which was kinda putting pressure on me to introduce him to dad even though he hadn't come out and said it he did throw hints that it hurts him when I disappear if my dad is in town.

It was the night before my graduation day, Masisi and Ray were in town unfortunately or I should say fortunately Mayowo couldn't come she said there's a charity dinner that she can't get out of like yeah that's the case. We were going for dinner I was a nervous wreck I was waiting Bradley in my room waiting for his call when Masisi came in my little angel had grown so much she was absolutely beautiful even gained weight her ass was bigger she was also tall

Masisi: "why you locked yourself here Yammy"

Me: "I'm just thinking"

Masisi: "Bradley?"

Me: "yep" she chuckled

Masisi: "dad won't kill him"

Me: "you don't know that"

Masisi: "yeah well he is already here they in the lounge talking" I jumped off the bed ran out indeed he was already here talking to dad and Justin, Justin and Bradley got along I gathered myself and walked slowly to them

Me: "hi" he smiled and stood up gave me a hug then kissed my cheek

Bradley: "hey love" I swallowed saliva and stared at dad who kept a straight face

Dad: "call your sisters Lani so we can go before we lose our reservations"

Me: "walk with me dad"

Dad: "Lani" I nodded and went to call them we left I drove with Bradley and Claire and Masisi. The dinner went surprisingly well dad was cool he just didn't like that Bradley was from another country because he wanted us to go back home after school.

.

Dad woke me up with breakfast in bed I sat up he sat down

Me: "thank you"

Dad: "I'm so proud of you angel you an amazing young woman the strongest person I have ever met even I your own father I don't have your strength. You have been through so much but through it all you came out stronger than before you an amazing mother to Avery just like you've been to Sne. I'm really proud of you Lani no father could ever ask for a better daughter"

Me: "thank you daddy" he smiled and kissed my forehead

Dad: "now eat up before we get late for your graduation ceremony"

Me: "can't believe I'm graduating!!"

Dad: "better believe it angel and daddy couldn't be any prouder"

Me: "I'm happy I made you proud dad"

Dad: "be happy you made yourself proud my angel you earned that honors degree"

Me: "I am proud of myself"

Dad: "good"

Justin: "you made us all proud" he was standing by door

Me: "I'm glad now please check on Claire she said she needs to make final touches on my dress"

Justin: "you trust her with it" I giggled but dad wore his worried masks

Me: "Claire is amazing she just can't put her focus on notes but her designs are pure art"

Justin: "if you say so" they walked out I finished eating went to bath when I got out Claire was sitting on my bed

Claire: "don't panic" I panicked "I know we spoke about a dress but believe me this is so much better"
I breathed out

Me: "I trust you and I know you won't disappoint me or ruin my day" she smiled

Claire: "thank you" she walked out I lotioned blow dried my weave I had Malaysian 24 inch curls Claire walked in I just smiled clapping excitedly she helped me get dressed it was a beautiful skin tight ankle grazer Nigerian print jumpsuit with no straps she tapped my boobs so my cleavage was on point it had an open back which put some emphasis on my not so big ass

Claire: "damn I'm good"

Me: "I guess that means I look beautiful"

Claire: "you think?!" We laughed Phiwo walked in I almost cried he was wearing a slim fit suit made of the same material as my jumpsuit

Me: "my boy!!"

Phiwo: "man" I giggled

Me: "my man! come to mommy" he walked to me I picked him up kissing him all over his face as he squirmed wanting me to stop

Phiwo: "you look beautiful mommy"

Me: "and you look handsome my man" he held my face and gave me a soft peck

Phiwo: "now put me down" I did he walked out with so much swag he totally was Nzuzo's son no doubt about it I wore my shoes went out my room everyone was already we took loads of pictures I was so happy we left for the school hall found Bradley already there waiting for us.

When my name was called I felt as if everything was worth it, when I held my honors degree in my hand I knew my mother's hurtful words were nothing but words my stepdad's abuse was a thing of the past what those two people did to me made me stronger than ever, my little sister's warm hug and my son's warm hug made me realize that leaving SA was the best decision I have ever made I put the guilt of leaving Nzuzo behind and I was at my proudest moment right after giving birth to my son. I had my qualification something no one could ever take away from me.

I walked out of the hall when the ceremony was over practically threw myself at Bradley he lifted me up spinning me around

Bradley: "I'm so proud of you baby"

Me: "thank you love" He put me down then cupped my face we kissed deeply for the longest time until dad cleared his throat we pulled apart Masisi was covering Phiwo's face while laughing

Bradley: "I love you so much"

Me: "so do I"

Bradley: "no like I love you Yamkelani" I just kissed him

Me: "I love you Bradley Cooper I love you with all that I am"

Bradley: "God I want to marry you"

PART 20

I stared at Bradley with my eyes popping out

Dad: "okay Bradley calm down no one is marrying anyone here"

Masisi; "why not daddy"

Dad: "don't question me Sne"

Ray: "why not daddy"

Claire: "yeah why not daddy" they all looked at dad and laughed he just walked away going to the car

Justin: "you guys are going to give dad a heart attack" we just followed after him I rode with Bradley I we all went for lunch and at night we took dad and the kids to the airport then I went to Bradley's house

Me: "baby!!" I had my own key

Bradley: "dining" I locked the door went further in the lights were dimmed all over the first floor I found him standing in the dinning area with a romantic dinner for two set up he had a rose in his hand soft music was playing in the background

Me: "baby?" He walked to me looking so gorgeous

Bradley: "you look beautiful"

Me: "I haven't changed you saw me earlier"

Bradley: "baby don't kill my vibe" I giggled shyly

Me: "sorry" he took my hand kissing it then pulled me over he made me sit down and pushed my chair in

Me: "thank you"

Bradley: "you welcome" he kissed my cheek and went to sit down, the waitress came out poured champagne for us non alcoholic for me ofcos "toast to the most beautiful and smart, loving and caring woman ever. Congratulations babe you worked hard and you've earned it" we clicked our glasses

Me: "thank you babe" the starters were brought out.

After dinner he took my hand we slow danced he was holding my waist firmly I had my feet on his feet after the song finished he swept me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he walked us up to his room. He put me on the bed took off my jumpsuit

Bradley: "tape?" I just smiled nodding he chuckled and gently pulled it off

Me: "ouch" he kissed my breasts

Bradley: "sorry" I cupped his face we kissed slowly passionately he rolled us over I unbuttoned his shirt taking it off I moved back started kissing him from the jawline down his chest playing with his nipple I went further down leaving a trail of soft kisses, i unbuckled his belt then took off his jeans he was just left with his white boyleg while I was left with my red lace thong he rolled us over again I opened my legs widely he tore my thong off then went down on me my eyes rolled back I held onto the comforter calling out his name The rest is history

Bradley; "I love you" I giggled

Me: "I know" he pulled me even closer

Bradley: "I'm so glad you know but I would like to hear it back every once in a while you know" I laughed kissing his chest

Me: "getting a little fragile there mr Cooper"

Bradley: "just a little ms Demus"

Me: "I love you Bradley you know I love you"

Bradley: "I'm glad, now sleep babe you have an early morning"

Me: "don't remind me God I wish I was just all done I was working"

Bradley: "would you move back to SA given the opportunity" I don't wana lie that question took me back a little I wasn't expecting it

Me: "I... Uhm..."

Bradley: "you would"

Me: "no I wouldn't my life is with my family now"

Bradley: "and I can be your family"

Me: "yes you can"

Bradley: "like you would marry me bare me beautiful mixed babies"

Me: "if I'm ready at that time yes but you would have to accept Avery"

Bradley: "excuse me I love that little man like he is my own"

Me: "I know you do"

Bradley: "good" I got on top of him he smiled and held my butt

Me: "my white man"

Bradley: "hhu is that all that I am to you just a white man"

Me: "a white man who has my heart"

Bradley: "who is really hard right now since he has a hot little tight pussy pressed directly on his cock"

Me: "I can feel that"

Bradley: "so how about you help a brother out"

Me: "a brother?"

Bradley: "don't be that racist person in the room" I fell on him while laughing

.

Days turned into weeks and weeks turned into months and months turned into years eventually it was 4 years later I had written my board exam I even had my phd dad cried like legit tears when I was

getting my phd even Justin didn't have his he never bothered. So when I got mine he couldn't believe it he just broke into fits of tears when I was graduating. My boy was 8 and in grade 3 so so grown he was the man of the house and he made sure it was known. Claire graduated and moved to Italy with her husband yep she got married last year to Robert Torres a son of a wealthy businessman Rob had come to handle some business his father was doing with dad one thing led to another they fell in love 8 months later got married. Masisi was in grade 12 and dating it was driving dad crazy this one time dad called me he was sick with worry it was at night Masisi wasn't back at home she had went to the mall with her friends I called her she didn't answer she only went home after midnight, I spoke with her Masisi worried me she was too quick to forget about where we come from dad's money had her confused the only thing I could do was get her a gyne so I did that then put her on an injection.

.

I woke up when my alarm rang I switched it off went to check on Phiwo the help was already bathing him it was just him and I now with the helper ofcos so I went to bath got out went to make breakfast when I was done I went to get dressed in a black pencil skirt an olive green shirt tuck in with black peep toe heels I let my weave lose I was packing my bag when Phiwo knocked

Me: "yes bae"

Phiwo: "come let's eat before we run late"

Me: "I'm coming" he stood on the chair

Phiwo: "come" I smiled and walked to him he pushed my weave from my face and fixed my shirt "you look beautiful bae"

Me: "thank you and you look handsome as always" he kissed my cheek and jumped off the chair

Phiwo: "now come let's eat" I took my bag we walked out I left my bag on the counter we started eating "I have soccer practice today bae you coming?"

Me: "Justin said he will come I have a late meeting Avery"

Phiwo: "cool"

Me: "I won't miss your game tomorrow though I promise"

Phiwo: "I know you won't"

Me: "good" We finished breakfast got our bags and left I went to drop him off at school

Phiwo: "love you bae"

Me: "love you too bae and kill them in practice" I kissed his forehead he got off the car Christina the helper picks him up and I drop him off everyday unless I have an early meeting. I went to the office I was cfo in my father's company the day went on smoothly as usual I had lunch with Justin he was the ceo.

It was towards the end of the day when I got an email I was expecting from a recruitment agency offering me a cfo position at St Augustin hospital in SA Durban I couldn't even believe it honestly speaking SA wasn't even a place I thought of yeah sure at times I missed Nzuzo when I looked at Phiwo, I just stood up ran to the bathroom to throw up I vomited until nothing was coming out I had been vomiting a lot these past days. I called my p.a to just cancel my last meeting packed my bag and left I ran into Justin in the lift

Justin: "I thought your last meeting was here in the office"

Me: "I don't feel well"

Justin: "you've been sick for awhile now and that's it I'm taking you to the doctor"

Me: "I'm fine Justin stop being my dad besides Avery is waiting for you at soccer practice" he chuckled and pulled me to him wrapping his arm around my neck

Justin: "I am your dad"

Me: "you got Avery this weekend"

Justin: "yep but you coming to the game tomorrow"

Me: "yes I'll meet you two there bye"

Justin: "tell Bradley I said he needs to take you to the doctor"

Me: "yes daddy" he opened my door I got in he kissed my cheek then closed the door I drove off going to Bradley's house. When I got there he wasn't back from work I went to take a quick hot shower got out wore his t-shirt I made myself a peanut butter and banana sandwich I was still eating when my p.a called I had to check my email I did but there was a link that wouldn't open on my iPad so I went to Bradley's layer the place was filled with high tech things Bradley was like a spy he was the computer geek, finally the link opened but I needed a notepad to write down some numbers so I looked for it through the drawers I found a file with my name and I took it. There was everything I mean everything about my life in it from mom to my stepdad to Nzuzo the abuse my notes from my psychologist even Avery's birth certificate that Nzuzo's name. I couldn't believe it things I have never told him I had never opened up about my abuse to him I felt so betrayed he got in just as I sank on the floor he took one look at my face and came to kneel next to me panicking

Bradley: "baby i ... I'm so sorry"

Me: "why? How?"

Bradley: "I needed to know I'm sorry I wanted to propose and I had to know everything you wouldn't open up to me"

Me: "this is invasion of my privacy"

Bradley: "I know love and I am so sorry"

Me: "you could have asked me"

Bradley: "I've been asking you Lani but you won't tell me how was I supposed to commit my life to you when I don't know half of your life"

Me: "I was going to tell you!!! I would have told you when I was ready to" he put his hand in his pocket and pulled a ring box

Bradley: "I wanted to do this properly you know with the whole romantic setting but I'll do it now I love you Yamkelani I need you baby so bad my life is incomplete without you, you my life I love you and your past made you what you are"

Me: "don't do this I'm still mad at you"

Bradley: "I love you and will you please marry me?" I felt my sandwich coming up my throat I threw up all over him and his ring

PART 21

Bradley: "wow not what I imagined would happen when I prepose"

Me: " I'm sorry I've been under the water a little" he took of his t-shirt

Bradley: "so are you marrying me" he looked so anxious

Me: "can I sleep on it please" he looked at me all hurt and in disbelief then sat down

Bradley: "it been 5 years Yamkelani if you knew that you wanted to marry me you wouldn't need to sleep on it"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Bradley: "it's okay you don't want to marry me"

Me: "I do want to marry you I'm just saying not now"

Bradley; "when then?!! Hhu how much more time do I have to waste waiting for you?!!!!"

Me: "don't fuckn yell at me" if there's one thing I can't handle is being yelled at my head just goes back to stepdad and mom

Bradley: "no give me a bloody time frame Yamkelani I'm fucking tired of waiting around for you"

Me: "then leave"

Bradley; "you in my house!!!"

Me: "fine" I stood up went out grabbing my things from his room I drove to my house in tears . When I got there it was dark nobody was home I just went to my room and cried myself to sleep.

I woke up awhile later my head was pounding I got some aspirin went to sit in front of the tv I called Justin to talk to Phiwo but he was already asleep. As I was watching tv I started feeling really guilty for what went down in Bradley's house Bradley is amazing and he loves me, he loves my son like phiwo is his own it was around 02:45 I stood up put on my pjs I left driving to his house. I parked outside the garage there was a car I didn't know there I got off my car and went in I was welcomed by alcohol bottles in the lounge this is one thing I hated about Bradley when he was hurt or angry he thought alcohol can solve everything I just huffed went upstairs when I got in his room the smell of alcohol caught me hard I threw up same time the lights got switched on

Bradley: "shit baby are you okay" he came to me and held up my weave until I was done throwing up

Me: "I'm sorry I'll marry you baby I love you and I can't wait to be mrs Cooper"

Bradley: "uhm.." I looked at him he kept his head down "i am so sorry baby"

Me: "Bradley" he sat down I looked at him confused "Brad" I looked at where the voice came from I don't know how I missed it there was a blonde naked girl on the bed

Me: "oh my God" I covered my mouth with my hand

Bradley: "Lani I'm sorry" I ran out but he ran after me when I was by the staircase he grabbed my head but I shoved him only to miss a step I rolled down on the stairs I hit the floor hard with my stomach and cried out

Me: "Nzuzoooo" it was lights out

.

4 days later Justin picked me up from the hospital I had lost my baby, a baby I didn't even know I had in my womb but I lost him/her because his/her father was so selfish that he couldn't handle a little rejection. We got home he put me on the couch Phiwo ran to my room got me to pillows putting one behind me and another under my feet

Phiwo: "you need anything bae"

Me: "no I'm fine" Justin gave me phone Bradley was calling I hadn't spoken to him since that night when I woke up in hospital he cried and begged for forgiveness but I chased him out told the nurses I don't want him in my room and I haven't seen him since then, the nurses told me he came and stayed outside my room all day and night only leaving to bath or eat.

Justin: "I can't believe this idiot is still calling"

Me: "Justin don't"

Justin: "I just can't believe that douchbag did this to you"

Phiwo: "we should beat him up"

Justin: "yes"

Me: "no one beating anyone up and Justin bru come on don't talk about this in front of the kid"

Phiwo: "I'm not a kid I'm a man mom your man it my job to protect you"

Justin: "yes"

Me: "can I get a cup of green tea please with lemon"

Phiwo: "I'll do it" he left

Me: "Justin stop talking about this with Avery around you going to make him hate Bradley"

Justin: "don't tell me you thinking of going back to him Lani"

Me: "I don't know Justin I love him we've been together for such a long time and he asked me to marry him"

Justin: "he fucked someone the very same day"

Me: "he made a mistake"

Justin: "that cost you your child"

Me: "stop please I was there"

Justin: "I'm sorry" phiwo came back with my tea

Phiwo: "can we get some pizza and fried chicken I'm hungry"

Justin: " I'll call and order in" he went to the kitchen Phiwo came and sat next to putting his head on my shoulder

Phiwo: "bae"

Me: "yes"

Phiwo: "who is uhm zuzo" I chuckled

Me: "who"

Phiwo: "I can't pronounce it mom"

Me: "Nzuzo"

Phiwo: "yes, Justin and Bradley were arguing about him at the hospital Bradley says you were calling out for that person instead of him"

Me: "oh I don't know bae I was in a lot of pain" he nodded

Phiwo: "I'm sorry you in pain mommy"

Me: "I'll be fine I promise"

At night I had called Bradley over even though Justin didn't approve so when he came we went to my room as soon as we got in he locked the door went straight to his knees

Bradley: "I am so sorry Lani no amount of sorries could right this wrong I did you so wrong baby I don't even know how to fix this Lani I am so sorry please don't hate me"

Me: "I don't hate you"

Bradley: "I'm sorry Yamkelani you have to forgive me"

Me: "I forgive you"

Bradley: "ooh baby I'm sorry"

Me: "it's ok come to bed" he looked at me all shocked before standing up we got under the covers held me "I'm not marrying you"

Bradley: "right now I understand" I nodded "I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

.

Weeks went by Bradley and I were not so good he kept on saying I'm still in love with Nzuzo that's why I won't marry him it didn't help that Justin hit him this one time when he barged in screaming in my house because I wasn't answering his calls. On the other side the recruiter from durban didn't stop trying to recruit me. This one day I got called in at phiwo's school because he got in a fight with some boys who were teasing him over not having a father I cried myself to sleep that night. A week after that I accepted the durban offer dad and Justin were not happy at all my father didn't want anything to do with durban he thought I might run into my mother while Justin didn't want to be alone in London. I had to wait for Phiwo to finish his semester then he could start grade 4 in durban I guess the move was a deal breaker for Bradley because he broke up with me when I told him about it. When it was the 23rd of December we packed up it was goodbye London Phiwo was really not pleased his

whole life was in London and he felt like I was being selfish taking away everything that he loves from him. We spent Christmas and New Year's Eve at home in Nigeria, in January Justin went to Durban with us to help with the move dad had bought us a house in La Lucia calling it a graduation present it was a beautiful double story 5 en-suited bedrooms, kitchen, lounge, dining area, pool, tv room. When we were settled Justin left, Masisi passed her grade 12 she was going to study Law in London she was going to stay with Justin.

After Phiwo's first day of school I wanted to go celebrate it I was only going to start work in February. So after school I picked him up from school he ran to me at the drop off spot I tried lifting him up but he moved

Phiwo: "bae not in public" I giggled

Me: "a kiss at least"

Phiwo: "cheek only" I nodded and kissed his cheek we got in car

Me: "seatbelt bae" we did our seatbelt I drove off "so how was your day"

Phiwo: "everyone was acting like they've never seen a new person before I was getting irritated but my teacher told me it because of my accent. I didn't know we have an accent mom"

Me: "oh yeah you do I don't"

Phiwo: "but you sound like me"

Me: "not really"

Phiwo: "yeah well school was cool"

Me: "you made friends"

Phiwo: "yeah I don't want to be a loner"

Me: "see moving wasn't a bad move"

Phiwo: "still don't like you for making us move I will miss Justin and my soccer team"

Me: "there's a soccer team at your school bae why don't you sign up"

Phiwo: "I'll see"

Me: "okay" we got to gateways watched a movie then went to have early dinner at Circus Circus

Phiwo: "it's so hot here like it been hot since we came here"

Me: "it a beautiful sunny place bae embrace it"

Phiwo: "I miss home I really miss home I even miss Bradley"

Me: "I know but this is home now"

Phiwo: "I'm not being difficult I'm keeping an open mind"

Me: "I'm glad"

Phiwo: "I need to piss"

Me: "are you full"

Phiwo: "yes" I called a waitress over for the bill and to pack our food we waited a bit I paid we left started at the toilets I waited outside while he got in "Yamkelani" I looked up I couldn't believe it there he was looking more beautiful than ever I was still staring at him with my jaw hanging when two cute little girls about 3 years old in the same outfit ran to him screaming daddy he lifted them up a lady also came out of the female toilets she was pretty

Her: "baby we done we can go"

Nzuzo: "uhm yeah" I just turned looked the other way as tears ran down my cheeks the voices faded as well as the footsteps the girls were chatting away

PART 22

Phiwo: "bae I'm done" I quickly wiped my tears and turned to look at him

Me: "ok let's go" he took my hand and carried the take aways with the other hand we walked to the car we got in I drove off going home. We took our baths got in our pjs then went to watch tv

Phiwo: "you look sad"

Me: "I'm not sad Avery just a little tired"

Phiwo: "I don't like it when you sad mom, you were never sad when you were with Bradley"

Me: "I'm not sad Avery I promise you"

Phiwo: "I'm going to sleep with you tonight"

Me: "thank you" he moved from where he was sitting came to sit next to me I moved back he laid in front of me I wrapped my arms around him

Me: "remember how I told you I left your daddy behind when I moved to grandpa's house and that he doesn't know about you"

Phiwo: "yes, why?"

Me: "I think I will look for him, is that okay with you?"

Phiwo: "what if he doesn't want us?"

Me: "your father is great person Avery, remember how I always tell you that he was my hero that he saved me and Sne from the bad people and he took care of us"

Phiwo: "he treated you like a queen" I giggled through my tears

Me: "yes your father is an amazing man and you are also amazing he is going to love you"

Phiwo: "how are you going to find him"

Me: "I don't know it will take sometime but he deserves to know about you and I'm sure you want him in your life"

Phiwo: "okay if you think it good to find him yes look for him. But what if he has another family"

Me: "then it okay because even if he has another family that means you have sisters or brothers"

Phiwo: "I would like to have little sisters and maybe a big brother"

Me: "okay" I kissed his head he stirred a little

Phiwo: "I love you mommy"

Me: "I love you too Avery" I kissed his head again we continued watching the chipmunks

.

Days went by my life was basically all about Avery take him to school, pick him up. Until it was the 1st of February it was my first day at work I had to impress yeah sure I was over qualified but experience wise I had only worked at my father's company. I woke up went to wake Avery up we didn't have a helper so it was hands on deck for the both of us I went to shower while he took a bath I got out got dressed in a white pencil skirt with a gold zip between my thighs, a white tank top tucked in, a caramel sleeveless coat and caramel stilletoers I brushed my weave I had 30 inch black Brazilian I got my bags went to check on Avery

Me: "you done Avery?"

Phiwo: "yes" he finished tying his shoes "let's go" he took his bag we went downstairs he made us cereal while I made his lunch then we sat down ate after eating we left starting at his school

Me: "I love you"

Phiwo: "love you too mommy" he kissed my cheek and got off the car I watched him going in then drove off I went straight to my office I already knew it I was shown around when I came to sign my contract 30 minutes after I got in I was just going through hospital policies when the Hr lady Meredith came in with a young man

Meredith: "Dr Demus good morning"

Me: "good morning"

Meredith: "how you finding everything" I chuckled

Me: "just okay"

Meredith: "I got you your p.a this is Sthembiso Duma" I cringed

Sthe: "Dr Demus it's a pleasure"

Me: "same here but just call me Yamkelani"

Meredith: "well I'll leave you two to it" she left

Sthe: "well besides the meet and greet that's happening in 20 minutes in the conference room your day is free"

Me: "okay" he smiled

Sthe: "I'll be out front"

Me: "where you from Sthembiso"

Sthe: "Mlazi kwaF" I breathed out

Me: "okay" he walked out I took my phone and called dad

Dad: "Lani"

Me: "maybe you were right dad coming to durban was a mistake"

Dad: "what happened" he was already panicking

Me: "my p.a dad his a Duma dad at the mention of the surname my mind automatically went there"

Dad: "Lani I told you this will happen you know what just resign and come home"

Me: "I shouldn't have called"

Dad: "don't go crazy on me unless you want me to come get you"

Me: "no I'm saying I can handle it I panicked a little"

Dad: "just come home"

Me: "I saw Avery's dad" he didn't say anything "daddy" he sighed

Dad: "are you going to introduce them"

Me: "it's the right thing to do"

Dad: "yes it is"

Me: "okay I have to go there's a meet and greet that I have to go to"

Dad: "ok make daddy proud I love you angel"

Me: "I love you too" I dropped the call. I went to the bathroom fixed my lipstick and hair then Sthe and I went to the conference room it was already filled with chiefs of staffs and attendings I met a few people I could smell him but I didn't want to turn I could even feel his eyes on me a part of me thought I was being paranoid I mean what are the chances of him working in this hospital when durban is filled with hospitals I went around the room being introduced to people some even trying to pitch me on some research they wanted to do that needed money, the chief of surgery Steven that I was talking to waved someone over

Steven: "this is the best attending i have in my staff" I kept my eyes down my breathing picked up "Khumalo this is our new cfo Dr Demus"

Nzuzo: "nice to meet you mrs Demus" I looked up at him he looked so breathtakingly gorgeous in his scrubs and lab coat

Me: "it's miss" he shook my hand

Nzuzo: "Steven I have to be in surgery so I can't stay"

Steven: "if you serious about wanting your project to pick up you better play nice to Dr Demus"

Nzuzo: "I'm not a kiss ass Steven you know that" Steven waved him off he looked at me "nice meeting you dr Demus" then he left just like that I was so confused like why was he acting like an ass

Steven: "forgive him, he is not always like this"

Me: "I get it"

Steven: "so you not a mrs? A beautiful successful young woman like yourself" I giggled

Me: "yeah but I'm in a committed relationship with my man Avery"

Steven: "lucky man"

Me: "I'm the lucky one his very loving" he pressed his thin lips together nodding

Steven: "you in love" I giggled

Me: "let me go back to my office"

Steven: "this is your thing"

Me: "I appreciate it but I got work I need to get to"

Steven: "let me walk you" I nodded he walked to my office we ran into Nzuzo he just looked at me showing no emotions I just sighed I don't want to lie my heart was braking

Steven: "you and Khumalo got history Well that's stupid of me to ask you from London" I just gave him a fake smile when we got to my office I thanked him and went in closing it I shut the blinds and just cried.

.

3 weeks went by I hadn't seen Nzuzo since that day and it was actually good I preferred not seeing him then seeing those cold looks he gave me. I was just in my office skyping with Ray when someone knocked I screamed come in I caught his scent before he opened his mouth I said my goodbyes to Ray and looked up

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "why?" I got off the chair went to lean on the desk in front of it "I just want to know why Yamkelani"

Me: "I don't understand"

Nzuzo: "you left!!!!"

Me: "don't yell" he paced up and down speaking to himself I shut the blinds

Nzuzo: "no call no text no warning nothing you just left Yamkelani"

Me: "I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "you sorry?" He chuckled but tears were already flowing out of his eyes "you sorry? That's it you sorry"

Me: "I inboxed you Nzuzo on facebook I sent you countless texts I texted you everyday"

Nzuzo: "I haven't been on facebook since my first year at varsity" I looked down

Me: "I thought you were just ignoring me"

Nzuzo: "for what good reason would I ignore you? You left me Yamkelani you packed your bags and left without even sending a simple text! You just left with some Nigerian guy I had to beat myself up the only comfort I found was that maybe the guy is your father"

Me: "he was I mean is my father. Everything just happened fast I forgot my phone behind I tried Nzuzo I promise you I tried but you had just changed your number and my phone kept on going on voicemail.

When I found you on facebook I cried and thanked my lucky stars but you wouldn't answer you never did" I let out a choked sob when he wrapped his arms around me I just cried harder "I kept on thinking you will reply I texted you everyday for a year but you never replied"

Nzuzo; "you hurt me so bad Yammy I had never been that hurt and disappointed" I moved from his chest and looked up at him he wiped my tears "you tore me apart Yammy I sent Thandi to come check why I can't get hold of you she told me you left with some foreigner I have never went that crazy I got on a taxi same time and came home"

Me: "I'm so sorry Nzuzo you know how much I love you Nzuzo I would never hurt you intentionally"

Nzuzo: "you did hurt me Yamkelani as soon as your rich Range Rover driving father came you left me behind" my knees went weak and I sank to the floor

Me: "is that how low you think of me" I cried out "you think I left because my father is rich?! You know me Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I knew you" I covered my face with my hands and cried "this you this Dr Demus that everyone is kissing her ass i don't know this person who wears weaves and drives a Range Rover evoke I don't know this person" my alarm rang I stood up wiped my tears switched it off I took my hand bag "we still talking Yamkelani"

Me: "no we not you are making me cry and I have to go pick up my son from school"

Nzuzo: "you have a son?"

Me: "yes so please leave my office so I can lock up"

Nzuzo: "where is his father?"

Me: "dead now please step out"

Nzuzo: "so you moved on"

Me: "so did you" he wiped his tears and walked out

PART 23

I was about to step out when he got in again

Nzuzo: "no you don't get to do this Yamkelani"

Me: "to go get my son from school? Nzuzo Avery will worry if I'm late"

Nzuzo: "that's a beautiful name, you don't get to come here and turn my life upside down or make me feel guilty over moving on"

Me: "don't feel guilty I'm the stupid one who thought you would wait for me" I chuckled "you know I knew you dated I mean you are Nzuzo Khumalo you always were a player so dating and sleeping around was expected but the kids? I don't even know"

Nzuzo: "stop doing that Yamkelani you also moved on you have a child who is older than my girls by the way"

Me: "he is turning 9 in October"

Nzuzo: "you moved on so quickly!!! God I was still crying over you"

Me: "for a neurosurgeon you really stupid" I got out told Sthe to lock my office I walked to my parking space got in my car and drove off in a speed when I got to Avery's school he was already waiting for me I could tell by his walk that he was not impressed at all his head hanged low and his hands were in his pocket he opened the backseat threw his bag in then came to the front

Me: "hey bae"

Avery: "hi" I sighed and drove off

Me: "I'm sorry I'm a little late"

Avery: "can you get me into an all boys school like the school back at home"

Me: "what's wrong with that school"

Avery: "I don't like it"

Me: "why?"

Avery: "I just don't okay!"

Me: "we don't scream under no circumstances we do not scream Avery"

Avery: "I'm sorry mom"

Me: "what's wrong with that school"

Avery: "I just prefer an all boys school"

Me: "well I'll see what I can do"

Avery: "thank you and why were you late"

Me: "work stuff I'm sorry"

Avery: "make it up to me" I giggled

Me: "happy meal?"

Avery: "yep"

Me: "you so going to get fat" he laughed

Avery: "apparently girls at school like that"

Me: "you want to change school because of a girl Avery Phiwokuhle do you like a girl"

Avery: "I'll skype Justin"

Me: "but I'm here"

Avery: "no" I parked and we got off

Me: "why not"

Avery: "just no mom please"

Me: "I'm so hurt"

Avery: "don't manipulate me" we started at the cafeteria got him some food then walked to my office

Me: "I'm not manipulating you Avery I'm just hurt"

Avery: "I'm sorry but I'm still not telling" I chuckled

Me: "fine" I opened the door but it wasn't locked Avery got in first

Avery: "mom?" I got in Nzuzo was still there with his eyes red and puffy

Me: "go eat your lunch in Sthe's office Avery"

Avery: "why?"

Me: "because I have some work I need to get to"

Avery: "Okay" he stood on his toes I bent he kissed my cheek then left closing the door behind him

Me: "I said leave"

Nzuzo: "he looks just like me"

Me: "his your son what do you expect" he flopped on the couch

Nzuzo: "we have a son Yamkelani not just a baby but a grown young man"

Me: "yep"

Nzuzo: "and you had to raise him by yourself because I thought I was too cool for facebook"

Me: "don't blame yourself I'm the one who messed up by forgetting my phone"

Nzuzo: "I should have tried harder to find you I shouldn't have just given up" I sat next to him

Me: "don't blame yourself"

Nzuzo: "I can't believe we have a son Yammy and he is like a younger me my young identical twin"

Me: "he is so much like you Nzuzo his caring and protective he adores me"

Nzuzo: "does he know about me"

Me: "he knows off you but he is smart so he must have figured it out when he saw you, you two look alike"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry you had to raise him by yourself"

Me: "I had my family especially my big brother Justin he is like a father to him" he looked at me

Nzuzo: "you amazing"

Me: "I've missed you everyday"

Nzuzo: "Yammy" I looked away he held my chin making me look at him "I've also been missing you everyday" just as I was about to say something his lips brushed mine then we kissed it brought back everything every previous touch every previous feeling every previous moment we've shared I moved back until I was laying on the couch he got between my legs we kissed harder he pulled my shirt out of my pants I pushed off his coat pulled off his top he had definitely built more muscles he popped my breasts out of my bra and began sucking on them I let out a moan put my hand under his pants he pulled back I looked at him confused

Nzuzo: "we can't" I felt my heart breaking I wished the earth would open into half and swallow me up
"I mean our son is right outside" I looked at him smiling

Me: "our son" he nodded

Nzuzo: "can't believe we have a son Yamkelani" he gave me a short deep kiss leaving me breathless

Me: "I trust you Nzuzo but before you meet him Nzuzo I need to know that you will commit to this
you will be there for him always no matter what, that you won't be a part time father to him"

Nzuzo: "ofcos I will Yamkelani you know I will"

Me: "you want to meet him"

Nzuzo: "yeah uhm what if he doesn't like me"

Me: "you his father he will worship you" he nodded we fixed ourselves up I called Sthe told to tell
Avery to come to my office after awhile the door opened Avery got in

Avery: "bae"

Me: "I got someone who wants to meet you" he looked at Nzuzo

Avery: "the hero"

Me: "yep"

Avery: "he looks like me"

Me: "his your father"

Avery: "is he breathing?" I looked at Nzuzo he looked like he was about to collapse

Me: "Nzuzo"

Avery: "he is the zuzo that Justin and Bradley were arguing about"

Me: "it Nzuzo and don't talk about that"

Avery: "hi, I'm Avery Phiwokuhle Demus" Nzuzo looked away from him he wiped his tears then turned
lifted me up squeezing him hard "ok let go I'm too old"

Nzuzo: "you never too old son" he put him down "you gave him my name"

Me: "his your son"

Avery: "you also Avery"

Nzuzo: "Phiwokuhle"

Avery: "nice! We basically twins" Nzuzo chuckled his pager went off

Nzuzo: "shuck I have to scrub in for a surgery, I'm so so sorry give me your number" I took his phone
his home screen was his twins I saved my number he kneeled next to Avery gave him a hug "I'm so
glad you in my life Avery I'm so happy and I love you so much I'm really sorry I have to go but I'll call
your mom we'll talk"

Avery: "it's okay"

Nzuzo: "actually come watch me operate I'm taking out this huge tumor in someone's brain"

Avery: "oh yeah! That sounds so cool"

Me: "nope you not going in an operation room"

Nzuzo: "he can watch from the gallery"

Avery: "mommy please"

Me: "no take your books sit down and start on your homework" he took his bag went to sit down started on his homework sulking Nzuzo was looking at him with a frown "muyekele lona yathanda ukutetema" Nzuzo chuckled

Nzuzo: "akakuzwa?"

Me: "nope"

Nzuzo: "funa kuk'qabula" I giggled shaking my head "I'll call you" he winked and walked out

Me: "what do you think about your father"

Avery: "I just met him mom let me spend more time with him"

Me: "he is amazing you will love him"

Avery: "do you love him"

Me: "yes always has and always will"

.

Few days went by Nzuzo was building a relationship with his son. He picked him up from school everyday when his schedule wasn't busy he hanged out with him after school it made Avery so happy. So this day it was Saturday they were spending the day together so Nzuzo picked him up after they left I watched a little bit of tv then I started cleaning my house I did the laundry when I was done I took a bath got dressed in a short umbrella skirt and a matching crop top I had lunch in front of the tv. After lunch I cooked dinner then I went to finishing reading my book by patio until late I got in when I heard voices they were back wearing Kaiser chiefs t-shirt

Avery: "we watched a soccer game mom it was amazing mom"

Me: "I take it you had a good day with your dad"

Avery: "you have no idea mom, I need to piss" he went up screaming

Me: "thank you" he held my waist

Nzuzo: "for what?"

Me: "taking him for the game you made him happy and when he is happy I'm happy"

Nzuzo: "his my son it my job to make him happy and if you two are happy I am" we stared at each for a long time, it was still there the love that we shared was still there and burning he just wouldn't make his move and I wasn't about to put myself out there for rejection

Me: "let go"

Nzuzo: "mmh" he let go of me

Me: "are you staying for dinner" he was about to say yes when Avery screamed coming down the stairs

Avery: "please stay dad"

Nzuzo: "uhm yeah I'm staying"

Avery: "yeah! I'll set up the table"

Me: "be careful with the knives" he nodded and went to set up I went around the house locking the windows we had dinner while listening to Avery go on and on about the game and meeting players. After dinner we watched a movie Avery was about to rent another movie I grabbed the remote from him

Me: "bath and bed"

Avery: "come on mom one more movie please it not even s school night"

Me: "no go bath and go to bed, when I say bed Avery I mean sleep not video games"

Avery: "yes bae I heard you, tuck me in dad?"

Nzuzo: "yeah" he nodded and went up

Me: "you can go to his room I need to clean up anyway"

Nzuzo: "okay" I cleaned up loaded the dish washer I made myself a cup of hot chocolate went to stand by the door just looking outside I smelt him before he said anything he wrapped his arms around my waist "his asleep"

Me: "he must be tired"

Nzuzo: "you have a beautiful house"

Me: "thank you" he kissed my neck lightly biting it and softly blowing cool air on the bites

Nzuzo: "I've really missed you Yammy" I turned and kissed him he lifted me up I dropped the cup wrapped my legs around him

Me: "I really missed you as well" he started walking upstairs "2nd door on the right" he walked to my room locked the door after we got in he laid me on the bed getting between my legs

Nzuzo: "Yammy?"

Me: "please I need you now tonight and more than forever" he kissed me I pulled off his t-shirt we kicked off our shoes my hands went on a searching spree all over his muscles he took off my crop top he ran his fingers across my chest lightly making me shiver he took my bra off

Nzuzo: "fuckn perfect" I just giggled he sucked on my breast nibbling my nipple while playing with the one I kept letting out small aah he went down leaving bites all over me he took off my skirt along with panty I mentally thanked God that I shaved he ran his thumb over the small scar from the operation when I gave birth

Nzuzo: "you gave birth to my son my beautiful son"

Me: "can we not speak about our son while I'm horny and naked" he chuckled and took off his jeans

Nzuzo: "you horny hhu"

Me: "can't you tell" he swept his tongue through my pussy

Nzuzo: "yep you definitely wet" I felt like crying

Me: "do something!" He pressed his tongue on my clit applying pressure before sucking it then pressed on it again it was driving me crazy "aah baby" he entered his tongue I pushed his head in he grabbed my ass and rolled over making me sit on his face I held on the head board and rode his face my toes curled I threw my head back and pushed down hard as I came I collapsed on my back he got on top of me

Nzuzo: "hey baby" he gave me a soft peck

Me: "hey" he entered me slowly "oooh God" he breathed out

Nzuzo: "it feels like home Yammy" he started moving I met him with every thrust every flex it was pure magic it was as if we never stopped making love our groans and moans filled the room I swear the angels were singing every time he pulled back to slam in his hardness meeting my wetness I felt my heart trying to pound out of my chest he opened my legs wider I could it coming my big O was around everything went dark "I love you Nzuzoooo!!!" I climaxed hard his loud groan brought me back to life he held on my thighs pressing his fingers in and screamed my name he jerked before collapsing on top of me

Nzuzo: "are you okay"

Me: "yes I'm great that was amazing" he got off me and snuggled close to me our legs intertwined

Nzuzo: "yes it was"

Me: "I'm sleepy" he kissed my cheek

Nzuzo: "sleep thembalam" he played with my hair as I drifted off to sleep.

His phone woke me up he jumped off the bed I felt him looking at me but I kept my eyes shut

Nzuzo: "baby" my heart broke he was whispering "no I know I'm sorry" "I'm leaving now work got really busy" "I know Enhle I'm sorry I should have called i just had back to back surgery but I'm on my way home I promise" he dropped the call I heard him getting dressed he kissed my forehead then walked out as soon as the door closed I pulled the pillow near me and I just cried silently

PART 24

I woke up in the morning I took a shower got out I put a sport bra and cotton sport shorts and airmax I took my iPod plugged the headsets I went for a run I needed it. I couldn't believe Nzuzo just pulled that on me out of all people nzuzo left me asleep in bed and rushed to his baby mama. I ran for 30 minutes before changing my lane going back home when I was by the gate I met a group of 3 girls they stopped running when I was close to them I took off my headsets slowing down

Me: "hello"

Girl1: "hey I'm Jessica that is Sarah and that's Noni"

Me: "I'm Yamkelani"

Noni: "I've seen you around running we thought you could join us we can run together I stay in that house" she pointed "with my husband Mandla"

Sarah: "I stay a street down with my parents"

Jessica: "and I'm the independent one of the group my house is right across yours" the other girls giggled but you could tell it was fake

Noni: "she means she's the forever single one"

Jessica: "baby girl I don't need a man"

Sarah: "she has her vibrator" I was just smiling

Noni: "you making things awkward for yamke"

Me: "Lani is just fine"

Jessica: "anyway how about we exchanged deeds we can hang out or run together"

Me: "okay" I gave them my number

Noni: "what does your husband do"

Me: "I'm not married"

Noni: "the two cars on the driveway"

Me: "mine"

Noni: "you stay alone"

Me: "my son"

Noni: "oh it's maintenance money what does his father do"

Me: "it's not maintenance money I work. Actually I need to get going before my son wakes up alone in the house" Jessica laughed

Jessica: "I will definitely call you"

Me: "bye ladies" I walked to my house put in the passcode the gate opened I got in they were still standing there I waved ran up I got in I could hear the tv all the way from the foyer I went to the tv room Avery was watching tv eating coco pops

Me: "morning bae" I kissed his cheek

Avery; "morning mom how you doing"

Me: "I'm cool and you"

Avery: "I'm cool too, dad called the house phone says you not answering your phone I told him you running"

Me: "I'll call him after bathing"

Avery: "okay" I ran upstairs I checked my phone I had 15 missed calls from Nzuzo and 5 texts I just deleted everything I cleaned my room the son of a bitch left his socks I looked everywhere even under the bed for a condom but nothing I screamed out of frustration I ran down

Me: "Avery I'm going to the shop!!" I took the car keys and drove to the nearest pharmacy I bought morning after pills and a bottle of water I took them right there then I drove back home I took a long bubble bath got out put on shorts and tank top I went downstairs Avery still hadn't moved the his spot I changed the tv opening music channel

Avery: "mom come on"

Me: "bath now"

Avery: "I'm still watching"

Me: "no go bath I'll get brunch ready"

Avery: "I don't like you right now" I giggled

Me: "I don't like you too you smell so go bath" he stood on the couch and kissed both my cheeks then my forehead and ended with a soft peck

Avery: "I still love you"

Me: "I know I love you too so go bath"

Avery: "can we have bacon with whatever you making for brunch"

Me: "for you I'll fry a dozen of bacons" he laughed and jumped down

Avery: "just 3 will be fine bae"

Me: "a dozen it is" he laughed going upstairs I raised the volume went in the kitchen I started on making some food for us I was still busy when the house phone rang I picked it up in the kitchen

Me: "hello"

Nzuzo: "Yammy hi" I didn't say anything "Yamkelani are you still there"

Me: "I'm here" he breathed out

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "for what? For fucking me and leaving me while asleep like a common bitch"

Nzuzo: "Yammy baby come on don't speak like that"

Me: "I'm not your baby Nzuzo I'm not your nothing"

Nzuzo: "thembalam please don't be mad I'm sorry I got called in at work"

Me: "fuck you nzuzo I'm not Enhle that you can lie to about work. You fucked me and when your baby mama called you went running home like a whipped little boy so leave me alone and don't call my house unless you want to speak to your son"

Nzuzo: "Yammy I am so sorry please you have to forgive me please"

Me: "bye Nzuzo" I dropped the call I was in tears when I turned Avery was standing there "Avery"

Avery: "he is making you cry" I wiped my tears

Me: "you shouldn't listen to my phone conversation Avery you know better"

Avery: "he made you cry mom!!"

Me; "Avery don't yell" he just turned going upstairs "Avery come back here!"

Avery: "don't yell mom" I just sighed and continued with making food when I was done I went to his room he was playing boxing on his wii

Me: "who's face are you seeing"

Avery: "Nzuzo's"

Me: "I thought you were calling him dad"

Avery: "not anymore, not when he makes you cry"

Me: "I was happy bae it was happy tears"

Avery: "I heard the conversation I'm not a fool and we don't lie to each other"

Me: "you shouldn't have been listening to my conversation Avery no matter what, that was rude and disrespectful if you ever do it again you are going to be in trouble"

Avery: "I am sorry mom"

Me: "come let's eat then we can look for a good barbershop get your hair cut"

Avery; "okay" he stopped playing we went to eat after eating we went to get his hair cut into a neat english cut I washed my weave did my nails we left after getting take aways

.

The following day I woke up went to wake Avery up we got ready for school and work. As we drove out Jessica was driving out

Jessica: "hey you didn't answer my calls yesterday"

Me: "sorry I'm not a fan of my phone especially on Sundays those days are reserved for my son"

Jessica: "okay I understand, can we meet maybe do lunch where do you work"

Me: "st Augustin"

Jessica: "great I'll text you but musgrave at 13:00"

Me: "great" I drove off

Avery: "you making us late"

Me: "no I'm not" I increased the speed

Avery: "now you going to kill us bae"

Me: "says you always playing that car game"

Avery: "I love you mommy" I chuckled

Me: "I won't even ask what you want"

Avery: "please pick me up"

Me: "but you dad picks you up"

Avery: "I want you to pick me up"

Me: "your father loves you bae we had a little misunderstanding don't get involved in it"

Avery: "he made you cry that's unacceptable"

Me: "Avery" he just shook his head and started singing along to a song that was playing. In no time I dropped him off I went to work it wasn't even 5 minutes after getting that Nzuzo got in

Me: "I wasn't aware that we had an appointment Dr Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "come on Yammy I'm sorry"

Me: "is there something I can help you with"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry Yammy but what do you expect me to do? I have a life I had a life I was settled"

Me: "then continue with your life I'm not here to ruin your precious life"

Nzuzo: "just give me a chance"

Me: "to do what"

Nzuzo: "sort things out"

Me: "there's nothing to sort out what happened was a mistake"

Nzuzo: "you love me"

Me: "I thought you did to"

Nzuzo: "I do"

Me: "I'm not going to be the other woman"

Nzuzo: "just give me time"

Me: "time for what"

Nzuzo: "sort things out"

Me: "no there's nothing to sort out" he walked closer to me "no go away" he grabbed my neck kissing me hard I kissed him back he lifted me up pressed me on the wall then he moved from the wall putting me on the desk pushed my dress up i pulled his pants down he pushed my thong aside and slammed into me I cried out buried my teeth deep into his neck he went on and on until we both crashed at the same time and cupped my face we kissed

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" he kissed me again

Nzuzo: "I still can't believe you here like I have you back my dick is in your pussy right now"

Me: "it all about sex for you"

Nzuzo: "now that's just hurtful Yamkelani you know I love you"

Me: "but you have your Enhle, what am I to Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "you my hope my love the mother of my first born son"

Me: "but right now I feel like a side chick"

Nzuzo: "you could never be that you are so much more"

Me: "whatever get off me I got work to do"

Nzuzo: "I love you Yammy"

Me: "does she know about Avery"

Nzuzo: "I'll tell her when the time is right" I pushed him off me

Me: "he is your child and you talking about when the time is right"

Nzuzo: "I know that"

Me: "are you ashamed of him?"

Nzuzo: "what the hell Yamkelani he is my son I would never be ashamed of my own son"

Me: "well act like it and fucking stop coming in me look now I'm licking" I was so frustrated I went in the bathroom cleaned myself up when I got out he was pacing

Nzuzo: "look Yamkelani I love my son he is me and I love him don't ever I mean ever bring our son in whatever issue we have as a couple" he walked out banging the door

Me: "we not a couple" I whispered talking to myself I just sat down with a huff started doing my work.

At 12:45 Jessica texted me saying I'll be her at bertoua I fixed myself took my bag as I opened door Nzuzo was about to knock

Me: "yeah"

Nzuzo: "let's go eat"

Me: "I have plans" he looked at me with a straight face

Nzuzo: "it lunch time why do you have a meeting at lunch time"

Me: "am I that ugly that I wouldn't have a lunch date"

Nzuzo: "no you beautiful you know that beautiful but I also know that you know better then to agree on a date with someone else while we trying to fix things"

Me: "you not even my boyfriend"

Nzuzo; "yes I'm not, I'm your man"

Me: "Nzuzo can we not do this especially now please" he sighed looking exhausted

Nzuzo: "who are you having lunch with"

Me: "Jessica she stays across my house"

Nzuzo: "okay I guess I'll eat at the staff lounge" I nodded

Me: "let me go pass" he smiled and leaned forward to kiss me I moved back he looked at me confused "I won't the person you have an affair with at work Nzuzo please don't degrade me like that" he

nodded with hurt all over his face he moved aside I locked my office and walked away. When I got there Jessica was already sitting there she waved me over I walked over to her

Me: "hey"

Jessica: "you look too pretty for work"

Me: "I try" i ordered

Jessica: "so you a doctor"

Me: "not in a medical sense but in the academic sense"

Jessica: "cool, I'm a lawyer"

Me: "now I know who to call when I get in trouble" we giggled I honestly didn't know how to do this whole thing I've never had friends the only person I would call a friend was Thandi

Jessica: "we should totally hit some clubs on Friday"

Me: "I don't have a baby sitter"

Jessica: "Noni can hook you up with some numbers" I don't do clubs! Never have been inside a club let alone taste alcohol

Me: "that would be nice"

Jessica: "where is your son's father"

Me: "at work"

Jessica: "you two still together"

Me: "it's a complicated"

Jessica: "isn't it always"

Me: "yes it is" we talked getting to know each she really wasn't that bad she just wasn't scared of throwing her success out there. After lunch I went to pick up Avery got him lunch then went back in the office I got busy with my work while he ate someone knocked

Avery: "come in" I looked at him chuckling Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "I waited for you at school Avery" Avery looked at me

Me: "I texted you Nzuzo that I was getting him"

Nzuzo: "I didn't get that"

Me: "check your phone"

Nzuzo: "you should have called"

Avery: "I'll finish my food with Sthe" he stood up "if you ever make my mom cry again you can consider yourself not in my life" he walked out leaving Nzuzo shocked

Nzuzo: "what did you say to him"

Me: "nothing he overheard our conversation yesterday and I told you his protective"

Nzuzo: "you want him to hate me"

Me: "now you being silly instead of standing there being angry at me you should go out there and talk to him"

Nzuzo: "can't believe you doing this right now" he walked out

.

The days went by Avery was really not liking Nzuzo and there was nothing I could do about it Avery is stubborn and ofcos Nzuzo was blaming me so we fought almost everyday and every time it ended with him buried deep in my pussy at the office. It was Friday I was going to 47th avenue with the girls I was skyping Claire before getting ready

Claire: "I tried to take you clubbing for years! Now that I'm all around and fat you start having fun"

Me: "I'm not the one who said get pregnant or go across the continent"

Claire: "are you getting some you glowing"

Me: "Nzuzo been tearing it up" we laughed

Claire: "you going to get yourself hurt then Justin will have Nzuzo's head"

Me: "I'll be fine. So what should I wear"

Claire: "something short and tight"

Me: "something sluty" she giggled

Claire: "yep"

Me: "aha let me go I love you"

Claire: "love you too" I blew her a kiss then logged out. I took a quick shower got out lotioned then wore white short dress shirt and brown thigh boot I let my weave lose I'm not a make up person I just put on lipstick grabbed my brown clutch bag went downstairs Avery was watching tv with his sitter

Me: "bath and bed at 22:00"

Avery: "I know" I waited for Jessica to pick me up when she did I kissed Avery then we left went to get Sarah and Noni. When we got there we got a table they got their champagne bottles

Sarah: "it's champagne Lani like really it hardly alcohol"

Me: "I don't even like the taste"

Noni: "do you know what it tastes like"

Me: "well no" we laughed

Jessica: "that's it we getting you a glass"

Me: "no I'm perfectly fine with my play" Jessica poured a glass for me I took a small sip it really wasn't that bad

Noni: "so?"

Me: "it's cool"

Sarah: "just cool?"

Me: "okay it tastes amazing" they giggled we continued drinking it was all nice listening to music and watching people dance after a couple of hours I saw a familiar face I stood up stumbled a little I was feeling funny

Noni: "you okay there"

Me: "yep"

Sarah: "I'll order some water" I nodded and walked over to the table where I saw a familiar face I patted him on the back he turned when he saw his mouth shut

Sbu: "fucking hell Yamkelani!!"

Me: "hi" he stood and swept me up in a hug

Sbu: "you here?!!"

Me: "yep"

Sbu: "you look hot"

Me: "thank you" he put me down

Sbu: "come join us"

Me: "I'm with my girls"

Sbu: "you got girls now" I giggled pushing him lightly

Me: "I grew up"

Sbu: "where's Nzuzo"

Me: "with his baby mama and kids at his house"

Sbu: "give me your number" he took his phone I saved my number on his phone "it was really good to see you Yamkelani" he kissed my cheek

Me: "it was good to see you as well, I'll see you later" he laughed

Sbu: "you drink now"

Me: "first time"

Sbu: "I'll keep an eye on you" I nodded went to sit down

Noni: "who was that"

Me: "not Mandla" we laughed

Noni: "fuck you" we chilled continued drinking Nzuzo wouldn't stop calling after 10 missed calls I answered

Me: "Dr Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "I'm outside come I'm taking you home"

Me: "you don't even know where I am"

Nzuzo: "I know now come out I'm still in my scrubs I don't want to come in there"

Me: "I'm still having fun"

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani!"

Me: "I'm coming" I dropped the call "I have to go"

Jessica: "how you getting home and we still having fun"

Me: "Avery's father is outside" I stood up took my bag

Noni: "I need air so I'll walk you out" I nodded we went out Nzuzo's car was already there he got out when he saw me

Me: "bye"

Noni: "why is Enhle's man picking you up"

Me: "ask him" I left her there he opened my door I got in he went to his side and drove off

Nzuzo: "you drink now Yamkelani"

Me: "I'm sleepy" I put my head on the window and drifted off to sleep I woke up when he was lifting me off the chair I wrapped my arms around his neck he took me to room stripped me gave me water and adcol I took it, then he put me under the covers he got in behind me and pulled me close to him I went back to sleep.

PART 25

When I woke up I was suffocated by Nzuzo I removed his arms around me I went to the bathroom took a cold shower I got out tied my weave into a ponytail got dressed in sweatpants and a sport bra I got out of my room going to the kitchen I made myself coffee then started on breakfast. Avery came down first busy playing with his iPad

Avery: "morning bae" I kissed his cheek

Me: "morning, you slept well?"

Avery: "yes, is dad here I saw his car upfront?"

Me: "yes and Avery cut him some slack please don't get involved in whatever is going on between your dad and I"

Avery: "but he made you cry"

Me: "he made a mistake and it has nothing to do with you so please" he looked at me long and hard before huffing

Avery: "okay"

Me: "so when he comes down apologize"

Avery: "okay, can I help"

Me: "set up on the table outside" he nodded started moving things to the patio I went up to call Nzuzo he was still asleep

Me: "Nzuzo" I shook him he opened his eyes and smiled

Nzuzo: "hey" he pulled me to him and kissed me

Me: "are you okay"

Nzuzo: "no I'm not okay"

Me: "what's wrong"

Nzuzo: "you were drunk yesterday baby that's not you" I sighed

Me; "yes it not"

Nzuzo: "so it won't happen again"

Me: "it will"

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani" I giggled and gave him a soft peck

Me: "no it's won't it was the first and the last time"

Nzuzo: "good"

Me: "how did you know I was there"

Nzuzo: "a friend of my mine from work saw you"

Me: "you keeping tabs on me"

Nzuzo: "you my woman don't be surprised" I held his face kissed him hard

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you and I promise you I will sort this out I just don't want my girls to get all hurt and confused Enhle has been staying with me since she fell pregnant so they grew up with both parents in the house and now if I'm no longer there it going to confuse them they just babies but I'm yours Yammy you know I'm yours"

Me: "I'll give you the time Nzuzo but I hope you not stringing me along"

Nzuzo: "I could never do that"

Me: "I love you" I gave him a soft peck "come breakfast is getting cold"

Nzuzo: "okay" I got off him he stood up I looked at his body as he stretched "I know you staring" I giggled

Me: "you just said your mine so I'm allowed"

Nzuzo; "I need to have clothes here now I have to eat breakfast in scrubs"

Me: "bring a bag over"

Nzuzo: "I will I'll go get it after breakfast"

Me: "what will Enhle say"

Nzuzo: "we haven't been sleeping in the same room since I made love to you the first time" I'm not gonna lie and say that didn't make me happy I sympathize with Enhle but Nzuzo is mine

Me: "oh I'm sorry" he put on his pants

Nzuzo: "let's go eat" he took my hand we went out Avery was already eating "morning son"

Avery: "morning dad, you slept well?"

Nzuzo: "yep and you"

Avery: "me too, uhm I'm sorry about how I've been behaving badly this past week I shouldn't have gotten involved in whatever is going on between you and mom so I'm sorry" Nzuzo looked at me I just smiled

Nzuzo: "I understand you over protective over your mother and I'm glad because she needs you to be but not when it comes to me you don't need to be like that"

Avery: "I know and I'm really sorry"

Nzuzo: "I'm also sorry I made your mommy cry" Avery banged his forehead on the table

Avery: "she's mom not mommy I'm not a girl"

Nzuzo: "ofcos you a man you need your street cred"

Avery: "yes I got a rep to protect"

Me: "what you know about reps" we enjoyed breakfast over conversation about how a man should be.

After breakfast Nzuzo left I cleaned and did the laundry while Avery locked himself in his room. I started cooking around 5 I was still baking the lasagne when my phone rang I answered

Me: "hello"

Caller: "Yammy hey"

Me: "Sbu?"

Caller: "yeah"

Me: "hey are you good"

Sbu: "yes and you"

Me: "I'm good too"

Sbu: "was hoping we can do dinner I know it short notice but I'd like to catch up"

Me: "it is short notice I'm sorry I don't have a sitter for my son"

Sbu: "wow! You got a son"

Me: "yep a 9 year old young man"

Sbu: "Nzuzo's child"

Me: "says who"

Sbu: "it makes sense and I know you Yammy so I know you wouldn't have had moved on that quick"

Me: "yes it Nzuzo's" as if he can hear me I caught his scent then he circled his arms around me

Sbu: "wow we should really catch up"

Me: "yes we should but can I call you later maybe tomorrow"

Sbu: "cool bye" I dropped the call

Nzuzo: "who was that"

Me: "Sbu"

Nzuzo: "Sbu? As in the Sbu who stayed at your home"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "you had his number all along" I turned put my hands on his chest

Me: "no I ran into him yesterday"

Nzuzo: "see why I don't want you in those place you will meet these idiotic man"

Me: "I know Sbu you know Sbu"

Nzuzo: "I know he used to want you"

Me: "don't be dramatic Sbu was basically a brother to me we spent s year together" he lifted me up and put me down on the counter getting between my legs

Nzuzo: "if he tries something tell him I'll kill him"

Me: "I think he knows" we kissed that slow passionate kiss he pulled off when it was getting heated

Nzuzo: "where's my child"

Me: "in his room been there the whole day he only came out to get lunch"

Nzuzo: "video games"

Me: "yep, how are the twins"

Nzuzo: "fussy and cute"

Me: "you got good genes"

Nzuzo: "indeed" he smiled

Me: "you so hot" his smile went wide

Nzuzo: "you want to see a grown man blush worst out a zulu man" I kissed him

Me: "dinner is almost done"

Nzuzo: "I told Enhle about Avery" I nodded "she was so hurt but she understood and said she wants to meet him"

Me: "she understood because you didn't tell her about us you told her about your long lost son not his mother that you apparently in love with" he looked down "please go call Avery I'll dish up"

Nzuzo: "Yammy"

Me: "please that's all I'm asking for"

Nzuzo: "ok" he took his bag from the floor and walked out I dished up for us with tears wanting to fall he wasn't going to leave her he might love me but he wasn't going to leave her she was his seventh heaven his home and I was the woman who left him and came back 9 years later with a son he didn't know existed. I quickly wiped my tears as they fell "mom" he screamed coming in

Me: "don't scream Avery I have a headache"

Avery: "I'm sorry"

Me: "take your food we eating in front of the tv" he mad a whoopee sound and took his food I put Nzuzo's food on the tray with juice went to give it to him

Nzuzo: "thank you"

Me: "you welcome" I went to get mine we ate while watching a movie when everyone was done eating I went to load the dishwasher went back in the tv room

Me: "goodnight bae I love you"

Avery: "love you too" I kissed his forehead and went up ignoring Nzuzo's stares I took a long hot bath even reading a book while in the water I got out when the water got cold I wore my pjamas got in bed drifted off to sleep.

I woke up when Nzuzo was getting in bed he pulled me to him intertwining our legs he put his hand under my top and kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I love you and I'm sorry"

Me: "you never going to leave her are you"

Nzuzo: "I will I promise you I will"

Me: "don't make promises you can't keep"

Nzuzo: "can you turn please" I turned we were so close our nose were touching "please have faith" he kissed me "please" I nodded we kissed shortly I went back to sleep

.

Days went by Nzuzo spent a few night with us and Avery loved having him at home well I also loved having him with us it was like a glimpse of what our life would be like if we were to build our lives together. But ke brother man Khumalo didn't know what he wants like Nzuzo was truly torn and it was killing me. It was a week later on Wednesday I hadn't gone to work I didn't even go the previous 2 days I had the stomach flue since Saturday I had been throwing up and I was really dizzy. I was in the kitchen making chicken soup it was the only thing that I could eat just soup and bread, the intercom rang I checked who it was on the camera and it was Noni I hadn't spoken to her since the club but Jessica and Sarah texted me almost everyday I opened the gate. I took my soup went to sit in the lounge while waiting for Noni to come in "hello" she screamed from the foyer

Me: "in the lounge follow my voice" I thought I was dreaming when she walked in with another woman I would know her anywhere

Noni: "hey" I swallowed saliva

Me: "hey sit please"

Noni: "your house is beautiful" they sat down I wished I was wearing something more nice instead of sweatpants and Nzuzo's hoody

Me: "thank you, can I get you something to drink"

Enhle: "no we fine" I nodded

Me: "uhm okay"

Noni: "let's cut the bullshit Yamkelani I'm not a person who gets involved in people's business but when my little sister calls me crying because her man is hardly home ngeke sis mele kwenzeke something"

Me: "your Your sister?"

Enhle: "yes her sister me Minenhle the one whose man you fucking"

PART 26

I stared at Enhle my heart was beating out of my chest that's the thing with me I'm a fucking coward I've never fought before Hloni Nzuzo's ex from high school beat me up twice and I didn't do anything I don't know how to fight period

Me: "I think this is something Enhle should discuss with Nzuzo in their home you shouldn't have came here Enhle you should have waited for your man at home and spoke to him"

Enhle: "how was I supposed to speak to him when he is never home"

Me: "uhm I'm going to put the dish in the kitchen then we can talk properly just to ask again can I get you ladies something to drink"

Noni: "no" I gave them a fake smile stood up with my soup bowl went to the kitchen when I got there I took my phone from the pocket and sent Nzuzo a text

I got a bottle of water went back to the lounge

Me: "so how can I help you ladies"

Enhle: "don't be smug"

Me: "I'm not being smug"

Noni: "yes you are"

Me: "I'm sorry you see it that way"

Enhle: "why are you fucking my baby daddy"

Me: "technically you fucking my son's father considering how my son is his first born" enhle gave a fake laugh

Enhle: "the nerve!!"

Me: "I really have issues with people who yell so please avoid it"

Enhle: "you fucking bitch!! You have lot of nerve"

Me: “no you got a lot of nerves coming to my house and swearing at me”

Noni: “what do you want from Nzuzo is it the money”

Enhle: “obviously it the money he is probably paying for all of this”

Me: “Nzuzo is not paying for anything and I don’t want his money I love him”

Enhle: “you don’t even know him”

Me: “you don’t know him. I’ve known Nzuzo since he was 13”

Enhle: “and you think that gives you some leverage!!! Why you back now? Is it because he is working”

Me: “I don’t want his money”

Enhle: “then what do you want from him?!” She stood up and pulled me up by the hoody “you even wearing his clothes” she slapped me so hard I fell back to the couch “what the hell is going on here!!!!” He roared I didn’t even want to look at him

Noni: “oh my God he looks just like him” I opened my eyes Nzuzo was standing there with Avery

Nzuzo: “go to your room Avery”

Avery: “but mom is crying”

Nzuzo: “and I’m saying go to your room and don’t get out” he nodded and went upstairs Nzuzo came to kneel next to me touched my cheek it was really hurting I just looked at him with my tears falling

Nzuzo: “I am so sorry Yammy I’m so sorry” I nodded he wiped my tears

Enhle: “isn’t this just perfect” Nzuzo turned with a huge back hand slap Enhle fell same time

Noni: “are you out of your fucking mind Nzuzo”

Nzuzo: “I’m not Mandla Noni I will put you in the hospital am I clear” she didn’t say anything “I said am I fucking clear!!” He roared again

Noni: “yes”

Nzuzo: “now who the hell do you two think you are coming here and disrespecting Yamkelani in her own home”

Enhle: “am I supposed to sit back and watch her steal you away from me take you away from our kids”

Nzuzo: “do I look like a child to you Minenhle that’s get stolen” she got off the floor

Enhle: “I don’t want to lose you Nzuzo”

Nzuzo: “so you thought it best to act like a common hoodrat”

Enhle: “it because of your skinny hoe over there”

Nzuzo: “call her names one last time and you will see”

Enhle: “Nzuzo please just come home please”

Nzuzo: “my things are already packed so I’ll send moving people to come get my stuff now leave”

Enhle: "Nzuzo please" she went on her knees started crying "please don't let the devil brake us up we have kids please don't do this to us"

Nzuzo: "Noni take your sister home I'll come check on the girls during the weekend"

Noni: "so you going to do this to my little sister Nzuzo after everything you two been through believe me Lani won't stay you with once you start your cheating ways again and don't come back to my sister when Lani dumps you" Nzuzo looked down something passed through his face lot of uncertainty and fear

Nzuzo: "just leave please" they walked out the lounge I heard the front door banging we just stared at each other my cheek was throbbing "you should have called me Yammy, why didn't you call me?!!!" I just let out a loud sob I cried loudly he sat down and pulled me to his lap like a child I held onto his shirt and cried I cried for everything the months we spent going back and forth, the years we spent apart, the time we spent fighting, the fear I was feeling that he might cheat on me one day or even worse he might hit me because clearly hitting a woman wasn't something he was scared of, because once again I got hit by a girl because of him, because I was 7 weeks late with my periods, because I wanted pork legs but I couldn't stomach anything but soup most importantly I cried because he was mine he was moving in and he had been planning it finally I had my Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "it's okay baby I'm sorry I shouldn't have yelled" I even had hiccups

Me: "I'm hungry" he laughed which made me cry harder

Nzuzo: "shit baby I'm sorry I bought you your soup and bread sticks" I nodded

Avery: "mommy?" I looked at him he wanted to cry "are you okay mommy"

Me: "I'm okay"

Nzuzo: "she's hungry how about you warm her soup for her it on the table in the foyer"

Avery: "okay"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry Enhle came to ambush you like that"

Me: "it's okay I'm okay"

Nzuzo: "you should have called me Yamkelani Enhle could have hurt you if I wasn't coming to check on you I don't know"

Me: "I texted you"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "your girlfriends keep beating me up" he chuckled and kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I seem to attract fighters besides you"

Me: "you hit her Nzuzo" he sighed

Nzuzo: "i didn't mean to"

Me: "you hit Hloni as well"

Nzuzo: "she put you in hospital"

Me: "still doesn't make it right" Avery came back with me food Nzuzo stood up put me down on the couch he took the food from Avery and started feeding me

Avery: "you treating her like a baby" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "she's my busy I have to, take your food and eat so you can get your homework done"

Avery: "okay" he went to the kitchen

Me: "are you going back to work"

Nzuzo: "no but I'm on call"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "I'm glad I decided to come back early"

Me: "I'm glad too" Avery came back with McDonald's "do you realize that you've been feeding this child junk since the weekend"

Nzuzo: "I'll cook tonight"

Avery: "I'm good with the junk"

Me: "you won't be saying that when you get sick"

Nzuzo: "come on baby look at my hand how am I supposed to feed you"

Me: "sorry" he continued feeding me until he was done he gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" he held my chin kissed me slowly I wanted to jump on him but I pulled back when I looked at Avery he was staring at us with a smile on his face when his eyes met mine he quickly looked down on his burger

Nzuzo: "I got you some medicine but it going to make you drowsy"

Me: "I'll take it at night"

Nzuzo: "okay" he gave me a soft peck and stood up went to the kitchen

Me: "how was school bae"

Avery: "cool"

Me: "come hold me"

Avery: "dad is coming back"

Me: "you don't want to hold me"

Avery: "I have a soccer game mom on Friday I don't want get sick dad said stomach can be contagious"

Me: "wow! You don't love me anymore Phiwokuhle"

Nzuzo: "I love you so much"

Me: "I mean junior Phiwokuhle"

Avery: "I love you so much" they laughed

Me: "I'm going to go sleep"

Nzuzo: "want me to carry you" I smiled lifting my arms up he carried me taking me to my room he took my clothes off

Me: "why you stripping me"

Nzuzo: "I prefer you naked"

Me: "I want to sleep"

Nzuzo: "exactly, get under the cover I'll go get you water for your medicine"

Me: "okay" he looked at my body mostly my stomach I just had panties on he touched my stomach pressing on it "ouch!" He kept on pressing but when he pressed on this particular spot I felt pain

Nzuzo: "mmh" he kissed me then pulled back with a smile "I love you" I nodded he stood up and walked out I got under the cover I touched my stomach I can't be pregnant it I mean I'm on the pill never miss one and I just can't be pregnant not now Nzuzo and I need to fix ourselves first and get married well that's if he wants to marry me dad really wouldn't approve of another child out of wedlock but it would make Mayowo happy that woman finds joy in me disappointing dad "so you speak to yourself now" I looked up he was standing by the door with a tray that cup and glass and medication

Me: "was thinking out loud?"

Nzuzo: "seems that way"

Me: "what did you hear"

Nzuzo: "not much" he walked to the bed and sat down "here first" I started drinking the pills while he mixed some in the hot water by the time I was done taking like a dozen off medicine

Me: "my stomach hurts so bad now"

Nzuzo: "I know baby" he put the tray aside and got under the cover next to me "sleep thembalam I love you" he held me close brushing my stomach "I think we have a little invader here" I pretended to be asleep I didn't want to speak about this it was freaking me out eventually I fell asleep.

When I woke up it was dark I got off the bed got dressed in what I was wearing went to rinse my mouth then went downstairs they were in the kitchen Nzuzo was cooking and Avery was watching him like a hawk

Me: "boys"

Avery: "you mean men"

Me: "okay men" Nzuzo kissed me shortly

Nzuzo: "how you feeling now"

Me: "a little better"

Nzuzo: "and my invader"

Me: "is your homework done Avery" Nzuzo just shot me a look and went back to cooking

Avery: "it's done mom"

Me: "good"

Nzuzo: "are you going to ignore me"

Me: "what are you cooking"

Nzuzo: "rice and beef stew"

Me: "okay" we sat in the kitchen talking until Nzuzo was done cooking they ate I just had shake after dinner we watched a little bit of tv then went to bed he gave me the medicine again then we got under the cover

Nzuzo: "are we going to ignore the possibility that you might be pregnant in fact I know you pregnant"

Me: "I'm on the pill"

Nzuzo; "it not always affective"

Me: "we can't afford a child right now"

Nzuzo: "in what sense because we both financially stable, we happy and we in love"

Me: "the mother of your twins just attacked me"

Nzuzo: "and I'm sorry but this is what we've always spoke about, us being successful having our own family I mean the only thing that is wrong with this picture is that we staying in your house instead of a house I was supposed to buy you and we not married but we can fix all of that"

Me: "I'm sleepy"

Nzuzo: "are you not happy about this pregnancy"

Me; "we don't even know if I'm pregnant or not"

Nzuzo: "you are"

Me: "then yes I'm not happy" he sucked in air

Nzuzo: "goodnight"

Me: "goodnight" we stayed in silence for a while with him tossing and turning

Nzuzo: "I want this child Yammy she is going to make me happy make us happy I didn't get to experience Avery with you I want this" I sighed and turned

Me: "come here" I pulled him to me buried my face in his neck he wrapped his arms around my body pulling me even tightly he put his hand in my hair

Nzuzo: "I want this Yammy please don't say you not happy" I really didn't want the baby and a part of me knew that if I had found out first that I was pregnant I would have terminated it

Me: "if you happy I'm happy" he slide his hand between my legs and lifted my thigh putting it on his

Nzuzo: "I'm happy" I pushed down his boyleg "you make me happy my kids make me happy and our new addition will make me up" he entered me

Me: "aaah God"

Nzuzo: “mmmh” I pushed him back and got on top of him I started moving while he played with my breasts

.

I ended up stay at home the whole week Nzuzo moved in fully during the weekend leaving Enhle in his house in Glenwood he said his kids need a home and he wasn't about to chase them out. Monday morning I was going back to work I woke up when he was kissing me I cupped his his face deepened the kiss after a short while he pulled back

Nzuzo: “I'll see you at work”

Me: “okay I love you”

Nzuzo: “you love me” I nodded he kissed me again “I love you”

Me: “go and please wake up Avery before leaving”

Nzuzo: “I will”

Me: “see you”

Nzuzo: “feed my kids” we kissed again he pulled back and kissed my forehead he walked out I got up made the bed opened the curtains and windows I went to bath got out I got dressed in black ankle grazer pants with a navy shirt tucked in and navy heels I tied my weave in a messy bun as I was packing my bag I saw texts from Jessica she was asking me why I didn't tell her Nzuzo was Avery's father even some from an unknown number swearing me calling me a home wrecker I just forwarded all of them to Nzuzo I wasn't about to deal with his crazy baby mama. When I was finished I went to check on Avery but he wasn't in his room so I went downstairs I found him in the kitchen eating cereal

Me: “morning bae”

Avery: “morning mom are you okay”

Me: “yes and you”

Avery: “I'm okay too” I made a peanut butter sandwich and ate when we were both done we left I dropped Avery off then went to work.

Few minutes before I was going to take my lunch Nzuzo came in

Nzuzo: “I missed you”

Me: “you left me in bed naked” he looked at me smirking

Nzuzo: “does that mean you wanted some Dr Demus”

Me: “maybe but you didn't give me any”

Nzuzo: “we can correct that right here on the couch or the desk whatever you choose”

Me: “I love you” he smiled and walked over to my desk swinging my chair around and kissed me

Nzuzo: “i know you love me, I'm here to take you to the gyne”

Me: “do we have to”

Nzuzo: “yes then we can get you lunch”

Me: "okay" he took my hand we left going to the gynae floor luckily he had booked we got in checked me out everything was fine besides my blood pressure it was too high we did a ultrasound the heart beat was so strong

Nzuzo: "woah! That's us right there" I gave him a fake smile

Me: "yes it is" he kissed my cheek

Dr: "everything is good and you are 10 weeks" that meant I got pregnant before I started the pill

Nzuzo: "she's been taking the pill that won't affect the baby right"

Dr: "we going to need to keep an close eye on the baby but there shouldn't be any problems"

Nzuzo: "that's good" the doctor smiled and wiped the gel of me I went to change leaving them talking I just sat down in the changing room and cried silently i really didn't want this baby I stayed there until someone knocked

Me: "I'm coming" my voice was braking

Nzuzo: "baby are you okay"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "please unlock the door for me"

Me: "I'll be out in a second"

Nzuzo: "you worrying me baby" i quickly got dressed I wiped my face and walked out "hey you had me worried, have you been crying"

Me: "I'm just happy"

Nzuzo; "Yammy?"

Me: "let's go get lunch" he cupped my face and kissed me

Nzuzo: "you don't want this baby" his voice came out as a whisper

Me: "you want it"

Nzuzo: "but you don't want it" I just broke down and cried shaking my head

PART 27

Nzuzo pulled me to the changing room he held me until I stopped crying

Me: "I'm sorry nzuzo I'm so sorry"

Nzuzo: "why don't you want this child"

Me: "I've had 2 miscarriages a termination I don't want another child that might not survive after my last miscarriage I don't think I want to take that risk my gynae back in London told me I might not carry to term I don't know how that doctor missed that"

Nzuzo: "remember when you first came to me asking for help remember I told you to hold my hand and never let go I told you to trust me to have your back all the time" I nodded "I'm saying it again

hold my hand and never let go I am here I have always been we've been through too much and this is our chance this is our time I love you and I know you will love this child just like you love our Avery"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "trust me thembalam"

Me: "I trust you"

Nzuzo: "good let's go get you guys food okay" I smiled he wiped my tears "I'm so insanelly in love with you ma'Demus"

Me: "I'm in love with you as well Mntungwa" he cupped my face and kissed me we kissed for such a long time just kissing slowly and passionately we were disturbed by a knock "Khumalo my next client is here" screamed the doctor from the other side of the door we pulled apart

Nzuzo: "let's go" he wiped my face we walked out after getting my prescription list

Me: "I need some solid food"

Nzuzo: "we can buy little bit of everything that you craving then see what you can keep in your stomach" just as I was replied my phone rang it was Masisi

Me: "hey" she sniffed

Masisi: "Yammy" she was crying

Me: "hey what's wrong"

Masisi: "I don't like this place Yammy I want to come home"

Me: "what do you mean you don't like the place"

Masisi: "I wana come home Lani!"

Me: "you have school"

Masisi: "I don't care"

Me: "uhm okay cool, there's just few months left before you finish your exams then you can go home"

Masisi: "no I want to stay with you full time"

Me: "Masisi you know dad won't let that happen"

Masisi: "I don't care Lani I'm not staying here and I want to be with you or I don't know what I will do"

Me: "okay you can come after your exams then you will have to apply at Ukzn but I will talk to dad first"

Masisi: "thank you"

Me: "Masisi what is going on"

Masisi: "I just want to stay with you"

Me: "you not being honest but I will call you later Nzuzo and I are going to have lunch"

Masisi; "ok tell him I said hi and kiss Avery for me"

Me: "what about me" she giggled

Masisi: "I love you"

Me: "love you too" she dropped the call "Masisi says hi"

Nzuzo: "is she okay? Can't believe masisi is in varsity"

Me: "kids grow" I started eating he had already ordered for me

Nzuzo: "within 10 years Avery will be off to varsity"

Me: "then it going to be the twins"

Nzuzo: "eish"

Me: "is it safe to say this will be our last"

Nzuzo: "yes it is"

Me: "good"

Nzuzo: "I need to talk to my uncle about sending lobola to your father" I felt anger building up "before you start showing which is going to be a little costly since it in another country" I pushed my chair "what's going on" I stood up threw my juice at him "what the hell?!!!" I walked off I could feel everyone's eyes around the cafeteria he tried grabbing my arm but I yanked it off

Me: "fuck off nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "what did I do"

Me: "who do you think you are" I got in the lift so did he

Nzuzo: "get out now!!" He screamed at the people in the lift they hurried out "what's going on with you"

Me: "did I say I want to get married to you? Im not some meat in a butchery that you can just pick out and buy!"

Nzuzo: "Yammy I thought this is what you wanted"

Me: "did you ask me? If you think I'm just going to marry you without you even asking me well you losing left brother! If that was your proposal then forget it Dr Khumalo" I flooded my arms over my chest with a pout he looked at me then chuckled

Nzuzo: "you want romance dr Demus"

Me: "it wouldn't hurt" we got off on my floor

Nzuzo: "all that drama because you want heart and flower"

Me: "that was no drama I'm still angry I didn't even get to finish my lunch"

Nzuzo: "that's because you decided to be dramatic"

Me: "Nzuzo I'm hungry" he looked at me laughing his pager went off

Nzuzo: "shit I have to go I'll see you at home please pick up Avery" he gave me a soft peck and left running I stepped out of my office called Sthe

Sthe: "Lani"

Me: "please go buy me nandos with extra sauce lemon and herb and coke"

Sthe: "ok but it going to take long taxis are a nightmare"

Me: "take my car" I went in my office he followed me I gave him my car keys and cash "just buy for Avery as well and pick him up please"

Sthe: "okay"

.

A week went by Nzuzo was fussy always he even had Sthe's number he would text him to make sure I ate and I took my vitamins it was sweet and irritating at the same time, I loved him one minute and hated him the next. it was Friday night we were just lazying around having pizza and fried chicken watching movies when my phone rang i huffed

Me: "Nzuzo answer it maybe it Enhle again" Enhle wouldn't stop calling me I had heard every swore word you could think of

Nzuzo: "it your dad"

Me: "daddy"

Dad: "Lani hey"

Me: "how are you"

Dad: "I'm well angel, look I'm on my way from the airport" I sat up as if he could see me

Me: "airport where"

Dad: "here I'm coming there I had business to take care of in jhb so instead of going home I thought I could come see y'all"

Me: "ok I'll get a room ready for you"

Dad: "see you in a few"

Me: "okay bye" I hung up "dad is coming here"

Avery: "cool I missed grandpa" I looked at Nzuzo he stood up I followed him out the lounge

Nzuzo: "I have to go right"

Me: "do you want to go"

Nzuzo: "what will your father say if he finds out I'm staying here in your house"

Me: "my father knows you he knows everything that you've done for me the only thing he has for you is admiration"

Nzuzo: "so I shouldn't leave"

Me: "no you shouldn't"

Nzuzo: "if he notices that we pregnant"

Me: "I hope he doesn't stay long enough to notice"

Nzuzo: "is it weird that I kinda feel nervous I don't want it to look like I can't take care of you guys"

Me: "I know that you can take care of us and that's all that matters"

Nzuzo: "so I don't leave" I wrapped my arms around his waist and stood on my toes we kissed

Me: "you don't leave" we kissed again

Nzuzo: "you make my heart skip a beat every time you look at me especially when those beautiful dimples of yours show"

Me: "I love you" we kissed he lifted me up and put me on the counter I locked my ankles behind him we kissed for such a long time until the intercom rang "that's grandpa!!" Avery screamed coming in the kitchen he went to it

Avery: "it's really him" he opened the gate Nzuzo moved from me but I pulled him back gave him another kiss he pulled back laughing

Nzuzo: "behave" he put off the counter I went out when I opened the door dad was about to knock he pulled me in for a hug

Dad: "ooh Lani angel I've missed you"

Me: "it's only been a few months dad but I also missed you" he let go and kissed my forehead

Dad: "you okay you eating right"

Me: "I'm okay but I have to tell you something before you get in"

Dad: "what's wrong?" He was already panicking

Me: "Nzuzo is here" he breathed out

Dad: "I was hoping so but Avery said he has weird working hours"

Me: "you've been talk to Avery about Nzuzo"

Dad: "yes he was excited about his father moving in"

Me: "so you cool with that"

Dad: "I owe that man a lot" I smiled and threw my hands around him he held me laughing "come let's go in" I let go we went in "are you happy Lani"

Me: "a lot daddy he makes me really happy" he kissed my cheek we found Avery in the lounge with Nzuzo

Avery: "grandpa!!" He jumped up dad lifted him

Dad: "you growing so fast"

Avery: "dad feeds me lot of junk"

Dad: "you must be happy I know your mom is strict on food" Avery smiled nodding Nzuzo stood up

Nzuzo: "mr Demus"

Dad: "finally the famous Nzuzo my daughter spent lot of sleepless night crying over you"

Nzuzo: "if there was a way to avoid all of that it would have been avoided"

Dad: "I believe you son I don't even know how I can repay you but we will speak later"

Avery: "what did you get me"

Dad: "love" Avery frowned "I'm hungry and tired Lani I need to bath"

Me: "Avery take grandpa to the room next to yours, you can bath there dad I'll fix you a plate of food"

Dad; "okay" they went up i looked at Nzuzo

Me: "dad knew you stay here your son can't keep his mouth shut" he just laughed and pulled me to him holding my waist

Nzuzo: "good thing we haven't told him about the baby"

Me: "he likes you"

Nzuzo: "I'm glad" he held my chin and kissed me "I wana take you to bed"

Me: "let me make food for him first entertain him a little then we can go to bed"

Nzuzo: "okay" he kissed me "my little peanut" he was brushing my stomach

Me: "you know that name will stick"

Nzuzo: "she is my little peanut nje kinati lika babakhe" I just smiled shaking my head I went to make food for dad he came back just as I was finishing he sat on the high chair

Me: "Sne wants to come stay with me"

Dad: "that's probably for the best or Justin will kill her"

Me: "what's going on with them"

Dad: "Sne is being rebellious and you know how protective and stubborn Justin is so everyday it either I get a call from Justin or a call from Sne complaining about something Lani they going to give me a heart attack"

Me: "well she will start exams in a few months then she can stay with me from next year" I gave him his food and sat opposite him while having a snack

Dad: "do you think that's what you need though I mean you starting your own family"

Me: "there's more than enough space here"

Dad: "even with the new baby coming"

Me: "what baby"

Dad: "are you trying to hide that you pregnant or you don't know"

Me: "uhm" I looked down "was trying to hide it I'm sorry" he sighed

Dad: "I take it Nzuzo is the father" I nodded "he needs to marry you Lani no negotiations"

Me: "he is talking to his uncle about sending lobola"

Dad; “that’s good” I nodded “I thought you were just blinded by love when you said Avery looks like his father” I giggled

Me: “see what I meant”

Dad: “I’m glad you happy Lani now I just need to try and sort Sne out so I can die happily knowing my girls are happy”

Me: “don’t talk about dying”

Dad: “it going to happen eventually and Sne worries me”

Me: “I’ll talk to her dad”

Dad: “thank you angel” I kissed his cheek

Me: “how is Ray”

Dad: “his Ray you know him angel his a mama’s boy”

Me: “still following mayowo around”

Dad: “yep” I yawned “go sleep we will talk in the morning I’m spending the weekend”

Me: “ok daddy I love you” I kissed his cheek

Dad: “I love you too angel” I went up Nzuzo was in bed busy with his research

Me: “put me to bed” he laughed and pulled me to him he rolled over getting on top of me

Nzuzo: “we can’t do it with your father here right”

Me: “maybe in the middle of the night when I’m sure his asleep”

Nzuzo; “okay” he took my clothes off then kissed my stomach “I love you peanut” he got to my face and kissed me “I love you thembalam”

Me: “I love you sthandwa sam” he pulled the comforter over us and cuddled me

Nzuzo: “I’ll set an alarm for some middle of the night loving I need some sexual healing” i just laughed

PART 28

The weekend was amazing Avery loved my father he was following him everywhere Nzuzo even go jealous he spent most of Sunday in our bedroom sulking dad left Sunday night we took him to the airport after dinner.

Monday morning I woke up needing to throw up so I ran to the toilet and threw up Nzuzo got in while I was busy and held my weave up and out of my face until I was done he helped me stand up and walk to the sink I rinsed my mouth

Nzuzo: “should I get you something babe”

Me: “can you carry your child” he chuckled

Nzuzo: “anything but that babe”

Me: “then no I’m fine” I went to take a cold shower after awhile he got in

Nzuzo: "what the hell" he jumped out I just laughed "Yamkelani are you trying to get sick"

Me: "I feel hot" he opened the hot water

Nzuzo: "Yammy you going to get sick your immune system is not that strong right now" he was half shouting I could feel my tears building up

Me: "I'm sorry" he poured shower gel on the sponge started bathing me when we done we got dressed I went to make breakfast while he checked on Avery we had breakfast after breakfast we left using Nzuzo's car he had the same work hours as me that day

Avery: "anyone coming to my soccer practice" Nzuzo looked at me I looked out the window I was low key mad at him for what happened in the shower

Nzuzo: "I might come through if I can get away from work for an hour"

Avery; "mom?"

Me: "I can't"

Avery: "I miss Jus he never misses my soccer practice or games"

Me: "come on Avery that's not fair"

Avery: "I'm just saying"

Nzuzo; "no you being manipulative and it's wrong"

Avery: "sorry" we dropped him then drove to work my beeped it was a text from Jessica reminding me that we having lunch together I had honestly forgotten

Me: "can i have your car keys"

Nzuzo: "where you want to go"

Me; "I have lunch plans with Jessica"

Nzuzo: "Noni's friend"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "no"

Me: "oh I'll take an uber"

Nzuzo: "I'm saying no to the lunch"

Me: "excuse me"

Nzuzo: "you not going there and you going to stay away from Jessica"

Me: "now you acting crazy we in a relationship you not my dictator"

Nzuzo: "I'm telling you Yamkelani if you don't stop this friendship and some harm comes to my child I won't forgive you"

Me: "that's all you care about Nzuzo your precious child you treating me like a walking womb it not fair she is not even born yet but I'm already losing you to her" I wiped my tears looked out the window

Nzuzo: "so I'm at fault for caring about our child" I didn't say anything I just keep looking at window until we got to work, he walked me to my office when we got there he gave me the car keys "I meant what I said if something happens to my child I won't forgive you" he kissed my cheek and left I just locked the door shut down the blinds I just laid on the couch and cried until I fell asleep.

A knock woke me up I went to open it was Sthe

Me: "yes" he just smiled and gave me a plastic

Sthe: "Dr Khumalo said you should have a snack before lunch"

Me: "thank you" he nodded and walked away I opened the blinds sat on my desk it was a fruit salad with a pack of jelly tots and bottle of water I ate while doing my work. Soon it enough it was time for me to leave so I went to the bathroom fixed myself got my handbag and left driving to north beach at California dreaming I found Jessica and Sarah sitting on a table I outside I went straight to them greeted and sat down

Sarah: "girl you've been hiding yourself haven't seen you since the club"

Me: "work gets hectic" I ordered

Jessica: "well we missed you"

Me: "you don't hate me"

Them: "ofcos not"

Sarah: "we don't take sides whatever is going on between you and Enhle is your business besides she's not our friend you are"

Jessica: "just can't believe Nzuzo is Avery's father like you not even from here so I didn't even think it was possible even though they look alike"

Sarah: "I thought I was being paranoid when I saw Avery"

Me: "Nzuzo and I grew up together then I moved to stay with my father I was already pregnant"

Jessica: "well we not getting involved"

Sarah: "even though Noni wants us to pick sides"

Jessica: "which is totally not fair"

Me: "I see"

Jessica: "Enhle is devastated she had to go back to work"

Me: "it wasn't my intention to hurt Enhle but I also love Nzuzo"

Sarah: "shit happens we all know that. Let's just hope you will be able to tame Nzuzo his kind of a known player especially at the hospital"

Me: "I'd rather not talk about this"

Jessica: "fair enough, so I met someone after you left the club"

Sarah: "she means she took someone home and now they can't get enough of each other"

Jessica: "his been sleeping over since then" she squealed "the sex is amazing Lani Jesus that guy" we laughed

Sarah: "I guess it true what they say about black men"

Jessica: "yes it is I am never going back"

Sarah: "I need to move out of my parents house"

Me: "where you going to stay"

Jessica: "especially with your salary"

Sarah: "I can afford a good flat"

Me: "just shout if you need help"

Sarah; "will do"

Jessica: "I a meeting a client in jhb this weekend we should make it a weekend trip the firm is paying for my accommodation and flights we can share my room"

Sarah: "God! Go shopping in sandton"

Me: "I can get my own room but I'll have to speak to Nzuzo first"

Jessica: "letting him move in was not a good move now you have to ask for permission"

Me: "it's not like that we in a relationship we have a son and Nzuzo has crazy working hours Avery needs someone to look after him"

Sarah: "if you say so but everyone who knows Enhle knows Nzuzo is controlling"

Me: "that was Enhle's Nzuzo not my Nzuzo and you guys don't know him like I know him" they looked at each other and something passed between them but I missed it

Sarah: "okay we going to go with your word"

Me: "thank you" Jessica's phone beeped she looked at it giggling

Jessica: "Ntobeko is so nasty"

Sarah: "we don't want to know" we giggled

Me: "yes we don't"

Jessica: "do not be jealous because I'm getting some"

Me: "I am getting some on the regs in fact"

Sarah: "well I'm having office sex"

Jessica: "with who"

Sarah: "I'm keeping it on the down low for now" she had that slutty smile plastered on her face

Jessica: "I can't believe you right now" I just laughed

Sarah: "Jess you don't have to know everything"

Jessica: "but I want to"

Me: "you so nosey"

Jessica: "no I'm a good friend" we finished lunch over stupid conversations. I left went pass Avery watched his soccer practice then we went back to hospital he was happy that I came. When Nzuzo was done we left when we got home I went to take a bath I got out wore leggings and Nzuzo's t-shirt then I went downstairs he was in the kitchen cooking I wrapped my arms around his waist and put my head on his back

Me: "I missed you so bad today"

Nzuzo: "you not angry at me anymore" I had been ignoring his calls the whole day

Me: "no I'm not"

Nzuzo: "I also missed actually I still miss you" he turned "I love you in my clothes" we kissed he lifted me up putting me on the counter we kissed deeper he had his hand under the t-shirt squeezing my breasts our breaths picked up I wanted him even closer someone cleared their throats Nzuzo pulled back it was Avery I just jumped off the counter went to the tv room. I stayed there until it was dinner time after eating I loaded the dishes we watched tv. Until it was late we all went to our rooms Nzuzo went to bath first I was reading a book

Nzuzo: "how was your lunch" he was coming out the bathroom completely naked

Me: "good baby"

Nzuzo: "I don't trust them"

Me: "give them sometime"

Nzuzo: "I wish you could make other friends" he crawled on the bed and pulled me to the center of it got between my legs

Me: "I like them and they going to jhb this weekend I want to go" he just fell on my body with a sigh

Nzuzo: "I don't want you to go"

Me: "why not"

Nzuzo: "I don't trust them I really don't"

Me: "what could they do to me"

Nzuzo: "what if you go there and Enhle or Noni is there baby they will hurt you and if you keep losing babies you might never be able to fall pregnant"

Me: "you really don't trust them"

Nzuzo: "yes especially right now"

Me: "okay I won't go but you will take me there I want to go shopping"

Nzuzo: "next weekend" he kissed me "this weekend I'm going home this weekend uncle called a meeting with his brothers so we can talk about sending lobola"

Me: "you suck you know that right" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "what did I do now"

Me: "I want my proposal you know with hearts and flowers"

Nzuzo: "and you will get it baby"

Me: "okay make love to me now" he laughed started kissing my neck while playing with my clit

.

Days flew by it was Friday night one of those nights I hated because Nzuzo was working he was pulling in a 24 hour shift Jessica FaceTime me with Sarah when they landed in jhb I was so envious.

On Saturday morning I was woken up by Nzuzo's cold hands as he got in bed I held his hands

Nzuzo: "thembalam"

Me: "how was work" he sighed

Nzuzo: "hectic baby I lost a patient a kid baby Avery's age" I turned to face him

Me: "I'm sorry baby but I'm sure you did everything in your power"

Nzuzo: "it never gets better"

Me: "rest you will wake up feeling a little better"

Nzuzo: "wake me up around 10:00 we have to be there at 13:00"

Me: "ok I love you" he kissed me

Nzuzo: "I love you" he dozed off same time started snoring softly I looked at him brushing his hair I touched his face lightly touching his lips they were slightly parted Nzuzo is a beautiful man I kissed his lips he smiled and held my neck deepening our kiss I pulled back after a short while

Me: "sleep"

Nzuzo: "stop kissing me" his eyes were still closed I gave him a soft peck and got off the bed I went to wash my face and brushed my teeth then went to check on Avery he was up playing need for speed

Me: "did you sleep"

Avery: "yes"

Me: "comeeat" he pointed to a bowl next to him with his head

Avery: "already had cereal I'll have brunch"

Me: "we don't eat in bedrooms"

Avery: "won't happen again" I just walked out he wasn't even looking at me I went to the kitchen made myself a bowl of cereal when I was done I put the dirty clothes in the washer then started cleaning by the time I was done it was 11:00 I went to wake up Nzuzo I went to tell Avery to get ready then joined Nzuzo in the shower

Nzuzo: "peanut is growing" he touched my stomach it was out it looked like I'm constipated instead of pregnant

Me: "I'm naked but the only thing you seeing is your baby" he chuckled and lifted me pressing me on the wall

Nzuzo: "you sexy"

Me: "put me down we running late"

Nzuzo: "too late for at least a quicky"

Me: "yes put me down" he nodded and kissed me hard before putting me down we took a shower got out got dressed I put on a 3 quarter body hugging black dress and a sleeveless olive green coat and black sandals tied my weave into a messy bun I took my handbag went downstairs

Me: "I'm done" they came out from the kitchen eating hot dogs wearing the same clothes

Nzuzo: "let's go"

Me: "did you make one for me" Avery looked at Nzuzo who looked at his roll

Nzuzo: "take mine" like the hell I was going to say no as much as I knew his hungry I also wanted it so I took it

Me: "thank you" we left drove past pick n pay bought some grocery then went past McD drive through got some food we ate on the way in no time we were at KwaDumisa I breathed out as we passed my previous home the house looked deserted but there was kids clothes on the line

Nzuzo: "are you okay"

Me: "I will be, who stays there"

Nzuzo: "last I heard she was still renting it to learners"

Me: "how is she"

Nzuzo: "I haven't seen her since that night she brought furniture"

Avery: "daddy I can't believe you grew up in this place it sucks" I just looked straight ahead wiped my tears

Nzuzo: "it's not bad" he slowed down and turned getting in through the gate the house looked so different it was bigger even the rooms that the boys slept in were now bigger it looked beautiful like a house in the suburbs nzuzo muttered a curse as he parked his car

Nzuzo: "baby I had no idea she would be here I don't even know what she's doing here" I looked at him as he got off we all got off Nzuzo's twins came out the house running with other kids I just looked at him Thandi came out as well

Thandi: "oh my God!! Yamkelani" she came to us and gave me a thigh hug "girl you just left! breaking my brother's heart you look so beautiful and grown"

Nzuzo: "let her breath Thandi" she let go off me laughing

Me: "I missed you too Thandi" she laughed harder

Thandi: "I wish you had never left" his aunt came out asking why we won't get in she came to us

Aunt: "aibo is that little Mntungwa he looks just like you Nzuzo come here son" my child just looked at me all confused we were speaking Zulu

Me: "he can't hear you mah"

Aunt: "oh shame his deaf he just needs a ritual" Nzuzo bursted out in laughter

Me: "no he doesn't understand Zulu"

Aunt: "oh hhe Nzuzo's kids, hello son"

Avery: "hello"

Aunt: "get in" Nzuzo took the grocery out in the boot he called some boy over they helped twins came running to him screaming daddy he picked them up Avery just held my hand I looked at my son we smiled at each other and went in Enhle was sitting there having tea with her legs crossed

PART 29

I looked at Enhle as she stood up no lie she was beautiful like really beautiful I'm your typical dark beauty but Enhle is yellow with thick pinkish lips a flat stomach and huge ass and boobs like we the total opposite of each other I don't even know how he was attracted to the both of us

Nzuzo: "sawubona Minenhle"

Enhle; "unjan Mntungwa"

Nzuzo: "I'm fine what are you doing here"

Aunt: "sit down, Yammy come help me in the kitchen"

Nzuzo: "Yammy is pregnant mah she can't stand for long" aunt and Thandi screamed

Enhle: "you made her pregnant Nzuzo" they were already touching my stomach I was just giggling trying to ignore the intense staring between Nzuzo and Enhle

Aunt: "sit I'll make you tea"

Me: "thank you mah" Thandi pulled me to sit with her on the couch

Thandi: "I can't believe you pregnant Yammy with your 2nd born I don't even have a child yet" Nzuzo pulled Enhle outside

Avery: "mom can I get the car keys"

Me: "go ask your dad Avery or go play with the kids outside"

Avery: "I don't understand what they talking"

Me: "try Avery don't be spoilt about it" he shoved his hands in his pocket then looked at me with a raised eyebrow before going out

Thandi: "yoh!!! He is Nzuzo's child no doubt" I sighed

Me: "I should have taught him zulu"

Thandi: "yes you should have but you still can. So tell me where have you been, how are you? And why did you leave my brother behind"

Me: "my father came to get us I finished my matric in Nigeria then went to London I've been there until this year" she held my hands

Thandi: "I am so glad you well Yamkelani, are you happy?"

Me: "yes I am"

Thandi: "good you deserve happiness"

Me: "did he love her"

Thandi: "yes but she was never you when you left you took a piece of him he is finally complete"

Me: "he loved her actually he still cares"

Thandi: "you know Nzuzo is caring and loving plus she's the mother of his children he will always care"

Me: "I guess I have to accept that she will never go away"

Thandi: "yes just kill her with kindness" I smiled

Me: "I missed you Thandi you have to visit us"

Thandi: "I'll come and see how the rich lives" we laughed

Me: "don't be silly"

Thandi: "I need to find a job somewhere else teaching at Siphaphemi is not good I can't even sleep out if by 18:00 I'm not back dad calls yelling Yammy I'm so old"

Me: "so you don't really get some"

Thandi: "none!!" We laughed we were still laughing when Enhle got in followed by Nzuzo her eyes were red I could tell she has been crying

Enhle: "is mah still in the kitchen Thandi"

Thandi: "yes" she nodded and went in the kitchen

Nzuzo: "are you okay baby" he kneeled next to me

Me: "yes what about you" he untied my coat resting his head on my stomach

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" I brushed his head

Me: "it's okay I'm not angry"

Nzuzo: "I'm still sorry" Enhle came out the kitchen

Enhle: "bye" Nzuzo removed his head from my stomach

Nzuzo: "I'll bring them back tomorrow night"

Enhle: "okay" Nzuzo put his head back on my stomach while brushing my thighs I looked at Enhle as she looked at Nzuzo I cleared my throat she walked out

Aunt: "remove your big head Nzuzo you going to kill my grand baby" we laughed Nzuzo stood up

Nzuzo: "my head is not big mah"

Aunt: "yes it huge!" Thandi and I laughed harder

Nzuzo: "baby you also laughing at me"

Me: "mah is right your head is big" he touched his heart

Nzuzo: "you hurting me Avery's mom" I just giggled shyly

Thandi: "big head"

Nzuzo: "shut and move go sit somewhere else I want to sit next to my woman" he pulled her up and sat next to me

Thandi: "you such a bully Nzuzo you stay with her"

Nzuzo: "she's mine"

Thandi: "mxm" she went to sit down just as the uncles got in we exchanged greetings then Thandi and I went outside we sat under the tree watching the kids play soccer while the twins cheered on

Me: "the twins are beautiful and happy"

Thandi; "they happy kids always laughing and running around"

Me: "I ran into Sbu the other day"

Thandi: "is he still in love with you" I pushed her lightly laughing

Me: "don't be silly"

Thandi: "I'm being honest, your mom is back"

Me; "hhu"

Thandi: "with a kid"

Me: "what?!"

Thandi: "she is so beautiful Lani and she's just a baby your mother has different men coming in and out that house people are even saying she's selling sex" I just bursted out in tears as the thoughts of my baby sister being raped having a grown man on top of her Thandi tried hushing me but it only made it worse she ended up screaming for Nzuzo who came out running

Nzuzo: "I'm here baby okay don't cry I'm here"

Me: "ba....baby I c....an...t breath" I was hyperventilating

Nzuzo: "Lani look at me" I did "take in a long breath then breath out slowly" I did struggling a little bit finally my breathing got normal he wrapped his arms around me brushing my back "talk to me baby"

Me: "I wana go home"

Nzuzo: "ok we will leave now just give me few minutes"

Thandi: "you can come lie down in my room"

Nzuzo: "do you want that baby"

Me: "yes" he nodded and helped me stand up we went to thandi's room he put me under the comforter

Nzuzo: "I love you okay and I'll be in the lounge just scream if you need me"

Me: "okay" he kissed my forehead

Nzuzo: "sleep baby" he walked out I kept on thinking about the kid my mother has I don't know why God keeps allowing her to give birth when she's clearly not meant to be a mother.

When I woke up it was dark in the room I switched on the bed side lamp Avery and the twins were asleep next to me I got off the bed stretched I put on my shoes went out. I found everyone in the lounge the other uncles had left

Nzuzo: "hey you up" I nodded went to sit next to him

Aunt: "I'll dish up for you"

Me: "thank you" she stood up going to the kitchen

Uncle: "how is the little Mntungwa treating you Yamkelani"

Nzuzo: "it's a girl"

Me: "just right"

Thandi: "isn't it early to know the gender"

Me: "it is he just wants a girl"

Uncle: "you have enough girls Nzuzo you need boys who will carry on your surname. While still on that surname topic we want to have a ritual done for Phiwokuhle"

Me: "I will have to speak to my father but I don't see any problem with that"

Uncle: "good" aunty brought my food I ate just a little then took it to the kitchen Nzuzo followed me I started washing the dishes

Nzuzo: "you hardly ate"

Me: "I want a burger not rice" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "will get it on our way home"

Me: "the kids are still asleep"

Nzuzo: "they will sleep in the car, I'm sorry I told Enhle to leave the girls without talking you"

Me: "it's okay baby it will be good for all of us to spend time together" he nodded

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I spoke to Thandi she says mom is back" he huffed

Nzuzo: "I know she just told me, what do you want us to do about it"

Me: "I will never forgive myself if I were to leave her there with that woman"

Nzuzo: "so what do we do"

Me: "go get her"

Nzuzo: "she doesn't know us and do you think your mother would let us take her"

Me: "she will be happy to let us leave with her"

Nzuzo: "ok we will go when you done doing the dishes then we can come back for the kids"

Me: "okay thank you" he kissed my cheek when I was done doing the dishes we drove there because it was dark when we parked there the door opened mom was standing there she looked awful her beauty was fading

Nzuzo: "are you sure you want to do this" I nodded we got off

Mom: "oh it you what do you want"

Me: "hi to you too"

Mom: "I see you still sleeping your way to the top"

Me: "I'm not you thenjiwe so watch yourself"

Mom: "mxm! What do you want or you hear to gloat"

Me: "I want my sister"

Mom: "Masisi left with you"

Me: "the other one"

Mom: "oh that annoying thing go take her she must be asleep in her room"

Me: "you just useless" I pushed her aside went in I found her asleep on the floor in the room Masisi and I used the share the house was a sticking mess with no furniture I lifted her up she looked so skinny with long hair she was coloured went out nzuzo took her

Me: "where's her birth certificate" she went in the house Nzuzo had put her in the car when mom came out she gave me the certificate she was just 5

Mom: "uhm Yamkelani can I have some cash" I looked at her shaking my head I went to the car took my wallet from my handbag there was r630

Me: "you got cash"

Nzuzo: "really"

Me: "please" he took out his wallet emptied it the money came to r1900 I gave it to her she didn't even say thank you she just went in the house banging the door

Nzuzo: "you see"

Me: "can we just go home please" we got in the car as it started nosipho woke up she looked around and started crying

Nosipho: "where is mom? Where you taking me?!"

Me: "Nosi baby don't cry it's okay you safe with me I'm your sister okay Yamkelani and this is my husband Nzuzo"

Nosi: "where is mom"

Me: "you going to stay with us now" she cried harder when Nzuzo parked I went in the backseat "Nosipho sisi don't cry okay please I'm your sister and I will take care of you"

Nosi: "where is mom" I sighed

Me: "she's gone okay she let me take you because I can take care of you, you going to stay with me and my family which is also your family okay"

Nosi: "I'm scared"

Me: "don't be scared I will never hurt you or let someone hurt you"

Nosi: "mom hurts me" she lifted her dress up her body was filled with bruises I looked away wiping my tears and biting my lip so I won't let out a sob

Me: "I will never let anything hurt you" she nodded I hugged her tightly the doors opened "sit here okay we going home"

Nosi: "okay" I got off Avery got in and Nzuzo put the twins in I went in the house said my goodbyes we left. As soon as we got out the gravel all the kids went back to sleep. We drove past steers got some burgers then went home I put the twins in bed Avery just went straight to bed as soon as he got in the house I stayed in the kitchen watching Nosipho eat like it the last day on earth she finished her burger

Me: "you full" she shook her head lightly I gave her another she ate half of it

Nosi: "I'm full"

Me: "good come so we can put you to bed" she nodded we went upstairs I gave her a bath I kept on holding my tears after bathing her I got dressed in Avery's pj top she fell asleep immediately I went to my room

Nzuzo: "I brought your food up" I just sank to the floor and cried he lifted me up putting me under the cover he held me rocking us "it's okay I know you hurting and it hard but she's here now with us and you will take care of her treat her right so it will be okay"

Me: "she's covered in bruises Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "we will take her to the pediatrician tomorrow have her checked out babe but please all this stress is not good for the baby"

Me: "it's not fair"

Nzuzo: "I know thembalam but she has you know everything will be fine"

Me: "I should have gone to get her earlier"

Nzuzo: "you didn't know baby please calm down"

Me: "atleast Masisi had me Nosipho had no one"

Nzuzo: "and now she has a family, Lani love please calm down so you can eat and sleep" trust my tears to stop immediately, I pulled out of his arms sat up took my food do you know how delicious steers king burger is you bite this side and everything wants to come out the other side after eating I drank water then burped Nzuzo chuckled

Me: "it's your baby not me"

Nzuzo: "I didn't say anything"

Me: "then why you chuckling"

Nzuzo: "because I love you"

Me: "oh it's funny" I got on top of him he wiped the sauce with his thumb on my lips then licked it

Nzuzo: "I love you and you deserve so much love and happiness"

Me: "you give that to me" he rolled over then took my clothes off

Nzuzo; "let's sleep it's still a day tomorrow"

Me: "okay, I love you" he kissed me and pulled me to him holding me from behind we slept.

PART 30

I woke up in the morning feeling nauseous I took my olive soap smelt it sniffing hard I felt better Nzuzo's aunt had given it to me last night, I looked at Nzuzo he was looking up at me smiling

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "this is definitely my last pregnancy"

Nzuzo: "yes it is" he grabbed my thigh and pulled me down "how you feeling"

Me: "I feel pregnant"

Nzuzo; "you are pregnant my love"

Me: "I need to go check on the kids then make breakfast"

Nzuzo: "we need to get a helper"

Me: "yes I'll call the agency tomorrow but for now I'll put her at the daycare in the hospital"

Nzuzo: "that's good might as well take her to the doctor tomorrow at work"

Me: "okay, I'll need to go buy her clothes today"

Nzuzo: "does that put me at baby sitting duty"

Me: "yes or we can all go to the mall catch a movie do some shopping for all the kids"

Nzuzo: "sounds great to me" he got on top of me

Me: "not to bring the mood down but I feel bloated if you don't get off me I'll fart" he just got off me laughing

Nzuzo: "so not ready for this!" He was already covering his nose I laughed and without meaning to I just farted you know that morning loud smelly fart he got off the bed fast coughing and opened the windows

Me; "I'm sorry"

Nzuzo; "no more eggs for you ms" I covered my face with my hands

Me: "it's your baby nzuzo!!"

Nzuzo: "kudlaliwe ngo ma'Khumalo lana" he was laughing

Me: "mxm! Like you don't fart"

Nzuzo: "I might fart but baby that was a bomb"

Me: "you going to make me cry" he wouldn't stop laughing he even had the balcony door open he was standing next to it

Nzuzo; "don't cry"

Me: "come to bed"

Nzuzo: "2 more minutes" I looked at him frowning "okay 1 more minute"

Me: "Nzuzo!" He came to the bed "I'm sleepy hold me please"

Nzuzo; "you have to eat first"

Me: "I'm not hungry" someone knocked "come in" the door opened Avery was standing there

Avery: "morning"

us: "morning"

Avery: "we hungry and the milk in the fridge is finished"

Nzuzo: "there's milk in the cupboard"

Avery: "it's too far"

Me: "your dad will come get it for you" he nodded and left closing the door behind himself

Nzuzo: "I'll be back" he kissed my cheek and left I just got off the bed made it then went to shower I got out put on shorts and a tank top I went downstairs I found all of them eating around the counter

Me: "thought you were coming back up"

Nzuzo: "I got hungry"

Nosi: "hello sisi" her voice was so sweet

Me: "hello baby" I brushed her hair made myself a bowl of all bran I sat down. After we all finished eating I went to bath the girls got them dressed I took Avery's white chine color shirt got Nosi dressed in it and it looked like a short dress I tied her hair into a ponytail. I went to change into a lose maxi dress left my weave lose we all left for gateway I was carrying Nosi since she wasn't wearing shoes we bought clothes first I put some sandals and panty on her when we were done shopping Nzuzo took the clothes to the car while we went to spur we ordered after eating we watched a movie then bought take aways for dinner we left the mall started with dropping off the twins Enhle came to stand on my window while Nzuzo was taking out plastics that had the twins things

Enhle: "don't think you going to play happy family with my children, we shall see if that child in your stomach will make it to 6 months" she clicked her tongue and walked away honestly I was scared when Nzuzo was done we went home. Avery went to do his homework Nzuzo was watching soccer I had Nosi sitting down between my legs I was doing her hair making conrows

Nzuzo: "uncle said to ask if it possible for your father to come this side then the lobola can take place this side"

Me: "I'll ask him but it shouldn't be a problem"

Nzuzo: "good I want this done next month then we can get married"

Me: "I'm not marrying you without the proposal" he chuckled taking a sip of his corona

Nzuzo: "you ain't gotta worry" his phone rang "yes But I'm not on call Get dr dlamini Really? Well I'm also not in durban Shit I'm coming" he stood up "I have to go baby emergency I love you" he held my chin and kissed me

Me: "I love you too"

Nzuzo: "goodnight Nosi"

Nosi: "goodnight bhuti" he left after grabbing his car keys

Me: "are you hungry" she giggled

Nosi: "no"

Me: "so why you laughing"

Nosi: "you keep on feeding me I'm not going to fit in my new clothes"

Me: "than I'll buy you new clothes lots of new clothes"

Nosi: "okay" I sprayed her hair then pulled her up she really was beautiful

Me: "I'm done, now come so we can call our other sister"

Nosi: "okay" we went up to my room I took my laptop called Masisi on Skype she answered

Masisi: "hello sis woah whose the cute baby"

Nosi: "why is she on the tv" she was whispering I giggled

Me: "this is our little sister Nosipho I got her yesterday" Masisi face changed

Masisi: "what do you mean" she started speaking in English

Me: "your mother had a child I found out yesterday and ofcos she wasn't treating her right so I took her with me"

Masisi: "fuck!! That woman should be killed"

Me; "I know right"

Masisi: "who ill treats something so adorable" I pulled nosi's cheek she giggled

Me: "say hello Nosi"

Nosi: "hello"

Masisi: "hey" we spoke for about an hour then logged out I called Avery we had dinner after dinner we all went to bed.

.

In the morning I woke Avery up then went to bath after bathing I went to bath Nosi got dressed then I went to get dressed when I was done I made breakfast we ate after eating I packed their lunches we left. Dropped Avery off first then went to the hospital

Nosi: "you work here"

Me: "yes baby"

Nosi: "I'm going to sit with you"

Me: "no you going to stay with other kids until we go back home"

Nosi: "okay" I went to leave her at daycare

Me: "I will come check on you" she nodded I spoke to the sitter then kissed Nosi goodbye, I went to my office after about an hour or two in Nzuzo got in he threw himself on the couch

Me: "morning baby"

Nzuzo: "remind me again why didn't I take a simple 08:00 to 16:00 office job" I chuckled walked over to him I took off his sneakers and coat I pulled a throw over him

Me: "sleep for a little baby"

Nzuzo: "please get Sthe to buy me some food I haven't eaten since we had lunch yesterday"

Me: "what do you want"

Nzuzo: "burger and fries from mugg n bean"

Me: "okay" I pecked his lips then went back to my desk I called Sthe over told him to go buy Nzuzo food I went back to work. I woke Nzuzo up when his food came he started eating immediately I kept on staring at him

Nzuzo: "you should have bought your own"

Me: "I didn't think about it"

Nzuzo: "come" I went to sit on his lap we shared his food "I'll be skinny by the time you give birth"

Me: "and I'll be fat" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "you already in your 2nd trimester but you haven't gained any weight"

Me: "well with Avery I picked up weight around 6 months"

Nzuzo: "mmh its this tiny body of yours"

Me: "thought you loved my body" okay I hate to admit it but insecurities were hitting me hard after seeing Enhle

Nzuzo: "I love your body baby you know that I actually cherish your body" he fed me few fries I shook my head "and now"

Me: "I'm full" he nodded I went back to my work after eating he slept again. He was woken up by his pager

Nzuzo: "fuck this shit" he kissed me

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "love you too" we kissed again then he left.

Time flew by everything was good Nosi like daycare so we didn't get a helper. I was now 5 months pregnant I was definitely showing my dad came over with uncle John and Justin and Ray it was the weekend of lobola even Clair came so did Masisi and aunty Lacey trust my family to come out and behave like lobola was the wedding itself and ofcos Mayowo didn't come claiming someone needs to be at home. Only Clair and her baby stayed over in my house the rest of the family stayed at the hotel it was kinda funny because the only thing my family knew about lobola was what we found on the Internet and what Nzuzo told us but it all went well by Saturday afternoon we were all having lunch together over light conversations with lots of jokes dad and Justin worshipped Nzuzo after lunch my family gave the khumalo's gifts as part of the introduction ceremony that happens between the brides family and the grooms family in our culture. Sunday we took groceries Nzuzo's family like a truck full of groceries for umbondo they gave out blankets a goat was slaughtered we left at night. My family left Monday night I was little sad about dad leaving so he stayed behind for the rest of the week he left Friday night.

Nzuzo: "woah! Finally I get my family back" I giggled and snuggled closer to him we were watching a movie it was a cold night Avery and Nosi were also on their own couch covered in blanket

Me: "I'll tell dad you said that"

Nzuzo: "I love your father but I hate that the only place I get to kiss you is our room and he steals my son"

Me: "no he does not he just has more time than you"

Nzuzo: "let's get married next month"

Me: "trying to get me angry" he laughed and kissed my head

Nzuzo: "you already mine"

Me: "Avery tell daddy to know when to joke" Avery laughed Nosi was slowly learning English as much as Avery was learning Zulu

Avery: "you heard her daddy"

Nzuzo: "yeah yeah" he kissed my cheek

Me: "Nzuzo I promise you I won't marry you"

Nzuzo: "I know"

Me: "good" I got on top of him putting my head on his chest he pulled the blanket upper

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "heart bun"

Nzuzo: "Avery go get your mother's gaviscone in the bathroom cupboard"

Avery: "okay"

Me: "it's not that bad"

Nzuzo: "you wouldn't be groaning if it wasn't"

Me: "I'm going to die" I joked

Nzuzo: "good I need a new girlfriend" I punched his chest he laughed

Me: "I'll kill you"

Nzuzo: "you will be dead" he flexed his hip

Me: "stop"

Nzuzo: "I'm not doing anything"

Me: "yes you are" Avery came back I took the medicine we continued watching the movie in silence I was slowly falling asleep on top of Nzuzo.

.

The following day I was woken up by a hot tongue on my cake I held his head pushing him deeper he chuckled and ate me up after coming loudly he came up to my face his face covered with the evidence of my orgasm I wiped it then we kissed I could taste myself on his lips and tongue he slowly entered me going deep my back arched and I cried out

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you more" he kissed me again and started moving in and out slowly while we kept our eyes on each other when I was close I shut my eyes and held on to him he went in faster and deeper with my legs locked behind his neck I came hard my body was even shaking he came to lay by my side then lifted my leg up he entered from behind he went on pounding me hard while squeezing my breasts until we came the same time

Nzuzo: "morning mrs Khumalo" I turned to face him with a smile

Me: "amazing morning love" he gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "I made you breakfast it probably cold now"

Me: "why didn't you tell me before"

Nzuzo: "I came up to wake up but things got a little heated" I got off the bed put on leggings and a vest he was looking at me with a smile still on the bed completely naked

Me: "what"

Nzuzo: "you beautiful"

Me: "I'm pregnant now get dressed I want to eat" he jumped off the bed put on shorts and vests we went downstairs found the kids mixing something in a big bowl

Me: "what you doing"

Nosi: "baking sisi"

Avery: "we found the mixture in the cupboard and Nosi thought we should bake for you"

Me: "please don't burn each other"

Nosi: "bhuti said he will help"

Me: "okay then" I sat on the high chair Nzuzo gave me my food, after eating I went back to sleep I woke up later went to shower Nzuzo joined me

Me: "what do you want"

Nzuzo: "just bathing to my baby"

Me: "which one"

Nzuzo: "both of you" I just shook my head giggling "I'm taking you out"

Me: "you called the baby sitter"

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "okay" I turned and kissed him my hormones were just playing tricks on me I was so horny i deepened the kiss while playing with his dick he pulled

Nzuzo: "you going to fall and hurt the baby"

Me: "you don't want me"

Nzuzo: "I do but I don't want you to get hurt"

Me: "mxxm" I rinsed the soap of my body and got out wrapped a towel around myself I went to stand by the balcony just letting the afternoon cool air hit me i was feeling really hot and dizzy I felt his arms circling around my waist

Nzuzo: "I know you hate me right now and I'm sorry but the shower is slippery you could get hurt" I sighed

Me: "I know, I'm sorry too"

Nzuzo: "you hate me?"

Me: "no I love you but I don't feel so good"

Nzuzo: "what wrong"

Me: "the world is spinning" he lifted me up and put me on the bed he unwrapped my towel I was sweating he felt my forehead

Nzuzo: "shit baby you burning up"

Me: "I really don't feel good Nzuzo" I leaned over the bed and threw up he went in the bathroom I felt a shot of excruciating pain on my lower stomach and cried out he came out of the bathroom with his work bag running

Nzuzo: "shit baby you bleeding" I tried sitting up but he pushed me back down he took his phone I touched myself down there my hand came back up with blood clots I just passed out

PART 31

I work up feeling groggy my throat was hurting I looked around I was in a hospital room Nzuzo was sleeping on the chair I tried talking but I couldn't I had a tube down my throat I sat there with tears running down my face unable to move Nzuzo was a far from me I kept on pressing the alarm button but no one was coming I started gasping for air i could my pulse racing the machines went off Nzuzo woke up and jumped off the chair

Nzuzo: "baby calm down" he held my hand "please calm down" he was looking deep into my eyes I looked at him slowly coming down the nurse rushed in

Nurse: "Dr Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "call Dr Harper" the nurse walked out "I'm going to pull the tube out baby okay it might hurt a little" I nodded he slowly pulled out the tube I ignored the pain

Me: "I ne.." I cleared my throat "water" he nodded and poured some on the glass he helped me drink it with the straw until I felt better

Nzuzo: "how you feeling love"

Me: "my baby"

Nzuzo: "he is fine baby"

Me: "he?" He smiled and kissed my dry lips

Nzuzo: "yes he" the door opened and the doctor got in

Dr: "Dr Demus how we feeling"

Me: "a little groggy how is my son"

Dr: "I see Khumalo shared the news"

Me: "yes, please tell me why I was bleeding" she sighed and pulled the ultrasound close Nzuzo pulled down the blanket and pulled up my robe she poured the gel on my lower stomach

Dr: "you hear that the heartbeat it a little weak the placenta was detaching itself that's what caused you to bleed but luckily we managed to stop it, we have to keep you in for a few days until we sure that it won't move again and his heartbeat is stronger"

Me: "what caused it"

Dr: "we not sure right now I can't find anything and Khumalo said you didn't fall so we just going at it blind right now" I nodded Nzuzo wiped the gel off my stomach "just relax you need to tone it down"

Me: "but not bed rest right"

Dr: "not bed rest just less staircases more elevators you know those sort of things"

Nzuzo: "can you give us a letter to give to Hr about her taking time off until her maternity leave is here"

Me: "the doctor is not putting me on bed rest Nzuzo I can work until 7 months"

Dr: "you already 5 months and 3 weeks you going to spend another week here which means you will have a month of work so you might as well stay at home"

Me: "but I don't need to"

Dr: "no you don't"

Nzuzo: "love please you can get a chance to plan our wedding"

Me: "you haven't proposed" the doctor giggled

Nzuzo: "I was going to but you got sick I had the whole thing planned out"

Me: "oh"

Nzuzo: "please take the leave early" I sighed

Me: "okay I'll take it" he kissed my forehead

Nzuzo: "thank you"

Dr: "I'll work on that and I'll see you when I'm doing my rounds Dr Demus"

Me: "ok thank you" she nodded and walked out I shifted a bit Nzuzo got on the bed I put my head on his chest he breathed out

Nzuzo: "you scared me so badly"

Me: "I'm sorry baby"

Nzuzo: "don't apologize"

Me: "who are the kids with"

Nzuzo: "they at daycare"

Me: "Nzuzo it nighttime"

Nzuzo: "what was I supposed to do"

Me: "get me food and take the kids home Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I can't leave you her by yourself"

Me: "I'm old I can take care of myself just take the kids home please" he sighed

Nzuzo: "what do you want to eat"

Me: get me a burger and ribs from steers with extra fries"

Nzuzo: "anything else I'll only be back in the morning"

Me: "maybe you can get me some chicken and mushroom pie"

Nzuzo: "okay" he kissed me slowly before leaving. After he left I sat there with my own thoughts I couldn't believe I almost lost my baby yeah sure at first I wasn't crazy about him but I loved him now he was my Nzuzo 0.3 and I almost lost him I rocked myself back n forth until I fell asleep.

I was woken up by someone shaking me it was Nzuzo and the kids

Me: "hey"

Avery: "you had us worried mom"

Nosi: "uryt sisi"

Me: "I'm okay sorry I had you guys worried but I'm okay"

Nosi: "are you sure"

Me: "yes Nosi" she nodded

Avery: "what was wrong"

Me: "nothing just go home and sleep okay"

Them: "okay"

Avery: "when will you come home"

Me: "soon don't worry dad okay" they nodded "I love you guys"

Them; "love you too" Nzuzo kissed my forehead

Nzuzo: "see you in a few hours" as they were walked out I called nzuzo back "what's wrong"

Me: "kiss me" he chuckled and cupped my face we kissed slowly for such a long time I pulled back when he deepened it "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you too" he kissed my forehead then left I opened the tv and started eating the doctor came in as I was practically burying my face on the ribs she just laughed

Dr: "see little Khumalo has an appetite"

Me; "huge one" she checked me out gave me my medicine

Dr: "well all is well so I'll see you in the morning"

Me: "thank you Harper"

Dr: "goodnight mrs Khumalo"

Me: "not yet!" She walked out laughing I carried on with my food and tv.

.

I was woken up by something moving in my mouth I opened my eyes it was Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "you fell asleep with food in your mouth"

Me: "oh it's you.."

Nzuzo: "it's not my baby" he cut me off we laughed

Me: "the pills knocked me off" he took a wiper and wiped my face

Nzuzo: "so you've been sleeping since last night"

Me: "yeah"

Nzuzo: "I brought you clothes and some food"

Me: "thank you, where are the kids"

Nzuzo: "at home with Thandi since schools are closed she's going to stay with them until Harper discharges you"

Me: "okay that's good"

Nzuzo: "sit up so you can eat Harper will be here for rounds" I did he pulled the table over me put breakfast from mugg n bean and fruit juice along with tea I started eating

Me: "you 3 slept well"

Nzuzo: "yeah baby we were good"

Me: "I missed you at night"

Nzuzo: "I'll sleep here tonight"

Me: "okay I'd like that very much"

Nzuzo: "I love you" he kissed the side of my head

Me: "you love me"

Nzuzo: "yes thembalam"

I got discharged 3 days later my little Khumalo was good even though I had to go for a check up every two weeks. It was Saturday night when I woke up from my afternoon nap there was a beautiful navy dress laid over the couch I went to take a shower as I got out Nzuzo was sitting on the bed dressed in black slim fit chinos and a black shirt tucked in with navy coat he stood up and held my waist

Me: "are we going somewhere"

Nzuzo: "yes get dressed" I giggled excitedly

Me: "okay" he kissed me shortly "you look sexy" he winked

Nzuzo: "and I'm all yours"

Me: "yes you are" I held his coat and kissed him again after awhile I pulled back and gave him a soft peck "now go away" he walked out laughing I lotioned got dressed in the dress it was body hugging just below the knees with a gold zip on the back it was long sleeve it also had a v in front with the pregnancy my boobs were bigger so it looked so good my stomach looked so cute I put on my nude platform heels I left my weave lose I took my nude clutch bag went downstairs I found Nzuzo waiting at the bottom of the stairs with red roses

Nzuzo: "you look beautiful baby"

Me: "thank you" he gave me the roses I kissed his cheek he took my hand and got out the back door instead of the front I got a little curious and disappointed but when we got to the pool side I just melted the pool was covered in flower petals and lights the way to a round dinner table was also covered in Rose petals there was a candlelight dinner for two set up slow music was playing in the background he pulled a chair for me I sat down, some guy dressed up formally brought out drinks we had beautiful 4 course meal by the time we were done I was too full the guy who was serving us was still standing there but a bit far another guy dressed in chef clothes came out

Chef: "I hope dinner was satisfactory"

Nzuzo: "yes it was thank you bru"

Chef: "pleasure dr Khumalo we'll be on our way now" Nzuzo nodded the chef and waiter left

Me: "you got a chef"

Nzuzo: "yes come" he stood up and pulled me up we slow danced

Me: "thank you tonight was beautiful"

Nzuzo: "you deserve all the beautiful things and more"

Me: "I deserve you and I have that's all that matters"

Nzuzo: "I love you I've loved you since I was 15 I knew that if I was to get married it would be you, the day you told me you love me the first time I thought I could never get better but then you gave a copy of myself, the years we spent apart were the worst and I pray to God everyday that it doesn't happen again because if it does I won't survive, I love you so much Yamkelani I would go through the ends of time to make sure you happy you my family my life thembalam" he went on his knee I bit my lip hard to stop crying he pulled out a ring box and opened it there was the most beautiful pear shaped purple diamond engagement ring "will you do me the honor and make me the happiest man on earth for the rest of our lives, will you marry me?" I nodded fast with tears running down my face he put the ring on my finger

Me: "oh God!" He stood up and kissed long and hard I heard footsteps

Avery: "she said yes daddy?" I tried pulling out of the kiss but he deepened it

Nosi: "bhuti!!" Thandi was just giggling eventually he let go

Nzuzo: "yes she said yes" he fist pumped him Nzuzo lifted me up taking me to our room and we made love the whole night.

.

2 months later it was the weekend my family was in durban everyone who could come came Masisi was done with exams so she moved in with me she was accepted at Ukzn Howard. It was the weekend my traditional wedding was taking place I was both excited and nervous I was 8 months pregnant I wasn't huge but my stomach was out there. Friday during the day we left for Dumisa using 5 cars I was driving with Nosi Masisi and Clair as we drove past home we saw sweeping the yard we all saw her but nobody said anything when we got to Nzuzo's house there was some singing it was weird because once again we were clueless anyway the cows were slaughtered they made drink inyongo trust me that shit was awful imphepho was also burnt I was welcomed to the family and introduced to the Khumalo ancestors as the wife/daughter of the family we went back to durban at night.

The following day we woke up early we had breakfast than got ready everyone was wearing Nigerian attires I was in a traditional Zulu outfit it was brown and cream they loaded everything in the delivery truck and we left we got there it was packed you know how black people don't even need an invitation they just need to see a tent and they will show up, umabo took place we were having lunch when Akhona came to kneel next to me

Akhona; "your mother is outside she's causing a scene she's drunk and she says she wants to see you and she wants her lobola money" I just looked at dad my tears were already falling

Masisi: "I'll handle it" she stood up and dad followed her so did Justin Claire was just brushing my back I put my face on her shoulder and cried harder Nzuzo came to us he had changed earlier on he was wearing ibheshu and all topless

Nzuzo: "come with me" he took my hand we went to his back room "I'm sorry this happened Akhona should have called me not ran to you"

Me: "it's not your fault" he took off my clothes

Nzuzo: "let's nap" I nodded he wiped my tears "I'm really sorry baby you shouldn't be crying especially today"

Me: "it's okay" we got under the covers he held me from behind we stayed in silence until I fell asleep.

When I woke up it was dark I was in bed alone I got off the bed switched the lights on went to the lounge switched on the lights there as well Nzuzo had expanded his room it was bigger there was also a lounge I took my phone after putting on his t-shirt and sweatpants I went to sit in the lounge watching tv I had an sms from dad saying they left Nzuzo didn't want to wake me up I should call. I felt like crying but I didn't after awhile Nzuzo came in with food. We stayed for a week at Dumisa then went back home.

2 weeks later I was put into induced labor I gave birth to a beautiful chubby baby boy we named him Liam Nzuzo Khumalo

PART 32

We were still at the hospital after 3 days of giving birth, Nzuzo's family was here I pretended to be asleep I just didn't want to talk to anyone honestly I hadn't been feeling okay I knew there was something wrong with me I just couldn't point it out someone shook and Nzuzo called out my name softly I kept my eyes shut and didn't say anything

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry guys she's tired"

Aunt: "she must be tired we understand, just let her know we were here"

Uncle: "and that we grateful for the new family addition"

Nzuzo: "I will"

Sfiso: "his so adorable" Nzuzo chuckled

Nzuzo: "I have good genes bra I'm a strong man" they all shared a chuckled

Thandi: "so modest"

Aunt: "we should leave and let Lani rest in peace" they all agreed and walked out when there was silence I just cried myself to sleep as usual.

I was woken up by the doctor Nzuzo was looking at me sitting in the corner with Liam on his chest

Dr: "how we feeling Lani?"

Me: "I'm okay when can I go home"

Dr: "just one more night then you can leave in the morning just waiting for some results the lab will have them out tomorrow" she was busy checking me out

Me: "okay"

Dr: "are you okay like emotionally" Dr Harper was such a caring soul but I didn't need her meddling at that moment

Me: "I'm fine really" she nodded and walked out with her interns Nzuzo stood up walked to me

Nzuzo: "wana try feeding him"

Me: "no I'm fine" he sighed

Nzuzo: "baby this is the forth day you haven't even touch him"

Me: "I'm not ready Nzuzo!!"

Nzuzo: "okay I'm sorry" even after giving birth I screamed when they tried putting him on my chest I just don't want him near me I'm not ready

Me: "fine"

Nzuzo: "would you like me to get you something"

Me: "some peace and quiet stop yapping and get him to stop crying"

Nzuzo: "his not even crying"

Me: "Nzuzo please!" He looked at me with a raised eyebrow

Nzuzo: "I'll be at peds call if you need me" he walked out I took my phone and started chatting with Sbu ignoring everyone else

Sbu: "kanti when are you getting out of there" Sbu and I had gotten a little close just like before I left with my father

Me: "they saying tomorrow morning, I just want to be out of here"

Sbu: "lol, for someone who works at the hospital you sure hate it"

Me: "you have no idea"

Sbu: "should I come check on you"

Me: "if you want nzuzo to beat your ass yeah come through 💎"

Sbu: "💎 he don't scare me"

Me: "since when?!!"

Sbu; "since I grew up"

Me: "whatever"

Sbu: "how is Liam?"

Me: "don't know"

Sbu: "still won't bond with him"

Me: "I feel like his not my son"

Sbu: "💎 come here I'll put my son in you" I cracked up

Me; "💎💎 don't be stupid"

Sbu: "just tryna make you laugh Lani"

Me: "I know bubu"

Sbu; "good because you need it"

Me: "you the best"

Sbu: "in every way baby"

Me; "don't go starting"

Sbu: "why I shouldn't I Lani?, you know I love you"

Me: "I love you too big brother!"

Sbu: "💎 mxm you idiot!!"

Me: "what?"

Sbu: "you suck you know that right"

Me: "I know"

Sbu: "mxm"

Me: "I'm gona sleep"

Sbu: "goodnight beautiful"

Me: "goodnight" I logged out of whatsapp looked at the food next to me I just frowned pulled the blanket over my head went to sleep

.

I woke up in the morning nzuzo wasn't in my room as usual I took my toiletries went to take s bath, I got done put on my grey Nike sweatpants and matching sweater with slippers I was packing my bag as the dr got in with her interns

Dr; "Lani, how you feeling today"

Me: "I just wana go home Harper my bag is already packed"

Dr: "well I can't discharge you right now"

Me: "do you really want to piss me off Harper when I handle your salary" she chuckled

Dr: "just joking you good to go"

Me: "thank goodness"

Dr: "you really hate us" the door opened Nzuzo got in with Liam "Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "morning" they all exchanged greetings "is my wife going home today"

Dr: "yes"

Nzuzo: "good, you ready baby?"

Me: "yeah"

Nzuzo: "I'll go sign the papers and Liam things up at peds please hold him"

Me: "put him on the bed I'm still packing" he put Liam down and walked out with the doctor I stopped packing walked over to the bed I looked at Liam and all I felt was sadness and anger I could hear him crying I wanted someone to come shut him up I pressed the button but no one was coming I just went

to lock myself in the bathroom crying I heard nzuzo's voice calling out for me I wiped my tears walked out

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "oh I got worried when I couldn't see you"

Me: "he wouldn't stop crying"

Nzuzo: "he wasn't crying when I got here, wait so you ran to the bathroom because he was crying instead of taking him"

Me: "no he was crying while I was in the bathroom"

Nzuzo: "oh okay let's go take him so I'll carry the bags" I nodded and took him it was the first I was holding him we walked out went to the car park he opened the back door for me I got in with his son he put our bags in the backseat then got in

Nzuzo: "you buckled"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "should I go past the shops or you want to go home"

Me: "home" he nodded and drove off in silence just listening to metro fm ask a man was on so this caller called

Caller: "I have an issue, my husband's baby mama poured acid on my thigh and he doesn't want me to press charges" bonang and naked Dj went wild

Me: "would you let me press charges on Enhle if she did that to me" he lowered the volume then changed the station putting the usb on

Nzuzo: "Enhle would never do that"

Me: "say she did"

Nzuzo: "she wouldn't"

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I would kill her myself"

Me: "mmh"

Nzuzo: "what?"

Me: "nothing" he looked at me on the mirror our eyes met

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too"

Nzuzo: "we need a bigger house" my house was 5 bedrooms which means the master bedroom was ours obviously, 1 for Masisi, 1 for Avery, 1 for Nosi and the other was for the twins since they spent almost every weekend with us

Me: "I know"

Nzuzo: "I need you to look at some numbers for me I want to start a supply and construction company but I need your calculator brain first" I giggled he quickly looked back at me smiling "it's good to hear your laugh"

Me: "I'll do it when we get home"

Nzuzo: "okay"

Me: "you got all your paperwork complete"

Nzuzo: "yes I just need you to look at the numbers then I can start applying for tenders"

Me: "I hope everything will be upfront Nzuzo no shady deals we don't need that" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "no shady deals"

Me: "okay" I looked at Liam he was so cute I couldn't understand how something so cute could make me so sad

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "hhu"

Nzuzo: "you crying, what's wrong" I touched my cheek they were wet I wiped of my tears with the back of my hand

Me: "I'm fine"

Nzuzo: "the way you've been using that word this past week it has lost its meaning"

Me: "I'm great"

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "when can we start having sex again" he coughed

Nzuzo: "when you've healed I guess, is your operation not painful"

Me: "not really"

Nzuzo: "maybe few more weeks, are you horny"

Me: "just asking"

Nzuzo: "there's always oral"

Me: "yeah?"

Nzuzo: "yeah"

Me: "okay" he drove up the driveway after opening the gate he parked the car in the garage the kitchen door opened the kids and Masisi came out I opened the door Masisi took Liam as we all exchanged greetings

Avery: "I missed you mommy"

Nosi: "me too"

Me: "I'm back now" we were all walking in the house

Masisi: "how you feeling"

Me: "I'm fine" Nzuzo looked at me squinting "I mean I'm good"

Masisi: "I made brunch should I dish up for you two"

Nzuzo: "yes please"

Me: "I'm full"

Nzuzo: "she will eat" I looked at him to say something but he gave me that I dare you look I just looked away we sat in the tv room Avery had Liam on her lap and Nosi was sitting next to him looking at Liam

Me: "you can't control me nzuzo" I whispered just loud enough for only him to hear

Nzuzo: "making you eat is not controlling you Lani I'm not going to sit here and watch you waste away you haven't eaten a proper meal since you gave birth now you going to sit here and eat before I have you put in a psychiatric evaluation" He spoke through his teeth

Me: "whatever"

Nzuzo: "yeah whatever me but you will eat"

Me: "Nosi baby you ready for school" she breathed in and out heavily

Nosi: "I am sisi Avery said he will look after me" the helper came in with food for nzuzo and me we thanked her she went back out the tv room

Me: "you going to take care of aunt right Avery" they laughed

Avery: "don't call her that mom but yes I'll take care of her" school was starting in a few days I was just picking at my food it was green salad and salmon

Nzuzo: "she's your aunt though"

Avery: "more like little sister"

Masisi: "she is your little sister don't pay attention to your parents"

Me: "and you miss have you registered"

Masisi: "yep and they credited me"

Nzuzo: "that's good"

Me: "looks like everyone is set"

Masisi: "my car got delivered yesterday"

Avery: "it's really nice mommy"

Me: "what car is it"

Masisi: "just a Porsche convertible 2 doors" she gave me a smug grin

Me: "dad is spoiling unnecessary"

Masisi: "I know!" Nzuzo just chuckled

Me: "it's not right" she laughed

Masisi: "I know!" We all just laughed but as soon as Liam started crying I just got irritated then stood up with my food I went out to the pool area I dunked my feet in the water sitting down and continued eating after awhile Nzuzo came out with ice tea

Me: "thank you" he sat next to me and put his feet in the water

Nzuzo: "should I be worried Lani and be honest"

Me: "he makes me sad"

Nzuzo: "how so"

Me: "I can't explain it but when I look at him I get really sad then when he starts crying i just get irritated I can't Nzuzo" I broke down he just held me as I cried my eyes out "what's wrong with me Nzuzo why do I feel this way about my child my own child Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "it's okay baby it's okay just give it time you will warm up to him"

Me; "what if I don't"

Nzuzo: "then I'll get a psychologist baby everything will be fine"

Me: "I want to sleep"

Nzuzo: "you hardly ate"

Me: "I want to sleep!!!"

Nzuzo: "geeze okay don't bite my head off" he stood up and pulled me up we walked to our room, Liam's side cot was connected on my side I just looked at Nzuzo I got in on his side he sighed and went in on my side he pulled me to him and held me until I fell asleep.

.

The following day I basically spent working over nzuzo's business papers and sleeping I didn't even go downstairs. Few days later it was Monday nzuzo was going back to work and the kids were going to start school nzuzo had an early shift so when he kissed me goodbye in the morning Liam was sleeping in his cot I lifted him up went to masisi's room

Masisi: "what"

Me: "Liam" she groaned and moved aside I put Liam next to her she held him it was like this every time nzuzo went to work especially night shifts. I went to wake Avery up when he was in the bathtub I went to wake up Nosi

Me: "wake up baby" she turned and looked the other way "Nosi come on"

Nosi: "mmmh no sisi" she looked so adorable with her hair all over she sat up

Me: "come let's bath"

Nosi: "is it school time already"

Me: "yes" I helped her stand on the bed then took off her jamies I went to give her a bath then I got her dressed in her blue short skirt and white golf t-shirt I blow dried her hair then tied it into two side buns I lifted her off the chair

Me: "you look beautiful" she smiled

Nosi: "thank you" she took her backpack we went downstairs after checking on Avery he was packing his backpack I went to make them a cereal just as the helper got in she was working 07:00 to 16:00 she didn't stay over I went to get dressed while she made them lunch I took a quick shower got out put black ripped boyfriend jean and Nzuzo's white shirt tucked in front and black heels I was tying my hair when Avery came in saying they going to be late I grabbed my bag went downstairs we left I dropped them off then I drove to pavilion I watched a movie when it was finished I had brunch after that I went to watch another movie when it was finished I did some shopping until it was time to pick up the kids I went to pick them up

Me: "how was first day of school"

Avery: "great I missed my friends"

Me: "Nosi?"

Nosi: "it was good"

Me: "should we celebrate?"

Them: "yes"

Avery: "lunch and movie"

Me: "sounds good to me" I drove straight to gateway while listening to them to talk about their first day of school, when we got to gateway we watched a movie then had something to eat after settling the bill we bought ice cream and left going home I found Masisi with Liam in the tv room Liam was sleeping in his sleeper while Masisi was watching tv

Masisi: "you were gone the whole day and you left your phone behind Nzuzo has been worried sick"

Me: "okay"

Masisi: "really Yammy!!! You have a new born for fuck sakes and you just pull that stunt"

Me: "I dare you to raise your voice at me again Masisi I will smack you so hard you will fly back to Lagos"

Masisi: "mxm" she stood up and walked out

Me: "come back here Sne I want to sleep"

Masisi: "his yours not mine" I followed after her

Me: "really after everything I've done for you Sne you going to tell me that shit"

Masisi: "and I'm grateful for all that you've done Yammy and I love my nephews like they my own but come on Yammy seriously!!"

Me: "just watch over him!" I walked upstairs to my room I stripped got in the shower I just sat in it and cried I cried until I couldn't breathe I ended up gasping for air while the cold water fell hard when I could breath properly I stood up shut the tap I dried myself put on roll on then got under the covers after adding an extra blanket I slept almost immediately.

Nzuzo woke up it was already dark he had a plate of food I sat up Liam was asleep in his cot

Nzuzo: "eat" he looked really pissed off I took the food started eating while he watched me I finished the whole plate of rice and beef stew with salads then he gave me a glass of cranberry juice I gulped

it all in one go he took the dishes and walked out I laid on the bed covering myself just stared blankly at the wall until Nzuzo came back I heard his clothes falling he got under the blankets and wrapped his arms around me putting his legs between mine he started kissing my neck his other hand was busy massaging and pinching my breast while the other was rubbing my vajayjay

Me: "I'm not in the mood"

Nzuzo; "I am"

Me: "I'm really not"

Nzuzo: "just oral"

Me: "no"

Nzuzo: "okay" he breathed out and held me tighter "what you did today was wrong on so many levels" I didn't say anything "I know you still up Yamkelani"

Me: "just let me sleep Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "mxxm" he let go of me and got off the bed he grabbed a blanket from the closet and slept on the couch

.

A week later I had my on and off days at times all I did was sleep sometimes I would be up spring cleaning the house but nothing brought me down like hearing Liam cry, I wasn't taking the kids to school anymore Nzuzo did or sometimes Masisi did. This day I was having one of my off days the helper had left Masisi went to gateway for some shopping before she started attending I had to pick up the kids from the hospital Nzuzo was working until too late he couldn't keep them at daycare after 17:00 I put Liam on his car seat and got in the driver's seat I drove out Liam wouldn't stop crying more like screaming I turned the volume up but my car was fitted I could still hear his squeaky annoying voice

Me: "shut up Liam!!!" He cried louder I looked at him he was even turning pink I wasn't even thinking properly all I saw was a delivery truck I was so fucking angry I drove straight onto the truck in full speed when I opened my eyes I was on top of my car with glasses all over I had flew out the windscreen I couldn't move I was in excruciating pain but Liam wasn't crying anymore I just shut my eyes.

PART 33

I woke up in so much pain I opened my eyes but quickly shut them the light was too bright in the room. I opened them again slowly blinking a couple of times I was in a hospital room I looked around and I was all alone I started crying as I remembered why I was in hospital the machines started going off fast and loud I couldn't breathe nurses came rushing in with the doctor

Dr: "Yamkelani we need you to calm down you're in a hospital you were in a car accident" I could hear him but with everyone screaming around the room I was getting weaker I could hear someone screaming we're losing her we're losing then I passed out again.

When I woke up again the doctor checking me out

Dr: "Yamkelani how nice of you to join us, I'm doctor Parker do you know who you are?"

Me: "Yamkelani Demus"

Dr: "do you know what happened?"

Me: "I was in a car accident with my son" I started panicking "where is my son"

Dr: "I'm going to need you to stay calm your son is recovering well his in peds" I just cried out of relief

Me: "have you called my family"

Dr: "yes your husband Dr Khumalo is with your son in peds" I nodded wiping my tears "now I'm going to need you to take it easy, you hit your head hard we had to operate on you to repair the damages on your lobes so I'm going to need you to count from 10 to 1" I did he smiled nodding in approval "please move your finger for me as well as your feet" I did he smiled again "that's good everything is well, you also hit your stomach badly which caused internal bleeding we tried our best to save all your organs unfortunately you need a new liver. We are just waiting for your father to land then we can do the operation he already did the test that side and his the perfect match"

Me: "thank you"

Dr: "I'll come and check on you as the day goes on"

Me: "thank you" he smiled and walked out as the nurse walked in with food we exchanged greetings then she left the food and walked out I just covered myself with the blanket trying to sleep but I couldn't I just stayed up under the blanket lord knows I didn't know what was happening in my life I heard the door open "Lani" that was my father's voice I pulled back the cover

Me: "daddy?!" He took a few strides with his arms open he held me tightly I just cried "daddy what's happening to me"

Dad: "it's okay I'm here now"

Me: "I'm so sorry daddy"

Dad: "it's okay Lani don't apologize we going to find out what's wrong with you"

Me: "I almost killed him daddy I almost killed us both"

Dad: "ssh"

Nzuzo: "so it's true?" I pulled out of dad's arms dad moved Nzuzo was standing behind him "is it fucken true Yamkelani?!!!" Angry nzuzo was scary

Me: "I didn't mean to he wouldn't stop crying"

Nzuzo: "are you out of your fucken mind woman!!! He wouldn't stop crying!"

Dad: "Nzuzo she's still my daughter" he just turned and walked out banging the door

Me: "he hates me" I started wailing all over again

Dad: "his angry I would be too if I was in his position"

Me: "what have I done" he held me again "he will never forgive me for this daddy Nzuzo loves his sons"

Dad: "and you his wife he loves you as well"

Me: "what have I done oh God"

Dad: "Lani as soon as you start healing I'll get you help Lani I promise you we will find out what's wrong with you, I know you I know the kind of heart you have and this is not you"

Me: "thank you for believing that dad" he kissed my bald head

Dad: "you my daughter" he held me until I was done crying "I need to go see the doctor so we can get you that liver before it damages your other organs"

Me: "thank you daddy I know I don't deserve since I put myself in this position"

Dad: "don't talk like that I would do anything for you"

Me: "thank you" he kissed my cheek

Dad: "it hurts me to see you like Lani"

Me: "I did this to myself dad" he sighed

Dad: "don't blame yourself Lani anybody who knows you know that you would never harm anyone especially your own kids"

Me: "I just don't know dad"

Dad: "I'll go check on Liam then get admitted"

Me: "okay"

Dad: "Justin will land in the afternoon"

Me: "please kiss Liam for me tell him I'm sorry"

Dad: "I will, I love you"

Me: "love you too" he kissed my badged head and walked out I just went to sleep.

At night dad and I went to surgery for the transplant.

.

I woke up in pain Justin was sitting on the chair holding my hand with his head on the bed

Me: "jus" I moved my head he woke up

Justin: "hey little sis how you feeling"

Me: "water please" he nodded and poured some for me he helped me drink it with a straw "thank you"

Justin: "I'll go call the doctor"

Me: "is daddy okay"

Justin: "yes and his up" I nodded he walked out he came back with a different doctor after checking me the doctor left

Me: "has Nzuzo came to check on me" he shook his head frowning

Justin: "no his been with Liam the entire time"

Me: "how is Liam"

Justin: "his good they going to be discharging him"

Me: "that's good" we remained quiet I was looking down but I could feel his eyes on me "talk Justin"

Justin: "what the fuck is wrong with you Yamkelani"

Me: "I .."

Justin: "you could have died! Dammit Lani you could have killed Liam!!!"

Me: "please don't yell"

Justin: "don't tell me shit! I want to know what the hell were you thinking" I started crying

Me: "he wouldn't stop crying Justin"

Justin: "so you thought it best to kill him"

Me: "no ofcos not"

Justin: "then what?!!!"

Me: "I just wanted him to stop"

Justin: "fuck off Lani is that reason enough!!!"

Me: "stop yelling please "

Justin: "you are so fucked up Lani!! You just like that mother of yours" he clicked his tongue and walked out I just wailed I cried to a point of having major hiccups I wrapped my arms around myself rocking back and forth Masisi got in she just threw herself at me I winced in pain but she didn't let go instead she just cried we cried together

Masisi: "how can you do this to me"

Me: " I'm sorry"

Masisi: "what would I be without you Yammy"

Me: "I don't know what I was thinking" she let go of me and cupped my face giving me a soft peck

Masisi; "it's okay daddy got you help"

Me; "how is Avery" she sighed

Masisi: "Nzuzo doesn't want them to come see you" I nodded with fresh tears swimming out

Me: "he hates me"

Masisi: "his really angry Yammy I've never seen him like that"

Me: "I'm going to lose him Masisi"

Masisi: "don't talk like that"

Me: "how is daddy"

Masisi: "his good"

Me: "have you seen Liam"

Masisi: "his back at home, the car seat was safely secure"

Me: "at least"

Masisi: "you will start seeing the psychiatrist today after lunch, now sit properly so you can eat"

Me: "I'm not hungry"

Masisi: "you will eat Yammy I'm not asking you" I just laughed so did she "I've seen how Nzuzo makes you do things" I sat properly she brought the tray forward and put take away from wimpy on it with juice it was breakfast I started eating

Me: "did you get dad food"

Masisi: "yeah I left him eating and Mayowo was there" I huffed

Me: "she's going to hate me more for putting her husband in this position"

Masisi: "fuck her nobody cares"

Me: "I don't know Masisi"

Masisi: "I'm telling you nobody cares"

Me: "the other car was there a driver in it"

Masisi: "no there wasn't"

Me: "thank God!"

Masisi: "I'm glad you okay"

Me: "thank you, Justin was yelling at me"

Masisi: "that idiot! Dad told him not to yell everyone who knows you Yammy knows you not in the right frame of mind"

Me: "maybe I am just like mom"

Masisi: "bullshit !! Who said that? Was is it Justin? Does he even know the amount of cruelty that woman is capable off?! Nxa" she walked out leaving me behind screaming her name I just pushed the tray aside and laid on the bed carefully I was in pain

.

3 weeks later I was leaving the hospital going to rehab for postpartum psychosis I hadn't seen Nzuzo since that day or Avery it broke my heart as my family was saying they goodbyes but Nzuzo wasn't there with my sons he absolutely refused to come even after my father asked him he said no and he was sticking to it. We had flew to Jhn that's where the rehab was, after making sure I was settled in my room they left I cried myself to sleep that day and night.

3 months after intensive therapy and medication being isolated from my family I only got calls on weekends Nzuzo never answered my calls I had to ask Masisi to let me speak to Avery. I was finally going home when I saw dad I basically threw myself at him crying he lifted me up

Dad: "it's all over we going home" I just cried harder "bae" I looked behind dad at the small voice that came out as a whisper it was Avery dad put me down I went to kneel next to him we held each other I couldn't stop crying

Avery: "it's okay bae you better now" I pulled back from the hug he just smiled and wiped my tears giving me a soft peck

Me: "I missed you"

Avery: "not as much as I missed you"

Dad: "okay let's go I already signed your papers"

Me: "okay" I stood up dad carried my bags we left taking an uber "can we go past get some food like real oily food" dad chuckled

Dad: "like what"

Me: "I want a burger from mugg n bean and some spur ribs"

Avery: "I also want ribs grandpa"

Dad: "we'll get your burger as a takeaway then we can sit down at spur"

Avery&I: "great"

Me: "how is your father and Liam Avery"

Avery: "they good, Liam is so fat mom" he laughed I joined him he had his father's laugh the type of laugh that makes you want to laugh

Dad: "his not fat just heavy"

Avery: "all he does is eat and sleep"

Me: "is he healthy dad"

Dad: "perfectly healthy Lani his father and Masisi were looking after him" I nodded we went pass the mall got food then left within a couple of hours we were getting in the front door Masisi came flying in the foyer throwing herself at me we almost fell but dad caught me I couldn't even cry we just laughed

Masisi: "I missed you"

Me: "get off me I want to see my son"

Masisi: "tell me you missed me first"

Me: "I missed you" she got off me

Masisi: "Liam is not here Nzuzo went to Dumisa with him"

Me: "but he knew I was coming back today" dad and Masisi looked at each other "he still blames me doesn't he"

Dad: "don't worry about Lani you well and you back home that's all that matters right now"

Me: "really dad my husband and child are not home on the day that Nzuzo knew I was coming back"

Dad: "just giving him time"

Me: "it's been close to 4 months"

Masisi: "let's get you settled in"

Me: "I just need a bath and to sleep in my own bed"

Dad: "okay" I took my bag went upstairs to my room Liam's things we all over the room I unpacked my bag cleaned up the room changing the bedding on the bed I went to take a long hot bubble bath I got out lotioned my body then I put on Nzuzo's t-shirt I got under the blankets and slept.

I was woken up by a baby's cry Liam was up and crying In his side cot I switched on the side lamp and took him his bottle was on the bed side I started feeding him he looked so adorable with his chubby cheeks and thin lips he was looking up at me sucking on his bottle hard until he went back to sleep I put him back on his cot I laid on the bed leaving the lamp on I was just brushing his cheeks "please switch off the lights he will keep waking up" I turned and looked to where the voice was coming from Nzuzo he was sleeping on the couch

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "switch the lights off Yamkelani" I sat up

Me: "Nzuzo" my voice came out as a whisper he sat up and just looked at me "I'm really sorry Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "are you switching the lights off or not"

Me: "Nzuzo please"

Nzuzo: "mxm" he stood and switched the light off I held his arm "no you don't get to touch me after trying to kill my son" he spoke through his teeth yanking his arm out off my grip

Me: "Nzuzo I was sick and I told you there's something wrong"

Nzuzo: "are you going to let us sleep in your room or should I take my son to Avery's room"

Me: "Nzuzo I just want us to talk and for you to try and maybe forgive me"

Nzuzo: "that won't be happening anytime soon if it will happen at all"

Me: "Nzuzo we getting married in 4 months we need to talk"

Nzuzo: "I would never marry someone cruel enough to try and kill her child my child Yamkelani!!!"
Liam woke up screaming he took him along with his bottle and walked out the room banging the door loudly

PART 34

I got off the bed following after them

Me: "Nzuzo please come back to our room please"

Nzuzo: "fuck off Yamkelani"

Me: "Nzuzo please I'm sorry you know I was sick" I tried grabbing his arm

Nzuzo: "let go of me before I hurt you!!!" He pushed me off Liam wouldn't stop screaming

Me: "at least give him to me let me hush him down he will get sick crying like this"

Nzuzo: "hush him down by killing him" Masisi came out of her room

Masisi: "I'll take him" she walked to us and took Liam went back to her room

Me: "can we talk now? Please"

Nzuzo: "I'd rather not" he opened the door on Avery's room

Me: "you want him to know you fighting with me" he stopped for awhile then closed the door he went back to our room I locked the door after getting in "Nzuzo you have to forgive I was sick"

Nzuzo: "I don't have to do shit"

Me: "I'm your wife for God sakes you have to"

Nzuzo: "the very same wife who tried to kill my son" he got on the couch pulling the blanket over himself I pulled it off him

Me: "we still talking" he got off the couch fast and stood next to me looking down at me breathing hard and fast "so what? You want to beat me up?"

Nzuzo: "stop testing my patience"

Me: "for a doctor Nzuzo sometime I don't even get you not just any doctor but a neurosurgeon you really don't think"

Nzuzo: "all I know is that you tried to kill my son our son!!!"

Me: "and you know me! You know I would walk to the end of the world for my children and I wasn't well Nzuzo I was diagnosed with postpartum psychosis but you don't want to see all of that because your mind is fixed on me being wrong" he looked at me long and hard before grabbing my blanket again and went to the couch I huffed and got on top of him he tried moving

Me: "you will drop me and I'll get hurt" he just looked at me "I love you Nzuzo Phiwokuhle Khumalo we meant for each other" he looked away we just remained quiet until I fell asleep.

.

I woke up when he was moving I pretended to be asleep he put me on the bed I could feel him staring on top of me he sighed and got off me I felt like grabbing his neck and kissing him he walked to the bathroom I heard the shower going off I opened my eyes it was already morning. I got off the bed went to the bathroom he had his forehead pressed on the wall the water just falling on him I stared at him as I was brushing my teeth like Nzuzo is extremely hot and sexy I looked at him from his leg up staying a little on his round firm butt and huge dick up his packs when I got to his face he was looking at me I cleared my throat and turned to look back at the sink I finished brushing my teeth I washed my face got out the bathroom. I put on leggings went to check on the kids Masisi was helping Nosi get dressed

Nosi: "sisi!" I laughed and hugged her when I came back she was napping

Me: "hey you good"

Nosi: "yes, are you back?"

Me: "yes, did you miss me?"

Nosi: "a lot sisi"

Me: "okay get ready ke, Masisi where is Liam"

Masisi: “still asleep” I nodded walked out went to check on Avery i went downstairs I started on breakfast making bacon, eggs, cheese cocktail grillers, sliced tomatoes and juice the helper rang the intercom as I was setting up the table I opened the gate for her then went to leave the main door open. Everyone came down we had breakfast while the helper made Avery and Nosi lunch

Nzuzo: “ok kids let’s go” they stood up went to grab their lunches as nzuzo stood up going out I followed him out

Me: “have a good day at work love” Avery and Nosi were already out the door talking amongst themselves Nzuzo looked at them then walked closer to me he kissed my cheek

Nzuzo: “thank you”

Me: “you told me to hold your hand but where are you now that I need you”

Nzuzo: “don’t do this the kids are watching”

Me: “you promised to be my solider” he turned and walked to his car I waved with a smile while dying as the car drove out, I met Masisi in the foyer she was also leaving

Masisi: “see you later” I kissed her forehead

Me: “who is picking up the kids”

Masisi: “me my last class is at 12:20 then I’ll wait for them”

Me: “okay” she left I took the monitor from the dinning area went to make Liam a fresh bottle then went upstairs I took Liam from masisi’s room went to my room with him I put him on his cot I took my iPad and my work stuff I was still busy just going over somethings I haven’t been at work for about 8 months they had someone standing in for me but I still got emails from doctors about there research proposal or those who wanted raises even from benefactor and everything else in between Nosihle the helper got in after knocking

Nosihle: “it’s his eating time”

Me: “his still asleep”

Nosihle: “have to wake him up, his usual asleep” I nodded and took the bowl that had warm purity pap

Me: “thank you” she smiled and walked out I woke up Liam he just started crying I held him properly then started feeding him he kept quiet immediately I feed him until he started spewing out the food I figured he was full he was almost done with the bowl anyway I put him back on the cot went prepare bathing water for him I gave him a bath he clearly enjoyed the water he kept hitting it and laughing I sat on the floor and let him play Liam had to be the most adorable baby with his yellow chubby cheeks finally the water was getting cold I took him out he started wailing I went out the bathroom my phone was ringing I ignored it I gave Liam his bottle but he didn’t want it I gave him his dummy he kept on throwing it out my phone wouldn’t stop ringing I answered without checking the caller ID

Nzuzo: “why is my son screaming Yamkelani what are you doing to him?!!”

Me: “I was bathing him Nzuzo he won’t stop crying”

Nzuzo: “don’t you dare harm my child!!”

Me: "nxa" I ended the call he called again I put the phone on silence i quickly got Liam dressed then I gave him his bottle this time he was sucking on it he drank the formula until he fell asleep I put him on his cot he stirred a little I gave him his dummy. When he was totally asleep I went to bath I got out lotioned put on a lose maxi dress I kom my short hair I made a mental note to get it done before going back to work next work, I wore flip flops took the monitor going downstairs I made fruit salad went to sit in front of the tv watched Isibaya "where is Yamkelani" that was Nzuzo's voice coming from the lounge I stood up pausing the tv went to the lounge with the monitor

Me: "what you doing home"

Nzuzo: "why was Liam screaming like that" I looked at Nosihle she quickly went out the lounge

Me: "you came home because your son didn't want to get out of the water"

Nzuzo: "where is he"

Ms: "upstairs asleep" he basically ran upstairs like Nzuzo was losing his mind I just went back to the tv room resumed with my show catching up after awhile he came back with Liam on his sleeper he put him next to me on the floor and sat down

Me: "see his fine his perfectly fine Nzuzo I can take care of our child"

Nzuzo: "I'm hungry"

Me: "you not going back to work?"

Nzuzo: "no but I'm on call" I stood up

Me: "is a sandwich fine"

Nzuzo: "yes" I went to the kitchen made him a cheese and ham sandwich with coffee I put everything on the tray along with a warm damp cloth he took the cloth wiped his hands then took the tray

Nzuzo: "thank you" I nodded went to the cloth in the kitchen before going back to watch the tv we sat in silence until he was done eating I took the distance back to the kitchen and took out t-bone steaks and wors leaving it to defrost for dinner I went back to the tv room sitting on the same couch as him he shifted back

Me: "do I disgust you"

Nzuzo: "ofcos not"

Me: "I've missed you" I wasn't looking at him but I could feel his eyes on me

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "I've really missed you"

Nzuzo: "so have I" I looked at him he looked away

Me: "I just miss husband Nzuzo" I touched his cheek he looked at me I moved closer to him

Nzuzo: "Lani" he whispered I got on of top of him straddling him I wrapped my hands around his neck he was just looking at me I kissed him he let out a sigh and kissed me back he held my ass moving me closer to his dick I pressed down on it and started dry humping him he was moaning I could feel his dick growing

Me: "room" he groaned standing up I screamed for Nosihle to watch Liam as we went upstairs he kicked the door open then locked it he gently put me on the bed we kissed while i unbuttoned his shirt then took it off I let out a moan when I touched his bare packs he rolled us over I got on top of him I pulled out my dress

Nzuzo; "fuck yeah" I smiled I wasn't wearing any underwear I went down took off his shoes and his chinos along with his boyleg and Mntungwa sprung free looking deliciously long and thick I grabbed his dick tightening my grip he groaned "Yammy" he called out in a soft moan I circled my tongue around the tip of his hot dick tasting the precum before sucking it in mouth hard gagging myself earning a loud moan from he held my head, I popped it out then snaked and curled my tongue up and down sucking on it and lightly biting with my lips covering my teeth he kept his eyes shut "fucken shit yammmmy" he let out a loud growl I ran my tongue up then popped it out started licking his balls playing with them before popping them in my mouth I sucked on them "Jesus hell Yammy!!!" I went hard while giving him a hand job "Lani Lani!" He lifted me up and sat me down on his dick I cried from the mixture of pain and a little bit of pleasure "fuck baby I'm sorry" I just smiled pressed my hands on his V then started moving bouncing up and down, moving in circles changing my pace from time to time until I could feel my muscles tightening he held my waist moving me up and down fast and hard "Nzuzooooo!!!" I came hard with my body jerking I collapsed on him. He rolled over getting on top of me then pulled out

Nzuzo: "you look beautiful" I smiled

Me: "so do you" he started kissing my neck biting it lightly going down to my breasts nibbling and pinching them going further down leaving soft bites on my stomach he put my thighs on his neck and started licking me "ssshit Nzuzo" he pulled my clit in his mouth "baby!! Aaah" he sucked on my clit before penetrating me with his tongue flattening it I pushed his head deeper he went in and out with his tongue while rubbing my clit with his thumb I rolled my hips holding his head I came with a loud a moan he wasted no time he entered me slamming into me hard, he was pounding me hard and fast hitting every corner with his hands on my ankles spreading my legs far apart out loud moans and growls filled the room as well as our cries out to God after I came he pulled out and smashed his lips on mine we just kissed teeth clashing lips biting tyra kiss he flipped me over I went face down ass up he licked me before slamming into me hard after that he fucked me hard spanking and grabbing my ass as I twerked on him pushing back to meet his every thrust he came hard growling loudly before collapsing next to me he pulled me to lay on top of him kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I love you my wife"

Me: "I love you more hubby" I cupped his face we kissed slowly after sometime I pulled back and gave him a soft peck "please forgive me" he sighed

Nzuzo: "eventually the forgiveness and trust will come just give me sometime" I nodded and laid on top him fully he was running his fingers up and down my back softly

Me: "should I continue with the wedding plans"

Nzuzo: "ofcos" I kissed his chest

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "can't wait to make you mrs Nzuzo Khumalo legally"

Me: "what if I want to keep my surname"

Nzuzo: "it will be a cold day in hell" I giggled

Me: "I'm joking" I yawned "wake me up when the kids are back so I can start with dinner"

Nzuzo: "okay love" he kissed my head I slowly dozed off.

I woke up in bed alone I went to the bathroom took a quick shower my vjayjay was painful and swollen I got out the shower put back my dress and checked the time it was almost five I went downstairs Nzuzo was watching tv with Liam on his chest

Me: "where is everyone?"

Nzuzo: "oh you up babe" I nodded kissed Liam's head then held Nzuzo's chin I gave him a short deep kiss "they in their rooms doing homeworks Masisi is also up in her room"

Me: "okay I'll start on dinner"

Nzuzo: "come here first" I giggled and leaned in we kissed again "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" I went to the kitchen poured myself juice and marinated the t-bone, peeled the potatoes boiling them for mash I put the wors on the pan with water letting it boil so it could fry using its own oil, I put the t-bone on the grill Nzuzo came in the kitchen as I was starting on the gravy

Me: "where is Liam"

Nzuzo: "with Masisi in the tv room" he took a beer from the fridge and came to stand behind him snaking his hand around my waist

Me: "I'm cooking"

Nzuzo: "I know it smells amazing in here"

Me: "then sit down and have your beer"

Nzuzo: "yes ma'am" he kissed my neck and went to sit on the high chair

Me: "how are things at work"

Nzuzo: "just normal you know people dying some surviving"

Me: "I saw the email from the municipality I see your company is picking up"

Nzuzo: "when you work with brains you make friends" we shared a chuckle

Me: "don't you want to bring me on as your accountant"

Nzuzo: "will I have to pay you"

Me: "with great sex"

Nzuzo: "then it's a done deal" I leaned over the counter gave him a soft peck

Me: "great" while everything was cooking on the stove I started making green salad

Nzuzo: "I'm not having rabbit food for dinner"

Me: "there's mash with gravy so relax"

Nzuzo: "okay was a little worried"

Me: "silly"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "for"

Nzuzo: "not being there for you, being angry is no excuse you underwent 2 surgeries and I wasn't there for you I should have been there for you even if it means being in the same room as you but not talking to you"

Me: "it's okay I'm not angry"

Nzuzo: "because you a good person I would have been mad at hell" I just chuckled

Me: "you going to die young if you always angry"

Nzuzo: "I love you" I looked at him with a huge smile on my face I really missed my man

Me: "you love me"

Nzuzo: "a lot" we stared at each other smiling he winked biting his bottom lip I giggled shyly

Masisi: "ooh so much tension!" We looked at her she was leaning on the door frame watching us

Me: "shut up" Nzuzo chuckled

Nzuzo: "yeah tell her baby" he stood up and walked to me I moved back shaking my head I was about to run when he took a few strides and lifted me up

Me: "put me down!!" I was laughing he spanked me I squealed "Nzuzo!" I was hitting his back

Nzuzo: "continue with the pots Masisi"

Me: "Nzuzo!!!!" He started walking upstairs still carrying me like a sack of potatoes he threw me on the bed I bounced a little

Nzuzo: "I want you"

Me: "I'm hurting"

Nzuzo: "was I too crazy before"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "want me to kiss it better" I shook my head giggling "yeah you want me to" we kissed he was pulling my dress up

Me: "stop being nasty I'm cooking"

Nzuzo: "I'm trying to kiss it better"

Me: "is that where it going to end" he looked at me laughing he flexed his hip his erection digging on my inner thigh "you see nzuzo! Get off me"

Nzuzo: "baby"

Me: "love"

Nzuzo: "I'll be gentle" he looked at me with his begging eyes I hooked my feet on the waistband of his joggers pulled it down.

After a slow session we cleaned up and went downstairs Avery and Nosi were setting up the table we sat down as Masisi brought out the food she kept on giving me that look I was just shaking my head I took Liam started feeding him mash while everyone was eating, when he was full I ate. After dinner I cleaned up the kitchen and the dinning area loading the dishes in the washer I went to bath Liam and ofcos he screamed his lugs out when I was taking him out of the water I quickly got him dressed then gave him his bottle he went straight to sleep I put him on his cot I covered him with his blankets I just laid on the bed looking at him it was like I just gave birth to him I felt like his a new born, the door opened Nzuzo got in

Me: "the kids in bed"

Nzuzo: "they watching tv"

Me: "it way pass bed time Nzuzo they still need to bath"

Nzuzo: "I'll get on it" he went out again I took my dress off wore his t-shirt and got under the covers on my side next to the cot after sometime Nzuzo came back he put his pj bottoms and got in behind me holding me

Nzuzo: "they in bed"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you more" he kissed my head

.

I was woken up by Nzuzo's phone it wouldn't stop ringing I shook him

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "answer your phone before it wakes up Liam" he groaned and looked the other way I took the phone it was Enhle I answered

Enhle: "Nzuzo"

Me: "his asleep"

Enhle: "bitch" she dropped the call I just put the phone aside as I was about to fall back to sleep she called again and this time Liam did wake up I shook nzuzo roughly and gave him his phone while I attended to Liam Nzuzo answered his phone I gave him his bottle while rocking him Nzuzo got off the bed

Nzuzo: "I have to go to Glenwood Enhle says Thando's fever is too high" he was already getting dressed

Me: "is she that bad that she can't take her to the doctors in the morning"

Nzuzo: "yes" he kissed my cheek and Liam's head "I'll be back soon I'll probably take her in at emergencies"

Me: "I hope she's fine"

Nzuzo: "I love you two"

Me: "we love you" he left I managed to put Liam back to sleep after close to an hour then I threw myself on the bed with a sigh

Me: "baby mamas" I whispered to myself

PART 35

After falling asleep I was woken up by Nzuzo's cold hands snaking around my body

Me: "your hands are freezing cold" he put them under the t-shirt grabbing my boobs

Nzuzo: "now I'll be warm, go back to sleep"

Me: "how is Thando?" He sighed

Nzuzo: "she's okay baby"

Me: "did you take her to the hospital"

Nzuzo: "no I told Enhle to take her to her doctor tomorrow"

Me: "couldn't she have done just that"

Nzuzo: "I don't know baby the way Enhle was panicking and crying you would have thought Thando is close to death"

Me: "at least it's Friday today so after work you can pick them up then we can keep an eye on them"

Nzuzo: "okay baby" he kissed the side of my head then we went back to sleep.

I woke up when Nzuzo went to bath, after checking on the kids I went to make breakfast

Nzuzo: "morning love" he held my waist as I was setting up the table he kissed my neck I turned around wrapping arms around his neck

Me: "morning Khumalo" he smiled with a raised eyebrow

Nzuzo: "someone is in a good mood"

Me: "I just love my hubby" he grabbed my ass lifting me up "the kids will come down soon"

Nzuzo: "I don't care"

Me: "Nzuzo" he put me down chuckling

Nzuzo: "we should get our own house so we can leave them all here and be just by ourselves" I laughed

Avery: "not happening!" He said coming in the dining area with Nosi

Nosi: "yes we following you two to wherever" they laughed I just looked at them smiling

Me: "sit and eat before it gets late, where is Masisi"

Nosi: "she went back to bed" we all sat and started eating, after breakfast they left I dished up for Masisi left her food in the microwave I went upstairs to her knocked and got in

Me: "get up" she sat up pushing her short curls back

Masisi: "what?" I put the monitor on the bedside got in bed with her

Me: "why are you not getting ready for campus"

Masisi: "I don't have lectures"

Me: "I want a copy of your timetable"

Masisi: "you don't trust me"

Me: "I do but I still want your timetable"

Masisi: "I'll make the copy at the library on Monday"

Me: "thank you, so how is your life" she chuckled looking at me I just gave her a look

Masisi: "it's okay everything is okay"

Me: "don't shut me out"

Masisi: "there's nothing to say"

Me: "okay I'll ask you answer" I pulled her to lay on the bed then snuggled closer "how is Lizwi" she giggled Lizwi was her boyfriend she met last year

Masisi: "he is just fine and speaking of him I was still going to ask you if I could spend the weekend at his apartment"

Me: "well I'm going to have to ask dad first"

Masisi: "hawu Lani" she frowned I laughed

Me: "it's okay you can go just be back on Sunday. Masisi please tell me you using contraceptives and you know you can't just rely on the condom" she groaned

Masisi: "ofcos I'm on the injection and we use protection Lani I'm too old for this conversation"

Me: "you never too old you still that little Masisi who used to hide under the bed"

Masisi: "geese"

Me: "when are you going to morning side"

Masisi: "he will pick me up after work"

Me: "let's go out I need to get my hair done and do some groceries"

Masisi: "and Liam"

Me: "ooh I'm taking my son with me no doubt about that!" She laughed

Masisi: "look at you"

Me: "phela I'm healed" we looked at each and bursted out in laughter

Masisi: "one would swear you had cancer"

Me: "whatever, your breakfast is in the microwave I need to feed Liam"

Masisi: "thank you" I kissed her cheek got off the bed took the monitor going to my room, Liam was still peacefully asleep I just went to bed and slept.

I was woken up a soft knock I went to open it Nosihle

Nosihle: "sorry but it's feeding time"

Me: "it's okay" I took the food closing the door Liam was already up just quietly kicking the air "hello my love" he smiled showing his pink gums I picked him up "ain't you just the most adorable thing in the world, yes you are yes you are my king" he giggled I tickled him he giggled louder

Nzuzo: "isn't this just the cutest thing ever" I looked up he was standing by the door looking at us

Me: "shouldn't you be at work" he walked in and held my chin giving me a wet fat kiss that left me moaning

Nzuzo: "I'm on call I just missed you and our son" I sighed

Me: "you still don't trust me with him" he looked down guilt return all over his face "wow" I shook my head picking Liam up I started feeding him

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "don't say another word please" I finished feeding Liam in silence I gave him a bath I sat on the floor watching him play in the water

Nzuzo: "Lani I'm sorry but it's going to take sometime"

Me: "come baby come to mommy" I took him off the water he started crying immediately I wrapped the towel around him got out the bathroom I quickly got him dressed then gave him his dummy then I walked around the room trying to calm him down eventually he fell asleep I put him in his cot I was walking to the bathroom when Nzuzo grabbed my arm he pushed me to the wall and kissed me hard pinning my hands on the wall above my head when he pulled back I was breathless

Nzuzo: "we almost lost him 4 months ago, if it wasn't for the car seat God Lani! We would have lost him so just give me time please" I nodded

Me: "I understand"

Nzuzo: "thank you" he kissed me again then let go of me I went to shower got out Nzuzo was on the bed laying with his stomach busy on his iPad I lotioned got dressed in olive green high waist skirt with a matching long sleeve crop top I put my black ankle heel kom my short hair put on dark purple lipstick

Nzuzo: "where are you going"

Me: "gateway"

Nzuzo: "can I come"

Me: "no I'm going to with Masisi and Liam"

Nzuzo: "you can leave Liam with me"

Me: "but you on call at work"

Nzuzo: "I doubt I'll get called in"

Me: "really nzuzo I said I will understand but now you being really unreasonable"

Nzuzo: "nonono it's not like that I'm simply saying go enjoy your day with your sister"

Me: "are you sure"

Nzuzo: "yes, I'll go pick up the kids as well"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "buy me something else"

Me: "you already have my" I turned around showing him my ass "cake cake cake cake cake" I was twerking he was in fits of laughter I looked at him giggling

Nzuzo: "do it again"

Me: "can I have money to get my hair done" he laughed even more ending up in tears

Nzuzo: "hhe! Shisa Yamkelani, since when do you want hair money? Come to think of it I've never given you money since we fixed things"

Me: "gone are those days back in high school you used to give me money without me even having to ask for it" I sighed dramatically he just looked at me chuckling

Nzuzo: "I'll give you next month" I sat on him letting my legs hang over the bed

Me: "you know I'm joking"

Nzuzo: "I know" I gave him a soft peck

Me: "what would you like for me to get you"

Nzuzo: "something red and lacy really revealing" I giggled shyly nodding

Me: "okay I love you"

Nzuzo: "love you too" I kissed him again then got off him I took my bag "ungashelisi Yamkelani" I showed him my wedding bracelet and my engagement ring

Me: "only a fool would try" I blew him a kiss

Nzuzo: "you look beautiful" I winked at him then walked out going to Masisi who had fallen asleep in her room I woke her up

Masisi: "I was dressed hours ago" she stood went to the bathroom then got out put on her heels she was wearing navy wide leg high waist 3 quarter pants and a white lace crop top with white heels

Me: "let's go" we left taking her car

Masisi: "Clair is pregnant again"

Me: "what the hell?! Her baby is not even a year yet"

Masisi: "she says they want them close together"

Me: "that's so unbelievable"

Masisi: "at least she's married"

Me: "guess so I'm also married but Liam is our last child"

Masisi: "you always wanted 3 kids"

Me: "Nzuzo has the twins"

Masisi: "a.a do not settle"

Me: "I'm not settling I'm compromising"

Masisi: "that's bull"

Me: "you know Enhle called Nzuzo while we were asleep last night around 2:00 saying Thando has high fever when Nzuzo got there Thando wasn't that bad and she called me bitch"

Masisi: "Nzuzo needs to set boundaries with his baby mama and he needs to let her know you his wife not some girl his fucking she needs to respect you"

Me: "I don't wana cause trouble"

Masisi: "ayi ayi he is your husband he can't be running every time Enhle calls no it doesn't work like that! And he needs to put her in her lane she can't be calling you names Lani"

Me: "you don't understand Masisi I don't want it to seem as if I'm starting drama"

Masisi: "you deserve a woohh shame!!"

Me: "whatever"

Masisi: "when will you stop letting people take advantage of you"

Me: "I don't even know"

Masisi: "ayi Yamkelani you too soft nawe"

Me: "if Nzuzo sees nothing wrong in what Enhle is doing who am I to interfere"

Masisi: "you his wife, aibo yazi Brad called me while you were in rehab I forgot to tell you"

Me: "what?! What did he want? Wait how did he even get your number?"

Masisi: "I have no idea but he called asking how are you and if is rehab really helping you"

Me: "okay that's a little psychotic"

Masisi: "his too much of a stalker but his harmless man it Bradley his just as soft as you"

Me: "Like the fact that he knows what's happening in my life fucking scares" she giggled we were now entering the parking lot at gateway

Masisi: "last time I checked Nzuzo can go crazy on people when it comes you so you have nothing to worry about" she parked her car brought down the top and we got out

Me: "like I don't even want to imagine who badly Nzuzo would fuck him up if he were to show up, like you could have seen him when I told him about Brad he said he feels like I cheated on him and he wants to rip Brad apart for even looking at my naked body let alone getting me pregnant"

Masisi: "you think Brad is psychotic Nzuzo is more psychotic"

Me: "hey!" We laughed we started at the saloon I put on 30 inch Cambodian while Masisi washed her Malaysian curls we did our nails and shaped our eyebrows I just as our paying my phone beeped an sms coming through from the bank Nzuzo sent me money I just smiled sent him a text saying thank

you with a smile and underwear emoji. After the saloon we did our shopping I had put on some weight after shopping we went to Tasha's for lunch, after lunch we went to buy some groceries then went to debonairs for some pizza and kfc for a bucket of fried chicken it was already late and the helper doesn't cook. We got home Oluhle and Nosi we running around playing in the house

Me: "go play in your room Nosi" they nodded and ran up I went to leave my clothes in my room then went back to the kitchen unpacked the groceries when I was done I went to the tv room Avery and his dad were watching soccer Nzuzo had Thando on top of him he was laying on the couch she was asleep and Liam was just in his sleeper playing with himself

Me: "how is she"

Nzuzo: "she's better baby" he kept moving his head

Me: "let me go put her in bed"

Nzuzo: "okay take her"

Me: "actually let me dish up so she can have dinner first"

Nzuzo: "baby come on you blocking me I can't see the game"

Me: "I'll change the channel"

Nzuzo: "you wouldn't dare" I giggled going to the kitchen as I was dishing up Masisi came to say her goodbyes and she left after dishing I told Avery to go call Nosi and Oluhle they all ate while I was feeding Liam Nzuzo had changed to a movie he was recording the match

Nzuzo: "so how was gateway"

Me: "as normal as it can be babe"

Nzuzo: "did you buy me my something"

Me: "I don't know, maybe and maybe not"

Nzuzo: "can't wait to see" I winked at him

Nosi: "sisi"

Me: "yeah"

Nosi: "can we swim"

Oluhle: "please pleeease"

Me: "it nighttime now you will swim tomorrow if the sun is out"

Them: "yeah!"

Oluhle: "I asked mom to pack my swimming clothes"

Nosi: "I also have swimming clothes right sisi"

Me: "right" I tuned them out as they spoke about their swimming clothes "bae"

Avery: "yes" he was too quiet for my liking

Me: "are you okay"

Avery: "honestly I miss us just you and me" he spoke in my father's language looking down playing with his food

Me: "I'm sorry"

Nzuzo: "what's wrong" I shook my head

Avery: "it's fine mom" he stood up "I'm going to bed"

Me: "but you haven't even finished one slice"

Avery: "I'm not hungry I had a late snack I just want to sleep" he went out

Nzuzo: "what's wrong babe"

Me: "I guess he is just having one of those days"

Nzuzo: "what did he say" I told him he just frowned nodding "a lot of change happened in a short period of time"

Me: "I know it was always just us two and at times with Justin but now there's like a huge family"

Nzuzo: "should I speak to him? Assure him that you still his bae"

Me: "no I'll speak to him after putting Liam in bed"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry babe" I chuckled

Me: "don't be, get the girl in jammies I'll take care of the boys then I got a surprise for you"

Nzuzo: "does it involve lace" I nodded with a smile "girls! Bath and bed now" he stood up pulling the girls up

Thando: "daddy we still eating"

Nzuzo: "you will finish eating in your room, you all could sleep in one room if y'all want to" they screamed going up running with their food "I better find you in our room in 30 minutes"

Me: "yes sir. well maybe like an hour"

Nzuzo: "Mntungwa is already up" I just laughed

Me: "you really gross do you know that! Just tell Mntungwa to behave" he walked to me and cupped my face we kissed deeply I pushed him when Liam started crying

Nzuzo: "his jealous"

Me: "go away" I stood went to bath Liam after his loud cries while I was getting him dressed he fell asleep I put him in his cot went to check on Avery he was asleep already. I went to our room took a quick shower got out lotioned, put on red lace corset with a matching thong I put on red nylons hooking the corset on them I put on red platform heels, let my weave lose sprayed some fragrance topped off with a red lipstick I buzzed Nzuzo then softly played Ciara – body party on repeat when he came in I was sitting on the couch with my legs spread

Nzuzo: "ba....baby!!"

Me: "ssh you going to wake up Liam" I stood up he put his fist in his mouth biting it i Noam Campbell walked to him "sit" he sat on the couch I started dancing for him

We spent Saturday just chilling at home the kids swam during the day we had small braai.

Sunday morning we went to Dumisa spent the day there then at night we took the twins to their mother, they were asleep so Nzuzo carried them I took their bags we went to the door I knocked and I was never ready for what I saw Enhle opened the door in just a low cut vest and a panty her seductive smile turned into a frown when she saw me

Enhle: "what is she doing in my house Nzuzo" Nzuzo pushed her aside and got in so did I he disappeared in the passage "what are you doing in my house hoe" I just sighed

Me: "you really need to stop calling me names Enhle it disrespectful" she walked closer to me I backed up she walked even closer smiling

Enhle: "you think you the shit don't you"

Me: "you getting on my personal space Enhle it making me uncomfortable" she was breathing down on my neck

Enhle: "hhe ngiyavivinywa ngo Ms London"

Me: "Nzuzo !!!!" He came running Enhle was already sitting down as if nothing happened "can we leave please" I was already at the door

Nzuzo: "what happened"

Me: "nothing I want to leave" I walked out I heard them shouting at each other I got in the car about a minute later Nzuzo got in banging the door

Nzuzo: "what did she do to you?!!"

Me: "don't scream I'm right here and you going to wake up the kids"

Nzuzo: "what did she do"

Me: "nothing" he looked at me and drove off "you better look at the road"

Nzuzo: "I won't know how to fix things if you don't tell me Yammy"

Me: "there's nothing to tell baby" I leaned over and kissed his cheek he just shook his head

PART 36

I woke up Monday morning with my man wrapped around me like a blanket I removed his arms and legs then out of bed I went to check if the kids are up after that I went to bath I got out lotioned I got dressed in a caramel strapless body hugging dress and a white mid leg sleeveless coat I put caramel heels tied my hair into a ponytail I kissed Liam's big forehead, I gave Nzuzo a baby kiss but he held my neck and deepened the kiss it felt so good I wanted to crawl right back in bed with him but I had to go to work so I pulled back

Me: "times like this I wish I was a housewife" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "that could be arranged" I kissed him

Me: "what time does your shift starts?"

Nzuzo: "20:00"

Me: "I'll see you when I come back then"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" we kissed I pulled back gave him a soft peck "laters baby" I left I found the kids and Masisi having cereal "good morning fam"

Them: "morning"

Avery: "we back to cereal in the morning"

Masisi: "Lani should just stay at home permanently"

Me: "remember those sleepless night I spent for 7 years so miss me with that"

Nosi: "you look beautiful sisi"

Me: "thank you my child"

Nosi: "sisi what is a hoe" I choked on my cereal started coughing one way

Masisi: "who used that word Nosi" she half scold Nosi looked at her with her lips puckered

Nosi: "Oluhle said her mom was talking to her aunty saying sisi is hoe" I just huffed covering my face with my hands

Masisi: "you see Lani! This is what happens when you let people walk all over you"

Me: "I'll handle it Masisi"

Masisi: "you best better before I do"

Avery: "who is taking us to school"

Me: "I am let's go"

Masisi: "that is a very bad word Nosipho never use it again"

Nosi: "okay I'm sorry I didn't know"

Me: "it's okay, go get your lunches" they stood up going to the kitchen

Masisi: "Lani"

Me: "I know you care Masisi but please let me handle it, this is my life my marriage and my house let me handle things the best way I know how"

Masisi: "okay" they came back with their lunch bags we left we got in my range I breathed out as much as my car was new this was the first time I was going to be driving since the accident

Avery: "mom are you okay" he was looking at me on the passenger sit with concern

Me: "yes" I started the car but I couldn't drive it "go call your dad please"

Avery: "okay" he got off the car

Nosi: "sisi?"

Me: "it's okay" I moved to the passenger seat we waited a little then Avery got back with his father they got in the car Nzuzo cupped my face and gave me a soft slow kiss

Nzuzo: "you good" I nodded he started the car and drove off we dropped the kids off then drove to the hospital

Nzuzo: "what happened?"

Me: "I couldn't drive babe"

Nzuzo: "explain"

Me: "like I couldn't move the car"

Nzuzo: "does this mean you won't be driving"

Me: "I will but maybe the first time I shouldn't be with the kids"

Nzuzo: "that's understandable" he parked "so I'll pick you up and Masisi will pick up the kids"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I love you" he gave me a soft peck

Me: "please tell Enhle not to call me names especially in front of the twins"

Nzuzo: "what happened?"

Me: "when she called that time about Thando being sick she called me a bitch and last night in her house she called me a hoe this morning Nosi asked what is hoe because the twins were saying that word saying they heard Enhle and Noni talking about me, I don't want to start trouble Nzuzo I know she will never like me I don't expect her to like me but I'm not some random girl you fucking I'm your wife and in order for the twins to respect me she needs to respect me and my personal space. Baby she can't keep coming at me like she will beat me up Nzuzo it very frightening and you know how I am"

Nzuzo: "why didn't you tell me this before"

Me: "I don't know"

Nzuzo: "I'll handle it love don't worry, I'm sorry okay" I nodded he cupped my face "you are my life and no one will bring you any harm not while I'm breathing" I kissed him

Me: "my hero"

Nzuzo: "your very own chuck Norris baby" I giggled we kissed again

Me: "I'm going to be late" he got off the car came to my side opening my door I got off he gave me my bag "I love you" he kissed my forehead I walked to my office I met Sthe outside the his office

Sthe: "Mrs Doc" I just chuckled

Me: "morning Sthe get us some coffee and blue berry muffins at the cafe we got some serious work to get through"

Sthe: "yes ma'am" I walked to my office it was as if I never left I opened the windows added Liam's picture to the pictures I had of my family. Time flew by Sthe and I got so caught up in work we had lunch in my office we were still busy when the door opened Sthe and I both looked up it was Nzuzo

Me: "love"

Nzuzo: "I'd say sorry I'm late but clearly you didn't even notice" I checked the time and it 16:40

Me: "lost track of time you can leave Sthe sorry I kept you late"

Sthe: "it's okay, I'll see you in the morning" he stood up took his things and left I packed up as well

Nzuzo: "busy day"

Me: "you have no idea"

Nzuzo: "did you call the wedding planner"

Me: "shit! I forgot" he pressed his lips together nodding

Nzuzo: "are we going to get married on the set date"

Me: "yes" I stood up as he took my bag "I promise" I took my handbag we left

Nzuzo: "I just need to be sure my love"

Me: "don't worry Claire emailed me few designs for the wedding dress"

Nzuzo: "at least that's something"

Me: "I got this don't worry" he opened my door I got in he went to his side

Nzuzo: "I hope you really have it"

Me: "trust me" he drove off

Nzuzo: "I just want us to be officially married babe"

Me: "and we will, do you have your groomsmen" we started talking about the wedding the whole way home.

.

The following day I called the wedding planner I also choose the design for the dress Nzuzo was buying his tuxedo he said he saw the perfect Armani black one in sandton city so he was going to buy his there and his groomsmen were also going to buy theirs there. 2 days after that I met up with the planner I roughly had an idea of what I want. A week after that Nzuzo we were going to fetch the twins Nzuzo set Enhle straight she apologized and has been respectful since then. More weeks went by the wedding plans were coming together beautifully I had the best wedding planner ever. A month before the wedding Nzuzo and I went to the court with our witnesses who was Masisi and his cousin Sandile we got married Nzuzo's uncle thought it was for the best for us to go get married in court then have the ceremony just for vows and celebrations because with black people you can never be too safe and it was as if he knew.

.

3 weeks before the wedding everything was set everything was paid for my dress was coming soon in 2 weeks with Claire, we had made a weekend trip with the bridal party and the grooms party we went to jhb we bought the dresses and the suits at sandton city.

I woke up in the morning not feeling well I had a huge pimple on my forehead it looked like a freaken boiler I got out of the bathroom woke Nzuzo up

Nzuzo: "mmh" he turned and faced the other side he had just came back from working a double shift

Me: "a.a baby wake up" I was in tears the pimple was itchy as hell I shook him more he opened his eyes and blinked a couple of times

Nzuzo: "what in the hell is that Lani" he pulled me to him and touched it I flinched from pain

Me: "baby it hurts so bad"

Nzuzo: "shit baby it looks bad"

Me: "you not helping!"

Nzuzo: "sit here I'll get you some pain meds then I can take out the dirt it already oozing out slowly"

Me: "okay" he sat me down and went to the bathroom he came back with pills I took them he stood between my legs and pressed on the pimple I cried out in pain

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry babe but I have to take out the dirt otherwise it won't stop itching"

Me: "just get it over and done with" he pressed harder I bit his chest to stop from crying, when he was done he put a plaster on it then kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby, I'll go get you something so eat so you can sleep"

Me: "okay" he walked out I took the tissues he was using went to flush them I peed and washed my hands I went to bed Nzuzo came back with a sandwich and juice I ate and slept.

I woke up again in excruciating pain I shook Nzuzo he opened his eyes and screamed

Me: "what's wrong"

Nzuzo: "bab Ba ... Baby your face" I got off the bed went to the bathroom I screamed loudly when I saw my face it was covered in huge pimples filled with dirt it was all swollen I couldn't even touch my face my body was trembling I was about to fall when Nzuzo caught me I was crying loudly out of pain and because I looked like a fuckn monster

Nzuzo: "it's okay baby"

Me: "I look like a monster!! Don't tell me it's okay and I'm in pain Nzuzo it hurts so bad" my tears were making it more itchy

Nzuzo: "I already called the hospital baby I got a dermatologist and a general surgeon waiting for you baby okay we going to get you help" I nodded he stood up with me in his arms he made me sit on the chair and filled the bathtub with water he gave me a bath then got me dressed in sweatpants and a sweater with all stars

Nzuzo: "2 minutes then I'll be out of the shower" I nodded I put on his baseball cap and my shades luckily Liam was at Dumisa soon enough we were on our way to the hospital. I was admitted immediately when we got there tests were done after they gave me injection for pains which made me sleepy immediately.

When I woke up Nzuzo's aunt and uncle were in the room with Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "baby you up"

Me: "yes" my mouth was numb it felt big

Aunt: "how you feeling"

Me: "it still hurts"

Nzuzo: "I'm getting you discharged baby all the tests came back negative and mama'ncane thinks it something zulu"

Aunt: "yes I've heard of things like these Yammy we don't need western medicine we need to consult a traditional healer"

Me: "okay" Nzuzo wiped my tears

Nzuzo: "please don't cry love you hurting me"

Me: "it hurts Nzuzo it really hurts"

Nzuzo: "I know baby I know and I'm sorry there's nothing I can do about it" he continued wiping my tears that wouldn't stop falling

Uncle: "get dressed makoti so we can go"

Me: "okay baba" they walked out leaving Nzuzo and I he helped me get dressed then we left I didn't even want to look at my face the stares I got from people were enough to confirm that I looked like a monster we got in the car and left driving towards south coast the car was just filled with my sniffs we got to folweni Nzuzo and I got it the small hut just smelt awful we greeted and sat down the healer started making weird noises I held Nzuzo hand tightly.

Healer: "vumani boh"

Us: "siyavuma" she looked at Nzuzo long and hard shaking her head

Healer: "do you see what you put this child through?" Nzuzo looked at me I shrugged my shoulders

Nzuzo: "I don't understand" she started speaking fast her eyes rolled back and became white she was shaking I wanted to get up and run out I looked at Nzuzo he brushed my back she started talking in a bold voice saying I was given isichitho that why my face is like this and that there's a snake sitting in my womb I was supposed to lose Liam but Khumalo are strong and they were looking after their grandson she gave me herbs some to drink, to boil with water and steam, to drink and throw up, another to give to Avery and Liam just a spoon every morning and at night before bed I was a jar filled with bitter water that smelled like it had cow shit she asked if she could remain behind with Nzuzo I nodded and walked out with one of her helpers I had to sit on a 25 liter bucket after drinking the water I had the urge to pee she said I should pee when I pushed it felt like floods of water were coming out of me I couldn't even stand eventually it stopped I screamed when I saw what was in the bucket it was filled with blood and green things, I was told to drink another jar I did then sat on another bucket the same thing happened but this time the blood was weak and little. When I was done i went to the car I got in the backseat put my head on mah's lap I just cried loudly she brushed my head

Aunt: "it's okay Yammy I understand"

Me: "this all Nzuzo's fault"

Aunt: "this is not the time to point fingers be strong my child you are capable of it" I nodded I guess I must have fallen asleep because I woke up when the car was moving.

.

Weeks later the pimples had disappeared but they left me with black spots I had to put make up everyday for a cover up. It was Friday of the wedding my whole family was in durban my aunts and uncles as well as my cousins we weren't a huge family just 3 uncles who were married, 2 aunts who were also married and 15 cousins this time around Mayowo showed up. We had a dinner at the hotel they were staying in everyone was happy which made me happy.

Saturday I was woken up by noise in my room Claire, Masisi, Priscilla, Arizona and Harper were singing and jumping up and down my bed

Me: "okay I'm up" I sat up

Masisi: "you getting married!!!!"

Them: "ooooh!!!!"

Claire: "you should have let us do the bachelorette party for you"

Masisi: "you know Nzuzo"

Arizona: "there's no way he can be worse then Lizwi" I laughed

Harper: "Zulu men got controlling issues"

Masisi&i: "no they do not!!"

Claire: "don't be defensive"

Priscilla: "breakfast is set on the patio"

Me: "give me a minute girls I'll be out soon"

Masisi: "want to call Nzuzo"

Me: "just need to know how are my sons"

Arizona: "liar she's hoping to score some phone sex"

Me: "eewu!! No just go away" they laughed leaving the room I called Nzuzo I already had 5 missed calls from him, he answered immediately

Nzuzo: "was starting to think you ran away" I giggled we went in speaking terms well I wasn't talking to him up until 3 days ago

Me: "I'm already your wife in every way what would be the point of running"

Nzuzo: "I can't wait to see you"

Me: "me too"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you, where are my sons"

Nzuzo; "in the big house"

Me: "are they okay"

Nzuzo: "yes, what are you doing now"

Me: "about to go have breakfast"

Nzuzo; "don't be late, I'll call you when we leaving"

Me: "okay Dr Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "see you at the alter Dr Khumalo" I dropped went to wash my face and brushed my teeth I went out to the patio

Jenna: "here comes the bride!!" My loud aunt

April: "all dressed in jamies" everyone laughed I was giggling shaking my head

Dad: "leave my daughter alone you two crazy women, come sit next to daddy so you can eat" I nodded went to sit between him and Nosi, I started eating after breakfast my planner had already sent her assistant to make sure things run accordingly here. I had taken a long hot bubble bath I got lotioned and put on a robe went to sit in front of the mirror the hair dresser did my hair she blew dry my weave tied it into a messy bun, the make up artist took over by the time he was done I looked amazing. Claire came in and helped me put on my dress everyone was already dressed, my wedding dress was strapless with lace from top until mid waist it had a lavender small belt that comes to a bow in from then it was princess dress from there it wasn't long just around the ankles I finished getting it on I put on my white givenchy heels the hairdresser put on the veil we left for mouth edge country club we were having an outside wedding the Gods blessed us with an amazing sunny weather. When we got there the bridesmaids went in first in their lavender dresses the colour was the same just different designs the groomsmen were in black suits and black shirts finally it was my turn

Dad: "ready to go to your hero baby girl" I breathed out

Me: "take me to my husband"

Dad: "did I tell you how beautiful you look"

Me: "about a thousand times" he smiled he hooked his arm on mine then kissed my head Lira started singing ngiyazifela we walked down the aisle that was filled with rose petals my husband was standing there with black slim fit tuxedo and white shirt he had the most beautiful smile I couldn't see anything else Nzuzo met us halfway him and dad exchanged some words but I couldn't even hear what they were saying until Nzuzo took my hand

Nzuzo: "ready thembalam" I nodded we walked to the stand that was beautifully decorated with white flowers and cloth "you look breathtakingly beautiful Yammy"

Me: "so do you"

Priest: "who gives this woman away" dad stood up

Dad: "I do" the priest nodded

Priest: "we have gathered here to witness and to celebrate the couple as they meet in matrimony. Before we go any further anyone who thinks these two should not wed speak now or forever hold your peace" Nzuzo and I were just looking at each other with goofy smiles on our faces the priest was about to say something when a chair was pushed back someone cleared their throat I turned to see who is about to ruin my wedding and there he was standing in the middle of the aisle

Him: "I do" I felt hot and dizzy everything started spinning

PART 37

I stared at Bradley in disbelief everyone was looking at him then at me because it was quite clear that the wedding wasn't stopped because of Nzuzo

Masisi: "what the hell Lani?" She whispered next to me she was my maid of honor

Nzuzo: "Lani are you going to do something" I looked at dad he was talking to Justin, Justin and David stood up walking to Bradley

Brad: "I just want to talk to her to Justin"

David: "we can do this calmly Bradley or we can drag you out of here bleeding"

Nzuzo: "he is Bradley?!" He was already walking towards them Sandile pulled him back "sandz you better let go of me zalo"

Sandile: "don't do this you scaring Lani" I was honestly in tears now everyone was looking at me like a bitch who was two timing her husband Nzuzo pushed Sandile back and marched for Bradley within a second Bradley was on the floor bleeding aunty and Thandi were screaming while Justin was trying to pull Nzuzo off Bradley I could feel someone shaking me and calling my name, I just walked ignoring everyone who was calling me I started running someone held my arm when I looked back it was Nzuzo his shirt had blood

Me: "just let go of me please"

Nzuzo: "Yammy" he looked at me as if begging

Me: "please that's all I'm asking for"

Claire: "give her space Nzuzo let her breath"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry Yammy"

Me: "you could have let Justin handle things Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry I love you Lani" he let go I walked to one of the rooms we were going to use for changing I just threw myself on the bed and cried Claire sat next to me

Claire: "cry it out then fix yourself and go marry that man out there"

Me: "how could Bradley do this to me? He broke up with me then he does this!"

Claire: "cry it all out"

Me: "and Nzuzo!! What the hell was he behaving like a hooligan for? In front of our family and friends Claire"

Claire: "it's understandable"

Me: "I want to go home"

Claire: "that won't happen, you going to fix yourself and go out there marry your Nzuzo. Remember those nights and days you spent crying because of Nzuzo? Don't mess this up just because Bradley decided to be a dog"

Me: "how will I even face all those people"

Claire: "fuck them. Your friends and family know you and we all know you not the two timing type so fuck what everyone else thinks"

Me: "can you please call Nzuzo for me and tell everyone to just give us a few minutes the wedding will go on" she pulled me up smiling

Nzuzo: "I'm here" he spoke from outside the door Claire just laughed

Claire: "get in" the door opened and Nzuzo got in "I'll let you talk it out then assure people things are still well" she stood up "no make up sex please" Nzuzo chuckled she walked out Nzuzo came to sit next to me I crawled getting on top of him he laid on the bed pulling me down with him

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "it's not your fault it's Bradley's fault"

Nzuzo: "why are you still in contact with him Yamkelani"

Me: "I am not"

Nzuzo: "how did he know about our wedding"

Me: "he is a qualified psychotic stalker babe I didn't even know he is in South Africa"

Nzuzo: "I believe you"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I feel like I ruined our wedding"

Me: "you didn't but you really should have let Justin and David handle things"

Nzuzo: "I'm really sorry baby"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "so you still want to marry me" I giggled

Me: "we already married fool" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "you know what I mean"

Me: "God know we've been through a lot I won't let this stand in a way of our happily ever after" he kissed my head

Nzuzo: "I'm glad"

Me: "let's go get married"

Nzuzo: "no make up sex" I giggled shaking my head "it's been so long"

Me: "just 3 weeks"

Nzuzo: "worst 3 weeks of my life baby hha being in the same house with you but having you not talking to me"

Me: "your saw the shit your baby mama put me through"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby and let's not talk about this please" he nodded

Me: "you still won't tell me what the healer said after I left"

Nzuzo: "there's nothing to tell" I nodded "you look beautiful love"

Me: "thank you and you need to change your shirt"

Nzuzo: "eish yeah"

Me: "promise me you will stop hitting people Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "aah baby"

Me: "I'm serious"

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "I won't marry you" he laughed and held my face making me look at him

Nzuzo: "you already a Khumalo in every way my love" I smiled we kissed slowly for the longest until someone started knocking I pulled back we looked at each other just smiling whoever was knocking was really irritating "come in" the door opened Masisi got in with the planner and the girl who was doing my face

Masisi: "can you two stop sucking each other's faces and dad is panicking out there" I was about to say something when Nzuzo held my face kissing me deeply I tried pulling back but he held the back of my head his tongue swiping through my mouth I let out a moan then he let go, he stood up and helped me up

Nzuzo: "I'll see you at the altar"

Me: "okay" he gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "ladies" he flashed them a smile and walked out

MakeupG: "mmh your husband though" I just chuckled

Planner: "let's get your face done so we can continue" I sat on the chair. Everything went according to plan it was now time to say our vows I let out a soft breath and looked at Nzuzo who was just staring at me with a gorgeous smile

Me: "Mntungwa, I don't even know where to start love. I love you Nzuzo I love you so much at times it hurts, those years we spent apart were the worst. From the time I fell in love with you back when I was 17 I never stopped loving you, you brought light into my dark life welcoming you into my life was the best decision I had ever made. I've come alive since I met you babe they say after a storm comes a rainbow and you my rainbow Nzuzo my hero my very own chuck norris. Nobody knows me like you know me baby and I love you. I vow to love until the end of time, to make you happy always and forever respect you, to keep our house a home, to raise our children in the best way I know how to, to never go to bed angry at you, to be there through it all through the good and the bad times. I love you Phiwo if possible you could cut my chest and see my heart you own it baby" he wiped my tears with his thumbs then he held my chin and kissed me the priest cleared his throat while people mumbled

Priest: "we not there yet" people laughed as Nzuzo pulled back apologizing

Nzuzo: "you love me"

Me: "and you love me"

Nzuzo: "zishubile izinto namazwi anginawo thembalam , it's true that what is meant to be will be, remember I told you I love you and I will marry you you just laughed and said never I was in grade 9 you were in grade 7 I didn't know much about love but I knew that you were going to be my wife no matter. I love you Yamkelani, I love you for everything little thing that you possess even the things that you hate like how you snore and get nightmares when you drink coffee just before we go to bed. I praise God that he made and nobody could ever replace you, you my everything one and only Yammy, you the queen of my heart. You my home Yamkelani my peace and hope, those years we spent apart I was a shell of a man but you came back and put soul into me I love you and not even death will do us apart and I will hold your hand through anything and everything we come across. I vow to respect you, to put your happiness first above all things, to never go to bed angry, to lay my world at your feet, to love you always, to be there for you through it all baby, to never let anyone or anything come between us most of all to protect you shield you from the evils of the world love I know you said I should promise to stop hitting people but I'm sorry thembalam I can't because I would kill for you with no hesitation. I love you Yamkelani I've never loved anyone the way I love you I don't even wish to baby" he wiped my tears again smiling

Priest: "what more can I say they've already shared what is in their hearts. Do you Nzuzo Khumalo take Yamkelani Demus as your wife in the eyes of the Heavenly Father to hold for better or worse?"

Nzuzo: "I do"

Priest: "do you Yamkelani Demus take Nzuzo Khumalo as your husband in the eyes of the Heavenly Father to hold for better or worse?"

Me: "I do"

Priest: "by the power vested upon me I now pronounce you Mr & Mrs Nzuzo Khumalo, you may kiss your bride"

Nzuzo: "come here mrs Khumalo" he cupped my face we kissed slowly the people went crazy with oohs ncoohs whistles some clapping after awhile I tried pulling back but Nzuzo put his hand on my back the other just slightly below my breast using his thumb to brush it just slowly his groomsmen were busy cheering on I wanted him to stop but I didn't want to pull back it all felt so good but I pushed him back he pressed his forehead on mine his eyes were bloodshot red

Nzuzo: "the things you do to me" I giggled he adjusted his pants "it's hurts"

Me: "I'm sorry" we were whispering he removed his forehead we walked on the isle with people throwing flower petals at us when we got away from the people our planner was waiting for us there Nzuzo lifted me up pressed me on the wall we kissed deeply his erection was digging painfully on my thigh I pushed back

Nzuzo: "can we find a room"

Me: "Nzuzo behave please"

Nzuzo: "baby please"

Sfiso: "ayi Nzuzo" he put me down the bridal party and grooms party were there we were going to go take pictures then change and join the rest of the people in the hall

Nzuzo: "leave me alone Sfiso" I was starting to feel bad he was really turned on

Mazwi: "be strong" he patted his shoulder Nzuzo shot him a dead stare

Planner: "we already behind schedule let's move people" we walked to the golf carts got in then drove to where we taking pictures

Me: "I'm sorry baby"

Nzuzo: "it's fine mrs Khumalo it's okay"

Me: "I want to kiss you but I don't want to make it worse" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "just looking at you makes it worse baby"

Me: "should I hide my face" I covered my face with my hands he pulled them off laughing

Nzuzo: "your body babe your spirit and smile can you hide all of that"

Me: "it's our wedding I can't go missing" I pouted he gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "I'll handle myself babe just that it's kinda hurt" we got to where we taking pictures after lots of fun we were done. We went to change in our separate rooms I was wearing a cream white strapless body hugging mermaid dress with lace back and nude red bottom heels my bridesmaids were wearing black dresses when we were all done the boys were already waiting for us so we left to the hall it was beautifully decorated with white and a touch of lavender we had dinner while listening to speeches Masi's speech made me cry by the time she was done we were both sobbing and Claire's speech had so embarrassed I wanted to crawl under the table she was speaking about being a freak in bed greeting my husband with a blow job every morning dad had his head on the table the entire time. When everything was done people left my family along with Nzuzo's family and a few of our friends went back to the house we had a bar set up there with a dj stand and cocktail tables and couches there was finger food buffet I was actually tired the kids were sleeping it was after 01:00 Nzuzo was drinking the elders had gone to the hotel I went to check on the kids their were sleeping peacefully in their rooms including the twins Liam had left with Nzuzo's aunt and uncle, i went to my room changed into leggings thigh boots a vest and Nzuzo's bomber jacket I took my phone I had loads of missed calls especially from one number I called it whoever it is answered immediately "hello Lani" I dropped the call but he called back

Me: "why"

Brad: "I'm sorry I wasn't thinking"

Me: "you could have ruined my wedding I just want to know why"

Brad: "I love you Lani I miss you I should have just moved with you when you were relocating"

Me: "you didn't Bradley and that's it. You were wrong in so many levels"

Brad: "I love you Lani"

Me: "I see you want Nzuzo to kill you"

Brad: "I've moved this side it need about a week now I moved for you Lani so we can fix us you know our baby would be turning 3 next month"

Me: "Bradley please don't do this"

Brad: "I'm going to fight for you Lani"

Me: "Nzuzo will kill you"

Nzuzo: "who am I killing" he was coming in the closet I dropped the call switched off my phone I put it in the drawer

Me: "no one that matters baby" he walked to me

Nzuzo: "you look sexy dr Khumalo well you've been looking sexy the whole day" he held my waist burying his face on my neck he reeked of alcohol

Me: "you also sexy dr Khumalo" he lifted me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he walked us out of the closet he put me on the bed getting between my legs

Nzuzo: "I know I owe you a honeymoon and trust me I'll take wherever in the world you want to go to as soon as I've sorted out our finances and I've bought you that house I promised you at mhlanga ridge"

Me: "I'm in no rush baby besides we already celebrated our wedding night" after going to court we spent a few days in Cape Town just the two of us

Nzuzo: "I should have at least booked us into a hotel yazi baby"

Me: "we have a lifetime of celebration right now let's go out and be with our people"

Nzuzo: "I want my cake"

Me: "you shouldn't mix alcohol and sweet things" he laughed lazily

Nzuzo; "don't be smart" he kneeled on the bed pulled me he took the jacket and pulled up my vest I wasn't wearing underwear we kissed I pushed back his coat he threw it on the floor I started unbuttoning his shirt he took it off while I was touching his packs I pulled out of the kiss when I touched something like a plastic I looked at his chest in a little panic and gratitude

Me: "baby"

Nzuzo: "you like it baby" I nodded with tears already falling

Me: "I love it" it was a tattoo of my face on his chest just under it there was angel wings then Avery Thando Oluhle Liam written between the wings I touched it lightly "is it painful baby"

Nzuzo: "it's itchy"

Me: "it's beautiful I absolutely love it"

Nzuzo: "I got it yesterday"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "you forever my lady" we kissed again while stripping each other when we were both completely naked he rolled us over then lifted me up slowly putting me down letting his dick slide in I breathed out letting myself adjust to having him fully in then I started moving he shut his eyes and kept his hands on my breasts ...

PART 38

I was woken up by cold lips kissing me all over my face I smiled and held his head

Nzuzo: "open your eyes love" I did

Me: "good morning baby"

Nzuzo: "slept well?" I shook my head we hardly slept

Me: "I still need a few more hours of sleep"

Nzuzo: "we having lunch with the family then we have to see everyone off"

Me: "do I have to be there" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "yes you do" I pouted "I brought your breakfast"

Me: "thank you" he helped me sit up and gave me a tray with english breakfast, fruit salad, juice and coffee "this is a lot"

Nzuzo: "we need to put some meat into these bones"

Me: "I don't think I'll ever gain weight" I started eating

Nzuzo: "you married now you allowed to get all fat and ugly" we laughed

Me: "then you will leave me for someone thin and pretty"

Nzuzo: "I'll never leave you Lani"

Me: "you might not leave me but you will definitely cheat" he laughed and kissed my forehead

Nzuzo: "I kinda want everyone gone now I just want us"

Me: "why didn't you say you will never cheat on me"

Nzuzo: "I don't even need to say that because i will never cheat on you" he gave me a soft peck "you need to go see the Russell on tomorrow he said once the pimples are completely gone he can do laser for the black spots so he needs you to come through have some tests done" Russell is a dermatologist at work

Me: "there's a chance that I'll get my skin back" he nodded smiling "as it was"

Nzuzo: "yep" I felt like jumping on him

Me: "wow!" He held my cheek and kissed me

Nzuzo: "yes" he kissed me again I pushed him off laughing

Me: "I will never finish eating with you busy sucking on my lips" he took the tray putting on the bedside then pulled me down making me lay on the bed he got between my legs

Nzuzo: "rather make it easy"

Me: "we didn't sleep last night Nzuzo don't you get tired"

Nzuzo: "20 years from now you will be missing these days, when I can't get Mntungwa up" I pulled his t-shirt off laughing

Me: "shut up and kiss me"

Nzuzo: "yes ma'am" we kissed I pushed down his sweatpants using my feet then he kicked them off he lifted my leg putting it on his neck then he entered me I shut my eyes and arched my back.

I took a bath few hours later got out lotioned got dressed black 3 quarter body hugging dress and black n white superstars after putting on make up I left my weave lose went downstairs met up with Avery on the staircase

Avery: "hey bae"

Me: "why is your t-shirt torn Avery" he was wearing black jeans with a white t-shirt and a gray torn on top

Avery: "it's not torn this is how it supposed to be"

Me: "I understand the jeans but the t-shirt Avery it like we don't buy you clothes go change it"

Avery: "mom I bought it like this it a style"

Me: "no Avery go change what do you want people to say"

Avery: "mom come on"

Nzuzo: "what's going on he was coming down the stairs carrying Oluhle"

Avery: "mom wants me to change" I looked at Nzuzo he was wearing the same t-shirt but his was navy

Me: "lord have mercy!! Amen" I left them there I found the girls in the kitchen preparing pap and salads "hello hello"

Thandi: "wives of today! We were supposed to get here just to eat not cook"

Me: "shane tell your brother to hire a chef habe" they laughed

Claire: "tell her sis I'm sure her brother kept you up all night I even heard some satisfactory groans coming from his room this morning"

Arizona: "Claire you seriously have no flitter on that mouth of yours"

Masisi: "I hear that but the speech she made last night!"

Nozipho: "Claire needs prayers"

Claire: "I have a very satisfied and happy husband his right outside go ask him" she pouted rolling her eyes

Me: "the elders don't need to know that"

Claire: "child please they know about sex, how do you think all your big heads were brought to earth"

Masisi: "by a plane!!" We laughed

Me: "all I know is I don't need baba'ncane and mah knowing what I do with their son"

Thandi: "you a screamer Yammy even back in high school we knew when you and Nzuzo were doing the nasty"

Me: "oh God!"

Thandi: "aah aah aah oh God Nzuzo aaaah Nzuzooooo faster faster yes ye..."

Me: "ok we get it shut up" everyone was in stitches I just walked away going to the patio I greeted the elders they were sitting on the couches having snacks and talking Nzuzo and the guys were drinking around the fire braaing Nzuzo called me over I went to them

Me: "hello hi" they greeted back

Nzuzo: "I miss you" I looked up at him smiling

Me: "I'm right here"

Nzuzo: "I want you next to me"

Me: "I have to help out in the kitchen"

Nzuzo: "no you don't, let Thandi and Masisi handle all of that"

Me: "okay I also miss you anyway" he held my chin we kissed

Justin: "the level of dpa you two show is too much" Nzuzo deepened our kiss I felt someone pulling my dress I pulled out of the kiss and looked down it was Thando

Thando: "I'm hungry"

Me: "I'll be back" I took Thando we walked towards the kitchen "where is your sister"

Thando: "playing"

Me: "why don't you go play I'll call you when I'm done making food" she shook her head

Thando: "no I don't want to play"

Me: "what do you want" she pulled my weave playing with it

Thando: "I want food" we got in the kitchen

Me: "wait here" I sat her down on the high chair made them hot dogs while talking to the women in the kitchen Thando was munching on a fish sticks when I was done I sent Akhona to call the other kids I set up for them in the dinning area with oros I left them eating there went to Nzuzo he pulled a chair and sat down with me on his lap

Nzuzo: "you should have worn something lose I could have my leg between your thighs right now"

Me: "don't be nasty, why are you wearing a torn t-shirt baby" he laughed

Nzuzo: "it supposed to be like this my love"

Me: "don't buy my son torn t-shirts Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I buy Avery's clothes I'll buy him what is cool"

Me: "don't you want another child"

Nzuzo: "thought we agreed on stopping with Liam" I honestly still wanted another child a girl Nzuzo has his girls and Enhle reminds me every time we meet that the twins are hers not mine

Me: "yes we did"

Nzuzo: "okay" he kissed my cheek

Me: "but what if we did have another child" he sighed

Nzuzo: "can we revisit this conversation when we don't have visitors around the house" I looked down nodding he held my chin making me look at him "I'm not saying no don't be upset"

Me: "I'm not upset"

Nzuzo: "good" he gave me a soft peck then joined in on the conversation that everyone was making

.

The following day it was back to the basics Nzuzo and I woke up had a steamy shower session we got out lotioned and got dressed I changed Liam's nappy he was growing so fast he was 8 months and 3 weeks I put him on his sleeper Nzuzo went downstairs with him I got my bags followed them downstairs found everyone having breakfast the helper took Liam she was coming in earlier now after breakfast we left dropped the kids off first then drove to work Nzuzo walked me to my office first

Nzuzo: "lunch?"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "I'll pick you up" I giggled he held my cheek brushing my dimple

Me: "okay love"

Nzuzo: "have I told you how much I love you"

Me: "yes! Now go be amazing work on brains" we kissed and I pushed him out then called in Sthe we went over my this weeks schedule over coffee we were still busy when someone knocked

Me: "come in" the door opened and a delivery guy came in with a box of red roses and chocolate I signed for it he. Sthe and I continued with work then he left my office I looked at the card that came with the flowers

you look beautiful today I love you xoxo

I smiled and took my phone and called my hubby

Nzuzo: "love"

Me: "thank you for the roses and the chocolate babe they smell lovely"

Nzuzo: "I'd like to take the honor but I didn't send you anything"

Me: "oh"

Nzuzo: "baby who is sending you flowers"

Me: "uhm we'll talk later" I switched the call and called Bradley

Brad: "beautiful"

Me: "don't send me things"

Brad: "just continuing with our tradition" back in London Bradley used to send me roses and chocolate every Monday

Me: "just stop Bradley please"

Brad: "you always did look better in skin tight jeans then anything else" I looked around

Me: "are you following me"

Brad: "ofcos not I'm not psycho I saw you in the morning"

Me: "stop please"

Brad: "I love you" I dropped the call he called again

Me: "leave me alone Bradley Cooper please"

Brad: "you are mine Lani you promised me forever and that will happen"

Me: "you being psychotic right now Bradley and it scaring me"

Brad: "you shouldn't be scare.." The door opened Nzuzo got in I dropped the call put my phone in the drawer

Nzuzo: "so who sent you the flowers"

Me: "I don't know" he sighed and sat on the couch I went to sit next to h

Nzuzo: "have you been flirting with someone"

Me: "no ofcos not"

Nzuzo: "then who is sending you flowers"

Me: "I don't know"

Nzuzo: "let me see the card" I stood up and gave it to him "so it someone who saw you today probably someone from he the hospital"

Me: "I don't know babe, look let's not stress about this maybe someone is pulling some sick joke"

Nzuzo: "well it's not funny Lani!!!"

Me: "hey don't yell at me I didn't send the flowers to myself"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry I just don't want other people looking at you like that"

Me: "you can't have control over everything"

Nzuzo: "I know and it's sucks" I got on top of him straddling him

Me: "I'm sorry but I'm your wife no one else gets to touch me or go to bed with me or does this" I kissed him he held my ass bringing me closer to him we kissed deeply I pulled back when he was getting hard "I love you only you for eternity"

Nzuzo: "I love you too for eternity"

Me: "go to work ke"

Nzuzo: "I can't take you to lunch I have a surgery that just came up"

Me: "it's okay I'll get a take away should I buy you something"

Nzuzo: "no it's going to be a long surgery you have to pick up the kids"

Me: "okay" we kissed shortly I got off him he gave me the car keys and left.

I got on with my work until it was time to pick up the kids I went to pick them up then went back to the hospital we went pass the cafe bought us sandwiches and juice we ate in my office after eating I went back to my work they did their homeworks. We had to leave late because Nzuzo's surgery went longer then expected but luckily Masisi was already home we got home around 19:00 we had dinner then I cleaned the kitchen went to bath Liam after feeding him I sang to him until he fell asleep after putting him on his cot I went to take a hot bubble bath Nzuzo got in the bathroom already stripping I moved forward he got in behind me he wrapped his arms around me in a sigh

Me: "long day"

Nzuzo: "like no other, I hate Mondays"

Me: "well it's over"

Nzuzo: "yes it is" he started massaging my shoulders I moaned "wana get out of here I can give you a proper massage"

Me: "yeah" we washed up dried ourselves he carried me to our bed he went in the closet and came out with massaging oils he made started massaging me I was just moaning softly he went lower and lower he was busy with my thighs he entered me softly.....

.

Week went by with Bradley sending me gifts everyday and texting me. Another week went by he was now quiet as if he never started on that weekend I ran into him at circus circus in musgrave I was having lunch with Thandi he was also there with some girl they were really cosy he acted like he doesn't know me. Another week went by it was Sunday morning I woke up Nzuzo was asleep he had just came in from a night shift I gave him a soft peck then got off the bed I went to wash my face brushed my teeth I got dressed in sport shorts a sport bra and airmax I plucked in my headsets on the iPod went downstairs i wanted to go for my Sunday runs, I ran into Nosi and Avery going to the tv room with cereals I turned up the volume then started running I had just turned a corner by Noni's house when I felt like someone is watching me I stopped running turned around but I didn't see anyone or anything suspicious I continued running out of nowhere someone covered my eyes I screamed they quickly covered my nose and mouth with a cloth I tried fighting they firmly held my waist lifting me up I was kicking the air as the person dragged me away I slowly lost energy my kicks got weaker and weaker eventually I passed out

PART 39

I woke up with a banging headache I was in bed wearing pjamies I sat up the light was so bright it made my headache worse I looked around the room looked exactly like Bradley's room back at his house in London I started panicking thinking we in London I screamed and cried ignoring the pounding that was happening in my head I screamed until my voice was gone and I was out of tears. I stood went to look outside the window there was nothing but trees around one thing I was sure of was that i was not in London I went to open the door it wasn't even locked I put on the ugg's that were next to the bed I walked out the room I could hear sounds I followed the sound all the way down the stairs to a tv room music was playing I looked around there was no one I saw another door I went to it as soon as I touch the door handle a deafening sound went off all around the house I covered my ears with my hand kneeling down the sound was too loud I'm sure it could be heard 10 kilometers away suddenly it was quiet "I see you awake" I looked up it was Bradley

Me: "you"

Brad: "yes love, look I'm cooking follow me" he turned and disappeared into another room I assumed it was the kitchen I stood up followed him "I'm sorry about the headache eat this so you can take the pills" he pointed to the high chair there was sandwich and juice on the counter I sat down and started eating I was really starving "I know how fluffy pink pjs always make you better so I got them for you" he was facing his pots cooking while having a beer in just shorts and apron I finished the sandwich in a second

Me: "I'm done" he turned to look at me with a concern look on his face

Brad: "why does your voice sound like that Lani" I shrugged my shoulders he gave me adcol I took them with juice

Me: "can I please go home Bradley"

Brad: "you are home this is our home"

Me: "this is not my home Bradley. I want to go to my house be with my kids and my husband"

Brad: "you are home dammit!!!!" He turned red same time

Me: "no I'm not"

Brad: "you my woman I own you"

Me: "you psychotic"

Brad: "don't call me that!!!" He threw his beer across the room it hit the wall I screamed hurting my throat more "see you making me angry I don't want to be angry because I know yelling terrifies you"

Me: "I just want to go home Brad I'll pretend like none of this ever happened. I have kids Brad my son is just 9 months please"

Brad: "do you want me to go fetch Liam, I can get him for you" I looked at him in disgust my tears started falling

Me: "please don't touch my kids" he smiled

Brad: "I will never harm you Lani or your kids I love you" he came closer to me I jumped off the chair and moved back he just shook his head went back to his pots "feel free around the house, the whole house is sound proofed and we far from people so feel free to scream as well as loud as you want and there's no way of running the alarm system is high tech you even touch the windows or the main doors the alarm will go off within a minute of it ringing the house will be filled with gas which will knock out whoever is in the house"

Me: "why are you doing this Bradley" he put the pots aside and walked to me I backed up until I was pressing against the wall

Brad: "since when are you scared of me Lani? You loved me actually you still love me, remember how you used to scream my name from the top of your voice when we made love the way you used to breath hard and fast how you used to dig your nails into my skin, don't you miss that our intense love making the connection baby what we had was amazing I want that back I know you also want it" he was caress my skin my tears wouldn't stop coming down

Me: "Bradley please what we had was great but it over now I belong to someone else please we don't have all of that now" he smashed his lips on mine I tried pushing him back but he grabbed my hands pinned them on the wall above me I bit his lip hard I could taste blood he pulled back he touched his lip his finger had blood he gave me a hard back hand slap I fell hit the tiles with my forehead

Brad: "look at what you made do?!!!" He was pacing up and down pulling his hair "I don't want to hurt you Lani I love you" he kneeled down lifted me up he walked out the kitchen upstairs to the room I was sleeping in he put on the bed went in the bathroom he got out with a bowl and cotton wool he started wiping the blood of my forehead while apologizing he put a double plaster on "I'm sorry baby I'm really sorry" I just nodded while sniffing and wiping my tears "please say you forgive me please" he was also in tears "please tell me you forgive me Lani we've already been through a lot please tell me we can pass this I'm sorry baby"

Me: "I forgive you" he gave me a soft peck his bottom lip was getting swollen

Brad: "I cooked dinner you can make yourself comfortable while I go out to town I need to pick up the cake it's our baby's birthday today" I thought this was my chance if we around people I could run away

Me: "can I come with you"

Brad: "nonono baby you had a headache and you just fell you need the rest"

Me: "I'm fine really I just want to come with you baby" he smiled I saw a little bit of Bradley there the Bradley I fell in love with the Bradley who was my source of happiness for over 5 years the Bradley who wanted a future with me

Brad: "some other time my love right now rest I love you okay"

Me: "please babe I want to come with you"

Brad: "Lani rest" he pulled the cover over me "sleep" I sighed and nodded he kissed my forehead and walked out the door opened he peaked in "Yamkelani"

Me: "yes"

Brad: "don't try anything stupid"

Me: "okay" he left I stayed in the bed for over 10 minutes then I went by the window a part of me wanted to try opening it but another part didn't want to risk it I kept thinking what if that loud alarm starts ringing and the whole gas thing I didn't want to die. I walked out the room I looked around it was huge with 8 bedrooms 2 lounges, a dinning area and kitchen, tv room and cinema room, a gym there was also another room that was locked. In the kitchen he had left the bottle of adcol I took 3 more my head was painful and my forehead was swollen I went up to the room got under the covers I switched off immediately.

I was woken up by Bradley hovering on top of me it felt like a weird dream I shut my eyes he kissed my neck while calling my name I opened my eyes even though they felt really heavy

Brad: "wake up baby"

Me: "mmh"

Brad: "it's time to eat baby" he kneeled on the bed pulling me up I opened my eyes

Me: "okay I'm up"

Brad: "go wash your face and rinse your mouth" I nodded and went to the bathroom did just that he was waiting me I followed him downstairs, he had a beautiful candle light picnic in the lounge there was soft music playing

Me: "what's all of this"

Brad: "we celebrating our daughter's birthday"

Me: "you don't even know when the baby would have been born or what gender it was going to be"

Brad: "I know"

Me: "no you don't"

Brad: "don't question me woman!!!"

Me: "I'm sorry" he breathed out

Brad: "sit please" I sat on the cushion he sat across me with the coffee table between us we started eating "you know baby I was thinking" I ignored him "Lani"

Me: "yes"

Brad: "I want us to try having another child I'll do things differently this time around I'll make sure you carry the baby to full term"

Me: "you really psychotic if you think I'll let you get me pregnant let alone have sex with you"

Brad: "I don't know why you being like this Lani you like to hurt my feelings"

Me: "are you not hurting me by keeping me here against my will! Bradley you abducted me"

Brad: "if you want to leave leave Lani I'm not stopping you" I stood up walked to the main door it opened as I got near it I looked at him he was leaning on the wall with his arms crossed over his chest I got out the whole yard was covered by walls I walked down the drive way it was already dark outside but the driveway was covered by light when I got to the gate there was security house with securities they didn't say anything the gate opened and closed as soon as I got out I looked around there was nothing but a road and tress all over it was so dark I couldn't even tell if I was still in durban I found myself crying I felt defeated I walked back to the gate it was locked there was no bell to ring the security guys were still just staring at me

Me: "can you open" they stared at me as if things couldn't get worse the rain started pouring I was soaking wet within 5 minutes the gate wouldn't open I screamed and screamed eventually I went on my knees "Bradley please i know you can hear me please open please" I was freezing it started thundering I just curled up in fetus position in front of the gate "as I walk through the dark valley I will have no fear for I know you with me you live in me you walk by me everyday and night all I ask is you welcome me into heaven and you protect my children and my husband through everything and anything, amen" I closed my eyes.

.

I woke up feeling over heated I was under the covers with Bradley wrapped around me I could feel his erection on my ass and his hand on my cake I looked under the cover I was completely naked I tried moving but he held me tighter

Brad: "hey love" he kissed my neck I felt like screaming

Me: "please let go off me" he didn't instead he got on top of me forcefully opening my legs

Brad: "let's make a baby love"

Me: "Bradley no please no please don't do this you know me Bradley you know my past please don't make me relive all of that"

Brad: "I'm not your stepdad I'm your man we making love" I could feel his tip knocking on my entrance

Me: "Bradley no" he kissed my neck I shoved him off with all my might he fell over the bed I got off the bed ran to another room locking it he tried opening the door

Brad: "Lani baby I'm sorry okay I wasn't going to force myself on you i was going to stop if you didn't want me to continue" I moved from the door leaving the key in it I walked over to the couch pushed it all the way to the door he wouldn't stop knocking and moving the door handle "Lani come on stop being childish, you sick you need to eat take your flue medication and keep warm. Come out of that room" I was feeling drowsy I went to the bed got under the covers adding the throw on top I drifted off to sleep shutting out Bradley's screams.

I woke up starving I was still in that room I had slept in I was seriously hungry I went to the closet it was empty I breathed out moved the couch wrapped a cover around my body I unlocked the door went out Bradley was asleep on the floor by the door I went to the bedroom we were using straight to the closet it was filled with woman's clothes it actually looked like my closet from London even with the setting and the shoes and bags I got dressed in sweatpants and a sweater I put on uggs went out the closet he was sitting on the bed I took a step back he stood up

Brad: "I'm sorry about this morning and letting you get wet last night, I don't know what came over me baby that wasn't me"

Me: "I'm hungry" he smiled

Brad: "let's go I'll make us lunch" I went out he followed me we went to the kitchen I had a cereal while he made lunch

Me: "Bradley when will you let me go back home I miss my kids and I should be at work today"

Brad: "I asked you if I should go get your kids and you said no now I don't know what you want from me I really don't know. We leaving for London soon you should pack our bags after lunch"

Me: "Bradley you can't do this please"

Brad: "it's already done"

Me: "take me home!! Bradley Cooper"

Brad: "you are home"

Me: "this is not my home!! Get that through your psychotic head I hate you Bradley I fucken hate you your sight makes me sick you make me sick"

Brad: "call me psychotic again Yamkelani I promise you babe you will regret it"

Me: "PSY.CHO.TIC" I said slowly he took the pan he was using threw it at me I ducked it hit the fridge left a dent on it "are you fucken crazy Bradley" I threw the bowl I was using at him it hit his head after that dishes went flying all over the kitchen he kept blocking them with his arms while I was seriously ducking he came to me fast scooped me up I was kicking and screaming he went in the locked room

threw me on the couch I looked around shocked it was covered with my pictures like the whole room you couldn't even see paint then there were large screens on one screen I could see my gate I saw Masi driving out there was also screens showing every room of my house even the backyard I could see Liam sitting on his playmate in the lounge I was still crying and in shock when I felt a pinch I looked at where it came from Bradley was injecting me with something

Me: "what are you doing"

Brad: "getting you to calm down for the trip" I was getting dizzy

Me: "how did you get those cameras in my house"

Brad: "it's amazing what money could buy you in SA"

Me: "Braaaa" it was lights out

PART 40

I felt dizzy and weak everything was blurry I could see Bradley on top of me he was taking my clothes off I tried lifting my arms to push him off me but they felt heavy

Me: "Brad"

Brad: "yes baby" he was running his hands all over my body he squeezed my breasts groaning

Me: "sssstoooooop pppp.." My words came across as if I'm drunk he held my face kissed me as he entered me every effort of trying to push him off was just useless I couldn't even scream I was crying silently I could feel everything he was doing every thrust every touch and grab I could hear his groans

Brad: "fuck baby I've been watching that idiot trying to satisfy you but failing only I can handle you your pussy curves for my dick only" he pulled back and slammed into me hard I was just praying to God to please make me stop feeling what he was doing I just wished whatever drug he gave me made me numb to feeling eventually he came screaming my name loudly he collapsed on top of me I laid there with him on top of me until he started snoring softly I just cried silently

.

When I woke up it was dark Bradley was asleep spread out next to me I got off bed I had a little bit of energy I was wearing pjamas his phone was on the bedside I felt a pinch of hope I took it the time was 04:30 it was locked I slowly lifted his thumb one thing I knew for sure was that sex made Bradley sleep heavily I took his thumb it unlocked with a loud sound I stopped breathing for that second he stirred a little and started snoring again I tip toed out the room I quickly dialed Nzuzo's number

Nzuzo: "ja"

Me: "baby" I heard shuffling

Nzuzo: "Yammy"

Me: "oh God baby please find me I'm so scared"

Nzuzo: "where are you"

Me: "it's Bradley he kidnapped me he is taking me to Londo.." Something pushed me hard I fell

Brad: "you stupid bitch!!!!" He kicked me repeatedly I didn't cry I took the kicks hard when he kicked my stomach I cried out as I heard something break his phone wouldn't stop ringing and I knew it was Nzuzo

Me: "Bradley I'm sorry please" he stopped and kneeled next to me

Brad: "are you going to pull that stunt again"

Me: "no I'm sorry" he held my cheeks pressing them together he kissed me he lifted me up

Brad: "I should punish you for this"

Me: "I'm sorry Bradley I dont know what I was thinking please don't hurt me"

Brad: "you going to make it up to me?"

Me: "yes"

Brad: "good" he put me on the bed and got on top of me I winced in pain he moved "is it painful" I nodded with tears running down my face he pulled up my pj top "Jesus Christ baby I'm so sorry I'm so sorry" he got off the bed and punched the wall repeatedly while apologizing eventually he dropped to his knees his hands filled with blood Bradley was really sick this wasn't the Bradley I knew and fell in love with I tried sitting up but my stomach was really painful I'm sure I broke a rib or two

Me: "it's okay Bradley I'm not angry" it was either I play along or I get seriously hurt I've seen cases of several disorders some go as far as killing, he looked at me

Brad: "you not"

Me: "I'm not just please get me something for the pain"

Brad: "you don't hate me" yes I do

Me: "ofcos not" he nodded smiling still crying

Brad: "you love me"

Me: "yes just like before" he stood up came to the bed he kissed I kissed him back his lips formed a smile he got on top of balancing with his elbows on the side so to not put his weigh on my body he pulled back and pressed his forehead on mine

Brad: "I love you Yamkelani"

Me: "I love you more Bradley" we kissed again shortly "please get me some pain meds"

Brad: "okay love" he got off the bed went out I tried standing up slowly my stomach was really painful I walked to the bathroom I lifted my top up I was seriously bruised "baby!"

Me: "I'm in the bathroom" I peed then washed my hands I went out the bathroom he was sitting on the bed

Brad: "I got you the pills" I took them with water

Me: "come let's clean your hands so we can go back to bed it's still early" he followed me to the bathroom I cleaned his hands with detol and cotton wool when I was done he kissed my forehead we went back to bed he held me from behind

Me: "baby when are we leaving"

Brad: "soon, don't worry about it"

Me: "I just want to know so I can keep our bags packed and ready"

Brad: "I'll let you know in time"

Me: "okay baby but you do know that we don't have to leave right we can live here and be happy"

Brad: "we were happy in London we going to be happy there again" I felt really defeated I said a silent prayer that Nzuzo finds me in time.

I woke up again to a smell of freshly fried bacon Bradley sat on the bed Indian style

Brad: "sit up I got us breakfast" I did he gave me a soft peck

Me: "thank you it smells heavenly"

Brad: "just tryna be nice to my lady"

Me: "you the best" I flashed him a fake smile we started eating

Brad: "I want to be the best for you love"

Me: "you are and I appreciate you" he smiled his eyes twinkled I saw a glimpse of my Bradley there was something really wrong with Bradley it bothered me a little I knew Bradley I spent over 5 years with him and he was the sweetest most loving and caring person this behavior was really not him

Brad: "eat up baby you haven't been eating"

Me: "how is your family"

Brad: "everyone is well"

Me: "I'd like to speak to Marry-Kate" his mom

Brad: "you will speak to her when we get home"

Me: "why not now"

Brad: "because I say so"

Me: "you know what hurts the most" he stopped eating and looked at me

Brad: "what"

Me: "you don't trust me"

Brad: "ofcos I trust baby don't speak like that"

Me: "why won't you let me speak to your mother"

Brad: "she doesn't know I'm here"

Me: "where does she think you are"

Brad: "back in my house"

Me: "how did you get all those cameras in my house"

Brad: "your maid"

Me: "what's going on Bradley be honest"

Brad: "I missed you" he put our food aside and pulled me to him I winced in pain but he didn't pay any mind to that "I missed everything about you about us baby" we kissed he started taking my pjs off

Me: "Bradley stop my body hurts"

Brad: "I'll be gentle babe"

Me: "Bradley no"

Bradley: "yes"

Me: "please stop"

Bradley: "come on Lani I've missed you" he was busy kissing my neck while rubbing on my clit believe me I was dry as a desert in Morocco he pushed his joggers down "what's wrong babe I thought you weren't mad at me"

Me: "kiss me" my insides clenched as he smiled and smashed his lips on mine he rolled us over putting me on top he pushed his tongue in my mouth I gently sucked on it he held my waist directing me to move and I did I got off him as last night's events came flooding I started crying

Brad: "come on Lani now what" he was getting really angry his face was red

Me: "I'm sorry" he pushed me on the bed to lay with my stomach and spread my legs "Bradley no!! Stop please"

Brad: "relax baby" he had my hands pinned above my head with no warning or gentleness he slammed into me hard I cried loudly as he pounded me hard huffing and groaning behind me after what felt like decades he came with one final hard thrust he fell next to me and turned me around he grabbed my cake putting his finger in it

Brad: "that was fuckn amazing baby"

Me: "that was you basically raping me" I whispered

Brad: "what was that baby" I turned to look the other side

Me: "I asked you to stop I told you no but you continued and last night you drugged me" he sat up and grabbed my cheeks pressing them together hard to a point of pain

Brad: "are you trying to say what I think you trying to say"

Me: "I can't ready your mind" his eyes were dark with no remorse and filled with anger

Brad: "you know what I mean"

Me: "no I don't"

Brad: "are you trying to say I ra... Raped you"

Me: "you did" he let go of my cheeks and punched me so hard on my jawline I tasted blood same time

Brad: "you don't appreciate that I'm being nice to you!!" He got off the bed put on his jogger he walked out banging the door. I got off the bed went to lock the door I went to the bathroom took a shower the cosmetics I use were all there I just sat down in the shower crying letting the warm water hit my

skin when the hot water ran out I stood up wrapped a towel around my body another on my hair I went in the closet got dressed after towel drying my hair I finished my food and slept.

I was woken up by a loud knock on the door I went to open Bradley barged in

Brad: "we leaving"

Me: "what?"

Brad: "now put on your shoes" he went in the closet I just stood there confused as hell he came out the closet after putting on a sweater and cap he threw me another cap

Me: "what's going on Bradley"

Brad: "stop asking me questions dammit" he pulled my hand as we got downstairs I could hear gun shots

Me: "Brad!!!"

Brad: "just come" he was trying to pull me further into the passage as someone tried opening the door from outside he quickly covered my mouth "you better shut up"

Me: "let go of me" I tried pushing him off but he lifted me up like a sack of potatoes "put me down Bradley!!!!!!" He started running we got in the gym I was kicking and screaming the door from the gym opened to the garage he put me in the car he did my seatbelt

Brad: "you better behave or I'll make you behave" as he ran to his side I undid the seatbelt and ran out he ran after me I'm a runner I started running my first year at varsity I can run in a swimming pool so obviously I was faster than him I ran into a huge chest I got knocked out and fell on my butt I was still shocked when he lifted me up

Justin: "get in Nzuzo is looking for you upstairs" he wasn't looking at me I looked to where he was looking and saw Bradley with a gun pointed at us

Brad: "the only place she's going to is with me"

John: "are you sure" he said as he was pressing a gun on Bradley's head

Justin: "go Lani"

Me: "his sick don't hurt him" I left them there I hadn't even taken 10 steps when a gun went off I ran upstairs calling Nzuzo he came out from one of the rooms I ran to him he picked me up in a hug I just cried

Nzuzo: "I'm so sorry love I'm so sorry we took so long"

Me: "take me home please" he held me firmly I wrapped my legs around his waist we went downstairs

Nzuzo: "need to take you to the hospital first"

Me: "no I want to go home"

Nzuzo: "baby you need to get checked out"

Me: "I don't care"

Nzuzo: "close your eyes baby"

Me: "okay" I did he continued walking I opened my eyes when I heard voices there were dead bodies around David and some two guys were pulling the bodies together I quickly closed my eyes again he got in the car

Nzuzo: "I know you kept your eyes open no point in closing them now" I opened them with a smile "I'm really sorry baby" Justin got in the driver's seat "where is he"

Justin: "John is handling it"

Me: "don't kill him"

Nzuzo: "are you shitting me"

Me: "his sick Nzuzo that's not him" he put me aside and got out the car

Justin: "just don't kill him Nzuzo" I followed him out of the car it was already nighttime John was putting Bradley in other car

Nzuzo: "let me talk to him" John chuckled and let go of Bradley Nzuzo brought Bradley down with one punch Bradley tried getting but Nzuzo kicked his stomach he stumbled back and fell again Nzuzo kneeled next to him started punching punching him repeatedly to a point that I couldn't even see Bradley's face

Me: "enough Nzuzo!!!" He didn't stop "Nzuzo stop please!!" David pulled him off

David: "enough Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "you better leg go of me David before I take my anger out on you"

David: "he is hardly breathing"

Me: "I did not marry a murder!!"

Nzuzo: "so what you saying Lani" he pushed David back

Me: "I'm saying take me home"

Nzuzo: "nxa" he walked to the car I followed him we got in the car Justin drove off it was all silence in the car after an hour of darkness we finally got to the main road we were in Pmb Justin drove pass McD

Justin: "want food sis"

Me: "whatever you buying"

Justin: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "double pounder"

Me: "me too" he chuckled and got out "how did you find me"

Nzuzo: "after you called Marvin called his father apparently they doing business together so he told him about the properties he owns around kzn we've been driving around for hours we went to 3 different houses already this was the last house"

Me: "the guns?"

Nzuzo: "you will have to speak to your father or brother about that"

Me: "before I called were you looking for me"

Nzuzo: "ofcos I have baby I haven't slept since I woke up Sunday midday" he lifted me up I sat on him straddling him he cupped my face "did he hurt you"

Me: "yes" he kissed me I lifted up the pj top he turned the lights on in the car and looked at my stomach with tears in his eyes he touched me I was wincing

Nzuzo: "it looks like you broke a rib" I nodded "is this all" I shook my head looking down he sniffed "he forced himself on you" I nodded "why didn't you tell me before" he was voice was breaking he was crying

Me: "you would have killed him Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "he deserves a countless deaths"

Me: "you wouldn't forgive yourself if you did"

Nzuzo: "you don't know that" we cried he was burying his face on my neck "I'm so sorry baby I'm so so sorry Yammy I should have protected you"

Me: "it's not your fault" the door opened I pressed my finger on his lips I didn't want anyone knowing about this

Justin: "I just got juice didn't know what drink yall"

Me: "thank you" I took our food switched the light off Justin drove off Nzuzo was crying silently the whole way home

Justin: "see you in the morning sisi"

Me: "okay"

Justin: "Nzuzo" he just lifted his hand up not looking at Justin we got in the house as Justin drove off we went straight to our room Nzuzo's eyes were bloodshot red

Nzuzo: "I'll prepare you a bath"

Me: "this house is filled with cameras"

Nzuzo: "what?"

Me: "there are cameras all over that Bradley installed"

Nzuzo: "how did he even get here"

Me: "the maid let him in"

Nzuzo: "that bloody bitch!! She will pay for this"

Me: "what are we going to do about them"

Nzuzo: "I'll talk to Justin I'm sure he can someone to find them and take them down"

Me: "where are my kids"

Nzuzo: "asleep Liam is with Masisi"

Me: "I'll go check on them while you prepare the bath" I went out started with Avery he was asleep with his lights on dim as usual i sat next to him brushing his cheek he touched my hand and opened his eyes

Avery: "mommy?"

Me: "I'm home bae" he started crying I lifted him up putting him on my lap rocking him Avery doesn't really cry so every time he does it breaks my heart "it's okay I'm here I'm fine"

Avery: "you home"

Me: "yes, go to my room I'm coming"

Avery: "I'm going to sleep with you"

Me: "yes go" I wiped his tears he gave me a soft peck we left his room with him going to my room I went to Masisi I took Liam Masisi opened her eyes

Masisi: "Lani!!!!"

Me: "sssh you will wake him" she sat up

Masisi: "they found you"

Me: "yes we will talk in the morning" she nodded I took his bottles went to my room

Nzuzo: "looks like I got nowhere to sleep"

Avery: "the bed is huge daddy and Liam has his own"

Me: "we will all fit"

Nzuzo: "your bath is ready"

Me: "I'd rather just sleep" he nodded we all got in bed with the kids between us

Nzuzo: "I love you fam"

Avery: "love you"

Me: "so do I" he switched the lights off we slept.

.

The next day it was Thursday I said the kids should not go to school Masisi also didn't we spent the day indoors Justin sent people over to take down the cameras dad and Justin were just brushing me off whenever I asked about where is Bradley or when I asked about the guns and what happened to those dead security guards my cousins also told me to ask dad or Justin if I asked them I ended up not leaving it but one thing for sure dad and Justin were keeping secrets they said they will handle our maid.

A week later it was Monday i was back at work even though Nzuzo didn't want me to he wanted me to become a housewife since he couldn't trust a stranger into our home but that wasn't going to happen so Liam was at daycare here in the hospital. The door at the office opened Nzuzo got in with Liam and a paper bag

Nzuzo: "I brought lunch and entertainment" I giggled and got off my chair I took Liam we went to sit on the couch he took out the food putting it on the table

Me: "hello baby" I played with Liam who was very naught whenever I tried giving him a soft peck he would hold my cheeks and force his tongue in my mouth

Nzuzo: "am I being ignored"

Me: "maybe" we started eating

Nzuzo: "sorry but you know I'm right"

Me: "I'm fine"

Nzuzo: "you need to see a therapist Lani"

Me: "he was not the first person to rape me"

Nzuzo: "exactly and you had therapy before why not now"

Me: "just give me time"

Nzuzo: "after this we going to the lab"

Me: "I'm fine Nzuzo!! I don't need to take any tests"

Nzuzo: "yes you did I'm tired of this Lani I will not stay with you not knowing whether you sick or not as you said it he gave you some drug we need to know the effects of that"

Me: "no you want to know if I have any sexually transmitted diseases or not"

Nzuzo: "that too baby we need to know so you can take medication"

Me: "you mean so you can leave me if I got aids"

Nzuzo: "you know better"

Me: "whatever" we finished eating in silence with just Liam making noise and crawling around the office

Nzuzo: "let's go"

Me: "what if I got some std"

Nzuzo: "then we will work with that" I sighed and took Liam we left going to the lab he drew my blood and gave them to run the tests we went to leave Liam at daycare and he walked me to my office

.

A few days passed I was in the office when Nzuzo got in with a envelope

Nzuzo: "I got your results"

Me: "give me" he chuckled and sat down

Nzuzo: "I'm your doctor so I'll read them"

Me: "okay but you not my doctor"

Nzuzo: "I'm hot and sexy I can be your very own McDreamy, don't you want that?"

Me: "I'll be you merideth" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "you know it Dr Grey"

Me: "oh yeah Dr Shepard" we laughed he opened the envelope and read through the results while laughing but his laughter turned into a frown

Nzuzo: "you pregnant"

Me: "don't lie" I pulled the paper away and there it was in black and white pregnancy test – positive 2 weeks

PART 41

Me: "this can't be right"

Nzuzo: "there it is in black and white"

Me: "but I had my tubes tied after Liam Nzuzo you were there in the OR with me you saw"

Nzuzo: "look will talk at home I can't deal with this right now" he stood up

Me: "really Nzuzo" he left I called Harper asking her if she's free she said I can come to her office I stood up locked my office then went to Sthe

Sthe: "sup"

Me: "please tell my next meeting I'll be a few minutes late he can wait or reschedule whatever he is comfortable with"

Sthe: "you good?"

Me: "yeah I'm cool"

Sthe: "you look pale" I chuckled

Me: "dark people don't become pale"

Sthe: "okay" I left going to Harper's office

Harper: "dr Khumalo"

Me: "hi"

Harper: "what did I do"

Me; "I'm pregnant" she chuckled Harper was a beautiful white lesbian

Harper: "it's not the the 1st of April"

Me: "I'm serious I did a test it came back positive"

Harper: wow uhm I'm sorry really Lani I don't know what went wrong but I'd like to take a look see if the baby is in the right place and it won't cause damages to your tubes"

Me: "does that mean I have to go under the table"

Harper: "will do a scan first then we'll take it from there"

Me: "I'm really not happy about this Harper you should have ensured that this doesn't happen I trusted you to ensure that"

Harper: "I can't apologize enough Lani I really can't the chance of something like this happening is 1 in a thousand and I'm truly sorry"

Me: "it's okay I just need for you to make sure I don't lose my baby" she smiled

Harper: "I'll make sure with all that I can do" we did the scan and luckily I didn't need to be operated on the baby was in the right place I went to my office I worked until it was knock off time I called Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "yeah"

Me: "are you coming up I'm done"

Nzuzo: "actually pulling in a double I'll see you in the morning"

Me: "you can't be mad at me over this Nzuzo" he sighed

Nzuzo: "I'll come up"

Me: "okay" I dropped the call and started packing Sthe got in

Sthe: "can I leave"

Me: "yeah"

Sthe: "I'm having a little something on Saturday if you and Dr Khumalo want to come through" I giggled

Me: "will there be meat"

Sthe: "yes"

Me: "if Nzuzo is free we'll come through"

Sthe: "I'd be really happy if you showed up" I looked at him tilting my head a little

Me: "I'll see just remind later on"

Sthe: "shot boss see ya"

Me: "bye Sthembiso" he winked and got out I finished up went out after locking I met up with Nzuzo by the elevator I got in he looked at me with a raised eyebrow he had his foot on the wall only balancing with one foot like Nzuzo is hot people and it all effortless like he can wear whatever and look like he is going to a photo shot then he has this short fade situation going on, I greeted the people in the lift Nzuzo pulled me to him snaking his arms around me I snuggled closer he kissed my neck we didn't say anything until we got off at the floor where daycare is we went to get Liam then went to the parking lot he held my hand we walked to his car got in he drove off after putting Liam in his car seat I kept on looking at him as he focused on the road

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "what up"

Me: "you can't be mad at me over this Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I ain't mad"

Me: "you are"

Nzuzo: "are you terminating it"

Me: "no I haven't even thought about abortion"

Nzuzo: "so you want to keep his child"

Me: "Nzuzo it could be yours you know it could be yours now why are you acting like that"

Nzuzo: "I don't want a child Yamkelani whether it mine or his □we've talked about this and we decided that we done with kids"

Me: "no Nzuzo you talked I listened, you manipulated me into agreeing you know I've always wanted 3 or 4 kids you told me you already have the twins and kids are expensive so I said okay now my child is here whether you the father or Bradley that all doesn't matter to me I will love my child regardless. Yes he was not wanted or planned but he is here now there is nothing we can do about that because I am not having an abortion I'm not putting my womb through that Nzuzo you should know better then to even think about it ayi mina angaz"

Nzuzo: "funny you should talk like that when you didn't want Liam"

Me: "I'm not having this conversation with you Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "whatever" I looked at him I felt like slapping him

Me: "you can be really selfish at times"

Nzuzo: "sho" I looked out the window crying silently I was really angry and there was nothing I could do about it Nzuzo was making me angry because there was a 50 % chance that the child was his but he didn't even want to put that in his mind because he was done having kids but it's fine if this meant I would have to raise my kid without a father so be it. We got home I started at the kitchen took out mince so I could make lasagna for dinner I went upstairs after leaving Liam in the lounge with Avery I took a shower got out put on black joggers and white tank top with my uggs I tied my weave into a ponytail

Me: "should I make you something to eat before I start making dinner"

Nzuzo: "yes something light" he was busy with his phone

Me: "is a pie or sausage roll okay"

Nzuzo: "pie" I walked out went to the kitchen I took out pie from the fridge popped it in the microwave poured juice in a glass put it on a tray warm a cloth put it on the tray the house phone rang I answered

Me: "hello"

Nzuzo: "where's your phone"

Me: "my bag"

Nzuzo: "can I have a cup of hot chocolate please"

Me: "okay" he cut the call I boiled water put the juice back in the fridge I made the hot chocolate rewarmed the cloth then took up his food

Nzuzo: "thank you" I went out started on dinner. I was making green salad and the lasagna was baking in the oven when Nzuzo came in with the dishes after putting them in the sink he sat on the high chair and watched me I looked away carried on with what I was doing I could feel his eyes on every move I was making I finished up made some food for Liam I screamed for Avery to bring him and he did I sat

on the high chair across Nzuzo started feeding Liam when I was done I gave him to Nzuzo and set up the dinner table I called everyone we had dinner over light conversations Nzuzo and I were not in a good space at that moment but no one could see that because whenever we were not in a good space we made sure the kids don't witness that at times Masisi would notice after dinner they went to watch tv while Masisi cleaned up the kitchen and dining area I went to bath Liam who slept immediately after getting out of the water I got my phone and sat on the bed just went through my social networks replied to some texts and ofcos Sbu and Sthe was among those people I was chatting to Sthe was such a flirt over the phone after over 2 hours I put my phone on a charger and slept.

.

The next day I woke up went to wake up Avery and Nosi, I went to bath after bathing woke Liam up gave him a bath as Nzuzo took a shower I got him dressed then got dressed in short lose dress shirt and heels I went downstairs they were eating I fed Liam when he was full I cleaned him up put him on his high chair I went to get my bags we left dropped the kids off then went to work I carried Liam while Nzuzo carried our bags we left Liam at daycare then he walked me to the office

Nzuzo: "see you after work" I nodded and sat on my chair behind the desk "am not going to apologize Lani"

Me: "no expecting you to"

Nzuzo: "okay" he left I called Sthe

Me: "you had breakfast"

Sthe: "yeah but I can eat"

Me: "let's get out of here"

Sthe: "yes boss" I had the keys since I had to pick up the kids from school we went to the parking lot I threw the keys at him "want me to drive this beast"

Me: "don't be too much it just an AMG" he laughed and we got in driving off to musgrave

Sthe: "rich people"

Me: "who is rich"

Sthe: "the Khumalos" I chuckled

Me: "you have no idea where we come from bru, we the poster fam for rags to riches"

Sthe: "but you made it look at yourself"

Me: "because of Nzuzo otherwise I probably would have died ages ago"

Sthe: "what you on about"

Me: "story for another day" we settled in at mugg & bean and ordered breakfast

Sthe: "I got time" I rolled my eyes

Me: "that's code for I don't want to talk about it" he laughed

Sthe: "point taken ma'am"

Me: "you older than me you really shouldn't call me that"

Sthe: "if I was younger I'd say make me your ben 10" I laughed he was staring at me with a smile

Me: "I'm not about that cheating life" our breakfast came and his coffee smelled so delicious but I was off coffee for the next 8 months

Sthe: "just trying my luck, so you coming tomorrow"

Me: "forgot to ask Nzuzo"

Sthe: "doubt he will come" I shrugged my shoulder stuffing mouthful of pan cake in my mouth

Me: "stop staring!" He chuckled and looked down "where is your girlfriend"

Sthe: "I have no idea but she should be at school"

Me: "you dating a student"

Sthe: "yeah"

Me: "chicken murder straight" we laughed

Sthe: "you don't want me what am I supposed to do"

Me: "let that go"

Sthe: "love your dimples" I giggled

Me: "so does my husband"

Sthe; "that burns"

Me: "boom!" We laughed

Sthe: "need to leave early you meeting the chief of surgery at 09:30" I checked time on my watch it was 08:55

Me: "okay" I ordered another glass of juice and asked for a bill

Sthe: "I got the bill"

Me: "trying to be the hulk? I asked you so relax"

Sthe: "let me be your hulk"

Me: "shut up" he laughed we finished eating I paid we left.

The day flew through in the afternoon we went home Fridays are always chilled nights at home takeaway and movie nights so when we got home I threw myself on the bed Nzuzo crawled next to me we stared at each other

Nzuzo: "I miss you"

Me: "I'm right here"

Nzuzo: "but you not"

Me: "mmh"

Nzuzo: "who drove my car besides you"

Me: "uuh"

Nzuzo: "the sit wasn't in the right place"

Me: "oh must have been Sthe when we went to get breakfast"

Nzuzo: "why didn't you tell me you want breakfast I would have taken you there"

Me: "we weren't really talking Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "what?"

Nzuzo: "I read the texts between you two"

Me: "you went through my phone"

Nzuzo: "don't say it like that"

Me: "it is like that you went through my phone"

Nzuzo: "I don't like the way he talks to you and you entertaining him"

Me: "sorry I'll stop"

Nzuzo: "good because I would really hate to tell you to fire him"

Me: "that's extreme Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "is it? Really is it Lani? After what we just went through actually what we still going through because of your psycho ex potential baby daddy"

Me: "wow" I got off the bed

Nzuzo: "fuck!! I'm sorry okay" he pulled me on him

Me: "if my child is Bradley's is this how you going to be"

Nzuzo: "so I'm just to accept that my wife has another man's child"

Me: "he is going to be my child as well you supposed to love him because you love me"

Nzuzo: "you not being fair Yammy, you can still abort it babes and we can just move on with our sons no unwanted baggage no illegitimate child whose father is not mentally stable" I got off him with tears already running down my face

Me: "you unbelievable"

Nzuzo: "Lani" I walked out going downstairs I found the kids watching cartoons

Me: "go get ready we going out"

Avery: "cool there's this movie I've been wanting to watch"

Me: "tell Masisi to put you in something warm Nosi"

Nosi: "okay sisi" they ran upstairs I took Liam went to my room

Nzuzo: "Yammy you can't be mad at me for not wanting this child"

Me: "I'm not mad at you its your choice but my children and I are a full package the four of us if you can't handle that leave walk away I'll sign the papers" with that I went to bath to bath Liam then got out started getting him dressed

Me: "we going for a movie and dinner are you coming"

Nzuzo: "yeah" I put on a coat

Me: "let's go" he took his wallet and phone we left for gateways while listening to radio Rihanna – love on the brain was playing

Me: "Baby you like me when I fall apart so you can put me together and throw me to the wall Baby you got me like I'm tired of being played like a violin" I sang along Nzuzo kept on looking at me then back on the road

Masisi: "I love this song"

Me: "I know right"

Masisi&i: "oh, and babe I'm fist fighting with fire just to get close to you, can we burn something babe? And I run for miles just to get a taste must be love on the brain that's got me feeling this way it beats me black and blue but it fucks me so good and I can't get enough.." We sang loudly

Nzuzo: "sounds like a nice song but I'd rather hear Rihanna singing it"

Masisi: "don't be bitter nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "we all know you two can't sing" Nosi laughed

Avery: "dad is right"

Me: "Avery whose side are you on"

Avery: "on Liam's side my poor brother has his ears covered" they laughed I turned to see Liam and he had his hands over his ears I shook my head laughing

Me: "don't be smart"

Masisi: "personally I got a good voice dad always tells me it's Yammy that I'm not so sure about"

Me: "sell out" we laughed Nzuzo put his hand on my thigh brushing it I put my hand on his locking our fingers he looked at me smiling

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" I leaned over and kissed his cheek

PART 42

A few weeks went by things were still a little rocky between Nzuzo and I he was really not accepting my child.

I woke up Thursday morning he was already up staring at me

Me: "morning"

Nzuzo: "morning love" I smiled he got on top of me I breathed out ever since that whole Bradley situation we hadn't been intimate but I had been going to therapy for the past 7 weeks

Me: "you slept well"

Nzuzo: "yes" we kissed slowly it got heated with every passing minute he took off the vest I was wearing his hands went all over my body squeezing at some parts I let out a soft moan when he grabbed my breasts they were so sensitive he kissed me from my jawline going down until he reached my stomach

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" I held his head

Me: "it's okay"

Nzuzo: "I've been a selfish jerk and I'm so sorry babe you didn't put yourself in this position and I haven't been supportive I'm sorry"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you so much babe you my life Lani" he went further down and took me to muff town he came to my face his face glistening with the evidence of my climax

Nzuzo: "hi" I giggled

Me: "hi" he entered me I screamed he quickly covered my mouth his hand

Nzuzo: "you going to wake up Liam" I nodded he smiled and moved deeper my back arched "are you going to scream again" he let go of mouth

Me: "no" he started moving I moaned loudly

Nzuzo: "yazibona"

Me: "just shut up and make love to me"

Nzuzo: "yebo mrs Khumalo" he started moving slowly we made hot passionate slow love after I came he lifted me up we went to the shower where he banged against the wall hard and fast after that session we got out I lotioned put on a robe went to take Liam who was already up just silently playing with his feet

Me: "hey there big boy" I tickled him he started laughing nonstop I took him gave him a bath then got him dressed I also got dressed went downstairs Nzuzo and the kids were having breakfast

Nzuzo: "I'll feed him you need to eat"

Me: "thank you" I gave him liam

Nzuzo: "can't believe he is one already"

Me: "I know right"

Avery: "we should have had a party for him dad"

Me: "when he turns 2 what was the point of having a party for someone who can't even walk how will he play games"

Nzuzo: "that's why we had something small to celebrate you"

Me: "oh yeah"

Nzuzo: "for all those hours you spent suffering"

Me: "aren't I just the luckiest girl in the world" he held my chin and gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "ofcos you are, you married me" Avery and Nosi laughed

Me: "you so full of it Nzuzo"

Nosi: "full of what"

Me: "full of love" Nzuzo laughed

Nzuzo: "thank you Nosi"

Nosi: "you welcome" we laughed

Nzuzo: "what time are you seeing Harper"

Me: "13:00 are you coming"

Nzuzo: "yes" I started crying

Avery: "mom what's wrong"

Me: "hormones"

Avery: "dad?"

Nzuzo: "she's fine" he brushed my back

Me: "baby"

Nzuzo: "it's okay"

Me: "make it stop I can't stop crying"

Nzuzo: "it will stop I love you" he kissed me Nosi was laughing

Nosi: "sisi is such a cry baby"

Me: "I can't help it"

Nzuzo: "it's okay baby finish up so we can go" I nodded and wiped my tears and carried on eating I wasn't using make up anymore I went for laser removed the spot I was just using some cream for the rest of them but I was getting my skin back it made me absolutely happy I was never a fan of make up.

We left dropped the kids off then went to work. Time flew by at 12:55 Nzuzo came to get me in my office we went down to Harper she tested me on everything then we had a scan Nzuzo was holding my hand the heartbeat was so strong

Nzuzo: "it's perfect love" he kissed my forehead

Me: "my baby"

Nzuzo: "our baby love" I nodded with tears already coming down like a river Harper laughed "is there anything you can give her Harper for the tears like they easily trigger"

Harper: "nah just embrace them"

Me: "it wasn't like this with Liam or Avery"

Harper: "babies differ" Nzuzo wiped my tears then wiped the gel off my stomach I pulled down my dress I was 4 months and showing I took my prescription we left

Nzuzo: "want me to take you to lunch"

Me: "are you not working"

Nzuzo: "no I'm off"

Me: "you've been off this whole week"

Nzuzo: "yep"

Me: "let me go get my bags we can leave my day is done" he kissed my cheek we went to get my bag then Liam Masisi was going to fetch the kids we left driving towards gateway

Nzuzo: "I want to take you somewhere was going to take you there after work but we can go after lunch"

Me: "no I want to go now" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "okay"

Me: "what is it"

Nzuzo: "something that is long overdue"

Me: "it's a surprise?" He made a turn towards mhlanga rocks

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "did you buy me a house" he laughed

Nzuzo: "don't be crazy ofcos not we have a house" I felt a little disappointed

Me: "cool" I looked around the house through the window

Nzuzo: "I got someone for you to meet she's a friend's wife and she needs a friend I though I'd introduce you two"

Me: "how great" I flashed him a fake smile like I said I want new friends mxm I have my sisters and Thandi

Nzuzo: "looks like mommy is angry Liam"

Me: "I'm not angry"

Nzuzo: "you look angry"

Me: "you going to make me cry" he chuckled he turned at his huge gate pressed the passcode the gate opened he drove up the driveway that was surrounded by short trees we stopped at this gigantic beautiful double story house with a triple garage "your friend has a beautiful home"

Nzuzo: "tryna make me feel guilty" he got off so did I he took Liam off his car seat we walked to the main door he opened I got in so did he in the foyer there was a beautiful cream white table with this huge chandelier we walked in there was an all glass room that had a door that opens up to the patio

Me: "did they just move? Why is this place empty?"

Nzuzo: "because it needs furniture" we moved further in

Me: "mmmh"

Nzuzo: "it 9 bedrooms all bedrooms got bathrooms, kitchen connected to the dining area, 3 lounges that I think one could be a lounge another a tv room then the other entertainment room since it has a bar, huge basement that could be turned into a playroom or theater whatever you and the kids wa.."

Me: "wait!!! Are you saying what I think you saying" he laughed

Nzuzo: "what are you thinking?"

Me: "you buying this house"

Nzuzo: "nah already bought it" I looked at him in disbelief "welcome home baby"

Me: "you better put Liam down if you can't carry the 3 of us" he laughed and put him down I jumped on him he span around kissing me "I fucking love you Mntungwa"

Nzuzo: "mmh I love it when you talk like that" I giggled and kissed him it was so hot and deep I felt like ripping his clothes off

Me: "put me down I want to see my house" he laughed putting me down he picked up Liam we went around the house it was perfect there was a study, indoor pool with heating, outdoor pool and jacuzzi, huge back yard with a basketball court we went upstairs where bedrooms were our room was huge with a room size walk in closet an amazing view of the sea

Me: "baby this place is amazing!! But I thought we were waiting on buying a house"

Nzuzo: "we have another child coming Lani that house is small"

Me: "I love it baby thank you" i kissed him "can we move in"

Nzuzo: "we can start packing today"

Me: "great, I'm buying the extra furniture"

Nzuzo: "now you trying to start something"

Me: "please let me baby anyway it just 4 bedroom suites and a lounge will use the furniture we have now please let me baby this house is huge and it in an expensive residential area so I know it left a huge stain on your account. Let me help I know your business is doing amazing but I don't ever use my money besides for groceries so let me handle this please"

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "please" he huffed and grabbed my neck we kissed

Nzuzo: "okay but was hoping we get a new bedroom suite for us"

Me: "cool we'll move our old one to a guest room"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "you such a blessing Nzuzo Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "if Liam wasn't here I'd make love to you right here on the floor" my breath caught up I got wet just by imagining it

Me: "stop"

Nzuzo: "how I want to hear you scream my name while I'm buried deep in you"

Me: "Nzuzo" he was breathing on my neck

Nzuzo: "yes" he kissed my neck biting on it then blowing slowly

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "he won't even notice" he looked at me

Nzuzo: "you want us to make love with our son right here watching us"

Me: "he doesn't know anything" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "hormones"

Me: "it not the hormones!!" I started crying

Nzuzo: "baby?"

Me: "just fuck me please" I cried harder he put Liam down threw his toy at him

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" he lifted me I wrapped my legs around his waist "please don't cry"

Me: "it's the hormones"

Nzuzo: "can you hold on until we get home" I sniffed

Me: "okay" he put me down he cupped my face we kissed

Nzuzo: "let's go home"

Me: "you owe me lunch" he chuckled lifting Liam up

Nzuzo: "yes I do" we left we went to circus circus had lunch then went home, this was the perfect time to move the kids were closing school tomorrow and Masisi was done with exams we got home found them watching tv I sat down

Nzuzo: "I thought we were going to uhm .. You know"

Me: "not in the mood anymore" Masisi laughed

Nzuzo: "babe"

Me: "ayi Nzuzo go away"

Nzuzo: "yoh!! It's tough out here" he sat down

Me: "we moving to mhlanga rocks" Masisi screamed

Masisi: "nice!! You kept your promise Nzuzo I still remember the first time you took Yammy to gateway she couldn't stop talking about it and how you promised to buy her a house"

Me: "he always was the best"

Nzuzo: "she's going to start crying again"

Me: "take me upstairs I'll show you something"

Nzuzo: "oh yeah"

Me: "yeah" he stood up and lifted me he carried me upstairs we left Masisi laughing

Nzuzo: "what you got for me baby"

Me: "some twerking" he laughed and threw me on the bed

.

We spent the weekend settling in our new home by Monday we were done with everything the house looked like an amazing home i put up the old house for renting. Nzuzo and I spent the week setting up the nursery for the baby keeping it neutral it was still too early but Nzuzo was insisting on it so we had the nursery set up bought the clothes just sticking to neutral colors I was so happy that Nzuzo had finally came around. On Saturday he was taking me out we got dressed in fancy clothes we went to have dinner at the restaurant in Hilton hotel after dinner we went upstairs to a room that I had no idea he had booked as soon as I got in I was welcomed by rose petals

Me: "baby?"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "this?"

Nzuzo: "because I love you and you my life" he lifted me up bridal style and took me to the bed that was also covered in rose petals he got on top of me

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "so do I" we kissed slowly he got off me and turned me around he unzipped my dress then took it off me, we spent the night making love.

The following day I was woken up by the smell of bacon and pancakes

Me: "smells heavenly"

Nzuzo: "I know now sit up" I did he pushed my weave back "you look like you've been hit by a tornado"

Me: "hey!"

Nzuzo: "you still beautiful" he cupped my face "last night was amazing" I kissed him

Me: "yes it was"

Nzuzo: "eat" we started eating my pancakes were already covered in butter and cream with chocolate syrup and bacon and eggs on the side

Me: "what did I do to deserve this"

Nzuzo: "you loved me"

Me: "I love you not loved you" we kissed

Nzuzo: "eat up so we can bath"

Me: "no clothes"

Nzuzo: "I packed a bag" I giggled

Me: "you sneaky"

Nzuzo; "I know" we finished eating took a bath I got dressed in the white sundress and flip flops he was wearing black shorts a white t-shirt and flip flops we left for the beach we took a walk just talking about everything and anything laughing and playing with water we had lunch then went home I went straight to sleep I was drained the little Mr in my stomach was making me tired.

I was woken up by a tiny slap

Me: "Liam" he giggled and slapped me again I opened my eyes he was kneeling next to me with Nzuzo behind him

Nzuzo: "mommy is up Liam"

Me: "you woke me up"

Nzuzo: "dinner is ready"

Me: "okay get your son of me" he was already on top of me sucking on my cheek Liam had a weird thing for cheeks if he wasn't sucking your cheek he was licking it

Nzuzo: "let him suck" he was laughing

Me: "nzuzo" he took him Liam started crying

Nzuzo: "I told you to let him suck"

Me: "give him his dummy" I went to the bathroom washed my face rinsed my mouth when I got out the bathroom they were gone I went downstairs everyone was already around the table Liam was busy with his drumstick I sat down we had dinner with light conversation after dinner I cleaned up loaded the dishes I went to my room after putting Liam to bed I threw myself on the bed

Me: "why am I so tired"

Nzuzo: "you almost 5 months and you taking care of Liam you need to hire a live in nanny she can stay in the pool house" there was a 2 room pool house

Me: "I'll call the agency and see if I can get someone who will start next month" he started massaging my feet

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry"

Me: "for" he breathed out

Nzuzo: "you know I love you right"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "and you trust me to make the best decisions regarding our family to take care of our family and ensure that our children never get to experience the life we lived" I sat up and looked at me

Me: "what's going on"

Nzuzo: "I got offered to work on a new experiment this doctor came up with an idea on sensors and a way to build new neurons baby just the idea itself is amazing if we pull this we could change the way medicine is viewed"

Me: "that's great baby"

Nzuzo: "right now it just an idea but we can turn it into something great he invited a few neurosurgeons to work with him I'm one of those baby this is an amazing opportunity it could open up great doors for me that chief of neuro I've been wanting could be an anti baby I can get chief of surgery when I come back do you know the offers I will get after this"

Me: "what you mean when you come back" he looked down

Nzuzo: "I have to go to Spain for 3 years"

Me: "no"

Nzuzo: "bab.."

Me: "no!!!! No"

Nzuzo: "Lani you have to understand"

Me: "no Nzuzo I am saying no I know you not asking for my permission but I am saying no"

Nzuzo: "baby this is a great opportunity I didn't even apply for this I got invited baby don't you get that I was hand picked"

Me: "no!!!" I couldn't stop my tears he tried holding me I pushed him off "you don't get to make this decision without taking me or our kids into consideration"

Nzuzo: "I am doing this for you for our kids"

Me: "I understand ambition I love it but this is where you should draw a line Nzuzo, it fucking 3 years 3 fucking years!!! I am saying no Nzuzo Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "it's already done I'm leaving in the morning"

Me: "oh god" I got off the bed I can't even explain how I was feeling "is this because I refused to have an abortion"

Nzuzo: "what? Ofcos not this happened before we found out you pregnant"

Me: "you've been keeping this a secret all these months" he tried coming to me "stand right there don't come any closer"

Nzuzo: "baby I'm sorry I just couldn't tell you and have you hate me while I'm still here I know I'm a coward because I didn't want to have to look at you and see hate and disappointment in your eyes" I went on my knees sobbing loudly

Me: "how can you do this to me to boys?!"

Nzuzo: "I am doing this for you and the boys baby please you have to understand"

Me: "it 3 years Nzuzo 3 years in another continent Nzuzo we have kids they need you I need you I'm pregnant" he kneeled next to me

Nzuzo: "the years will fly by baby we will talk and Skype everyday you will keep me posted with the kids I know I won't be there when pancake is born but you will take a video for me you will call me and put me on loudspeaker during the whole thing"

Me: "it's not the same"

Nzuzo: "I know baby and I'm sorry"

Me: "don't leave please I'm begging you please Nzuzo I'll do anything just don't leave us" I held onto his t-shirt begging and crying "I'll do whatever you want Nzuzo I promise you just don't walk away from us from our marriage"

Nzuzo: "baby come on I'm not divorcing you I'm just going to build for our future"

Me: "you might as well serve me with divorce papers because if you leave Nzuzo we are done I swear to you when you come back I would have moved on" he gasped

Nzuzo; "don't talk like that Yamkelani" I wiped my tears and stood up

Me: "if you leave you won't find us here in 3 years I will pack up with my kids we will leave South Africa" I got in bed

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "leave me alone"

Nzuzo: "please don't talk like this" I covered myself with the comforter and cried loudly I cried as if someone is dead he got on the bed tried pulling me to him I was fighting him punching him he grabbed my arms pressed them together then held me

Nzuzo: "I am so so sorry love I know it hurts I know you hate me but you will see 3 years will fly by you won't even notice"

Me: "I will notice that my bed is empty and cold, I will notice that you not at home, I will notice that I'm raising my kids by myself, I will notice that I'm all alone in everything"

Nzuzo: "it's going to be okay baby"

Me: "it will not so please don't sell me dreams"

Nzuzo: "trust me"

Me: "I did but look at us now"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" I cried until I fell asleep

.

The following day I was woken up by him kissing me I opened my eyes he was dressed

Me: "Nzuzo no!!"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby"

Me: "please"

Nzuzo: "if I don't I'll resent you baby I will love my life with what ifs, is that what you want?"

Me: "no"

Nzuzo: "let me go" he wiped my tears we kissed I didn't want to let go "I love you baby"

Me: "did you tell Avery"

Nzuzo: "yes last night before bed"

Me: "I love you" he nodded we kissed again "please don't go please Nzuzo please I'm begging you"

Nzuzo: "I love you and our kids all 3 of them take care of our kids Lani please and take care of yourself" he kissed my stomach "watch over the twins for me okay pick them up one weekend every month Enhle will let you take them they need to be around the boys okay"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "don't hate me please"

Me: "I love you, call me as soon as you land"

Nzuzo: "thank you" he let a muffled sob I covered his mouth with mine we kissed the both of us crying intercom rang he pulled back "that's the uber I have to go" I nodded "I love you thembalam for eternity"

Me: "I love you too" he gave me a soft peck then left pulling his suitcases as soon as the door closed I covered my face with the pillow and screamed crying while hitting the bed

PART 43

I cried until I felt a sharp pain in my stomach I brushed it

Me: "be calm for mommy please" I wiped my tears I felt the pain again this time it was strong "come on pancake don't do this to mommy not today" it died down for a few minutes I went to the bathroom there were sticky notes on the mirror

i love you maka pancake

you beautiful thembalam

take care of our kids P.S the business papers are in the study over look everything but Sandile will handle the things

the first week will be hardest but you will see I'll be home soon

I sighed and left them there I brushed my teeth I felt the pain again I held onto the sink Liam started crying I held my stomach crying

Me: "come on pancake please" I walked out took my phone I called Masisi

Masisi: "Lani"

Me: "take Liam please" I cancelled the call and called Harper

Harper: "dr Khumalo"

Me: "I don't feel so good" the pain hit me harder this time I cried out

Harper: "okay I need you to calm down I'm on my way don't drop the call" I heard movements Harper stays 3 houses down from our new home I put the phone on loudspeaker the door opened Masisi got in with Liam I was busy tossing and turning crying on the bed

Masisi: "what's wrong? Should I call an ambulance?"

Me: "it's pancake there's something wrong Masisi I don't want to lose my baby" she put Liam down and touched my stomach

Masisi: "why is he moving like this I can feel him, I'm calling your doctor"

Harper: "open the gate Lani" Masisi looked at my phone

Me: "please go open" she left Liam was busy pulling my pj bottoms on the floor crying I sat up picked him up he smiled as if he wasn't crying showing his 9 teeth I put him down on the bed he crawled around I don't know what happened I got a little dizzy next thing he was crying on the floor with a bursted lip bleeding all over my white carpet Nzuzo's plane hadn't even taken off but things were already a mess

The door opened Harper got in with Masisi

Masisi: "God Lani what happened to him" Harper rushed to me while masisi took Liam

Harper: "how you feeling now"

Me: "it's gone now" she lifted my tank top and touched my stomach pressing on some parts were really painful she gave two spoons of gaviscone and an injection she checked my bp which was too high

Harper: "I need to do a scan to be sure but it just stress and heartburn Lani. Do you want to lose this baby?"

Me: "of course"

Harper: "try not stressing"

Me: "Nzuzo left he only told me last night that he is leaving today in the morning"

Harper: "I'm sorry I heard he was leaving I'm sorry, please get dressed so we can go to the hospital and I need to check little Liam's lip he might need a stitch or two"

Me: "okay"

Harper: "I'm sorry about Nzuzo but this is a great opportunity for him I would have taken it as well even though he should discussed it with you but I'm glad you let him go because he would have resented you" she helped me stand up

Me: "I haven't taken a bath" she smiled

Harper: "you don't smell just get dressed Liam's lip needs cleaning, are you working?"

Me: "already off for the holidays"

Harper: "good" I went to the closet I put on a black maxi dress with pink cardigan and black sandals I put on a cap over my weave went out Harper was carrying Liam who was already asleep

Harper: "I gave him some panando"

Me: "we can go" we left taking my car she drove

Harper: "have you considered getting help"

Me: "I'll call the agency today but whoever I get will start in January we already on the 2nd week of December"

Harper: "that's good because once the baby is born it going to get more chaotic but you know I can help out right"

Me: "in what sense"

Harper: "any sense"

Me: "okay" I caught her looking at me I just smiled when we got to the hospital she did a scan everything was fine we took Liam to peds he got one stitch then we left my stomach was grumbling the whole time she was just laughing

Me: "it's almost 12:00 I haven't eaten since last night"

Harper: "wana get breakfast"

Me: "please" she drove into the village we went to this coffee shop got food I stuffed my face while she fed Liam who was fussy we finished she paid we left

Harper: "call me okay whenever I'll answer"

Me: "thank you Harper" she kissed Liam's head then left I got in Masisi met me on the foyer she took him

Masisi: "how are you three"

Me: "we good, I need to rest a little please bath him and put him to bed"

Masisi: "okay, mam'ncane called she wants the kids to visit"

Me: "I'll call her when I get up"

Masisi: "okay go sleep I'll handle the kids" I kissed her cheek

Me: "you a God sent"

Masisi: "I know right" she giggled going to the kitchen I went up to my room took a long hot bubble bath I got out put on Nzuzo's t-shirt and leggings went to bed I held Nzuzo's pillow it smelled like him I was about to fall asleep when my phone rang it was mam'ncane (Nzuzo's aunt)

Me: "hello mah"

Aunt: "hello Yammy how are you how is the pregnancy"

Me: "I'm fine mah how is everyone at home"

Aunt: "we all fine here we just miss little phiwo and little Nzuzo"

Me: "I see"

Aunt: "uhm Can they come visit?"

Me: "it's Christmas Saturday mah we were going to come Thursday"

Aunt: "oh ayi okay ke if you say it like that" she sounded so disappointed

Me: "I'll bring them tonight"

Aunt: "thank you! Bring the twins as well"

Me: "okay mah"

Aunt: "bye bye" I dropped the call Avery was not going to be pleased by this I called Enhle

Enhle: "hello"

Me: "hi, mama'ncane wants the kids can you please get the twins ready for me I'll pick them up already 18:00"

Enhle: "you don't get to give me orders"

Me: "if you can't do that call her and tell her but I'll be there at 18:00"

Enhle: "whatever" I dropped the call went downstairs Avery was alone watching tv

Me: "hey bae"

Avery: "hey are you okay"

Me: "yeah, look grandma wants you guys to visit"

Avery: "we going there for Christmas right"

Me: "she wants y'all to come today"

Avery: "no way mom I am not spending so much time there"

Me: "it just two weeks Avery spend time with your cousin go to the river see the cows" he laughed

Avery: "I am not about that life"

Me: "your dad and I grew up there Avery it a nice place for kids you can play soccer"

Avery: "but dad just left you need me"

Me: "I'll be fine go pack your bag you can take your iPad with you I'll load you some bundles"

Avery: "they don't even have wifi" I laughed

Me: "we leave at 17:30"

Avery: "okay" I went to kitchen poured ultramel in a bowl warmed it then crushed some tennis biscuits mixed it together added some cream went up to my room I ate and slept after setting an alarm for 16:30.

I woke up when my alarm was ringing I felt like throwing my phone on the wall I got up went to rinse my mouth I went to nosi's room she was playing tea party with her dolls

Me: "hey baby"

Nosi: "hi sisi"

Me: "Avery and Liam are going to Dumisa do you want to go with them"

Nosi: "nope" she wanted nothing to do with the place

Me: "okay how about you put on some jean and a jacket we will go drop them off and come back"

Nosi: "okay" I went to pack for Liam checked on Avery then I went to freshen got dressed in a black pencil skirt a tucked in black tank top and denim jacket with black ankle boots I tied my weave in a messy bun we left drove by pick n pay bought some groceries then drove to pick up the twins Enhle buckled them up

Enhle: "don't drive into a truck with my girls"

Me: "okay Minenhle" I drove off after an hour and few minutes we were driving into the gate we didn't stay long we drove past spur bought dinner it was just Nosi and I Masisi was spending time with her boyfriend. We got home changed into our pjs ate in my room watching a movie on my laptop I made a mental note to buy a tv for my room tomorrow. Mid way into the movie my phone rang it was Harper

Me: "hey" she cleared her throat

Harper: "are you okay"

Me: "yeah I'm fine"

Harper: "and Liam"

Me: "his fine and with his grandparents"

Harper: "that means you got time"

Me: "I guess so"

Harper: "what are you doing"

Me: "just watching a movie with my little sister"

Harper: "cool" there was silence "uhm goodnight Lani"

Me: "goodnight" I dropped the call pulled Nosi closer

.

Days went by on Christmas Eve I met up with Thandi and mam'ncane in town they had Liam we went to buy groceries for the following day then we went to Dumisa Masisi had gone to Lagos with Nosi. We had a Christmas and New Year's Eve on the 2nd of January the kids and I left I hadn't spoken to Nzuzo since he left all I got was an email saying he arrived safely he is still going to try and sort out his international network situation. I had hired a live in nanny she moved in but she was staying in the pool house, Harper and I spoke almost everyday she was just an amazing person. Days went by I was back at work I was going for my 6th month check up everything was well baby was growing amazingly I was having my baby girl I was so happy Harper took me out for lunch to celebrate I scanned the picture sent Nzuzo an email with a subject saying its a girl, 3 days later he called it was the first speaking to him on the phone

Nzuzo: "thembalam" I cried "don't cry you going to upset our princess"

Me: "I miss you so badly"

Nzuzo: "it can't be as much as I miss you"

Me: "come home"

Nzuzo: "Lani" I sighed

Me: "are you well? You eating and resting enough?"

Nzuzo: "I'm fine love what about you and the kids"

Me: "we fine just missing you the bed is cold without I haven't changed the bedding because it still smells like you"

Nzuzo; "I stole you pjs" we laughed

Me: "that's silly"

Nzuzo: "it's love"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I love you so much more"

Me: "can I ask"

Nzuzo: "ofcos"

Me: "we never really spoke about what will happen if pancake is Bradley's"

Nzuzo: "pancake is my child regardless of her blood she's ours langelihle wethu"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "school is opening soon Nosi and Avery ready?"

Me: "yes and I sent Enhle the extra money for the twins school things"

Nzuzo: "thank you babe"

Me: "pancake is making me fat"

Nzuzo: "I'm sure you just gained a jean size"

Me: "I wish I could fast forward time"

Nzuzo: "be patient babe"

Me: "no cheating" he laughed

Nzuzo: "I haven't even thought about that"

Me: "good because married people don't cheat"

Nzuzo: "wouldn't dream of it"

Me: "I'm horny all the time" he laughed

Nzuzo: "it's will pass babe"

Me: "wish i could give birth now"

Nzuzo: "are you horny now"

Me: "nah I just want to cuddle"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" we spoke until I fell asleep.

.

Time flew by Nzuzo and I spoke like twice a month. I was now 9 months 2 days past my due date I was huge and round Harper and I were really good friends I was in the pool I felt hot and irritated Masisi was watching me while having a glass of merlo when Harper came out of the house

Harper: "hey! Avery let me in"

Us: "hey"

Harper: "why you swimming so late"

Masisi: "pancake is making her crazy again" she came to sit down putting her feet in the water

Harper: "are you okay"

Me: "yeah"

Harper: "been thinking about putting you in induced labor is that something you've thought about"

Me: "wana rub my back it kinda hurts" she laughed shaking her head

Harper: "okay come out" she held my hand helping me come out

Me: "I have oils in my room Masisi please go them"

Masisi: "yoh you need to give birth already"

Harper: "why don't we go to your room you will feel more comfortable"

Me: "it's hot in there"

Harper: "you can't spend the night out here"

Me: "whatever" we went up to my room I got out of the wet leggings and tank top I was wearing I put on pjs went to lay on the bed "please open the window and the sliding door" she went to then started rubbing my back

Harper: "you have a perfect back"

Me: "thank you, please dig deeper" she chuckled and did I let out a soft moan she cleared her throat her hands further down I found myself moaning louder I was seriously on a verge of an orgasm

Harper: "so help me God Lani if you don't stop moaning like this I will stop massaging you"

Me: "sorry" after the massage we watched tv.

I must have fallen asleep because I woke up when I felt wet Harper was asleep on the couch I sat up looked at the bed my water had broke but it wasn't clear it was yellowish with red spots I woke up Harper we rushed to the hospital I didn't even suffer that much after an hour or so I gave birth my little pancake came out with a loud cry they cleaned her up and gave her to me I didn't even need to take a blood test she was so light skinned I could see her veins she had her father's eyes

Harper: "she's perfect little pancake" I nodded with tears running down my face Harper wiped them and kissed my forehead "you did good Lani"

Me; "my little Hope Langelihle Khumalo"

PART 44

I got cleaned up then went to my room I couldn't stop staring at my baby she was absolutely perfect. Yes she had her father's eyes even the thin pink lips and yes chances are every time I look at her I will see her father but that all didn't matter because I will see the good side of Bradley the Bradley I fell in love with the Bradley I spent 5 years of my life with not the sick Bradley who raped me and beat me.

Masisi: "she's so adobs Lani" she wouldn't stop taking pictures "she looks nothing like Nzuzo though and she's so light skinned" no one knew that Bradley raped me it was something that Nzuzo and I kept to ourselves, now I had to tell everyone this by myself

Me: "she's Bradley's daughter" she stopped taking pictures and looked at me

Masisi: "Lani"

Me: "don't. Don't do that don't feel sorry for me"

Masisi: "why did you keep it"

Me: "excuse me?!"

Masisi: "I'm sorry.... Just Wow Lani you should have told me"

Me: "I don't have to tell you everything Masisi you not my husband"

Masisi: "that's hurtful Lani" I huffed

Me: "I'm sorry I didn't mean it like that, I didn't tell anyone but Nzuzo"

Masisi: "does he know that Hope is not his"

Me: "no we weren't sure but now.."

Masisi: "God his going to be so devastated"

Me: "I know, please take her" she took I stood up went to pee I was wincing in pain pancake was big my poor vjaja got cut I wiped went out found Harper sitting on the couch carrying pancake

Harper: "how you feeling" I sat on the bed she stood up came to sit on the chair next to the bed

Me: "I'm okay just a little sore"

Harper: "the stitches will heal soon"

Me: "give me my baby" she chuckled shaking her head

Harper: "I got her" she brushed my weave pushing it back "she's perfect right"

Me: "yes she is"

Harper: "she looks just like you" I giggled

Me: "don't lie"

Harper: "seriously look at those dimples"

Me: "she's a baby"

Harper: "she's colored"

Me: "I know" I looked up she was staring at me

Harper: "wana talk about it"

Me: "there's nothing to say" she nodded

Harper: "I have to go for my rounds I'll see you later I sent Masisi to get you some food"

Me: "thank you Kendra I don't know what I would have done without you these past months" she smiled

Harper: "I love it when you call me by my first name"

Me: "silly" I took pancake

Harper: "see you later" she kissed pancake's forehead and my head then walked out I took my phone sent Nzuzo an email with a subject saying sorry I attached pictures of pancake

.

I got discharged 2 days later it was 3 month and 2 weeks later and I hadn't told anybody that I gave birth I didn't know how to face everyone and I knew people will think I cheated on Nzuzo I couldn't really go around telling people that my bipolar ex boyfriend kidnapped me then raped me. Then there was the whole situation of telling Nzuzo's family by myself Nzuzo left me in mess that I couldn't get myself out off I could feel myself slowly going into depression but then I'd look at my pancake and fall in love with her. My kids kept me sane Nzuzo hadn't called i was hurting there was a tiny voice in my head that kept saying he hasn't called because I gave birth to Bradley's child he was disgusted he wanted nothing to do with us but then the rational part of me knew that it because he hasn't gotten my email because it takes long for him to get it and because the international network that side sucks. I was in my room with pancake and Liam watching tv everyone was at school when my phone rang it was dad I had been ignoring his calls since I gave birth I let it ring until it cut off he sent an sms

better open this gate if you know what's good for you

I huffed switched off the tv I put pancake in her sleeper then carried Liam we went downstairs I opened the gate went to wait for him in the tv room Liam loved cartoons I asked the helper to prepare lunch "Lani!!" He screamed from the foyer

Me: "I'm in here" I breathed out dad was a sweet man with a good heart but the angry side of him was scary he got in looking so angry the tip of his nose was even shiny "daddy"

Dad: "don't you dare! Don't daddy me Yamkelani" I looked down "are you crazy? you give birth then shut the whole family out"

Me: "I'm sorry I didn't know how to tell everyone"

Dad: "tell everyone what" I pulled the blanket off pancake dad looked at her with his eyes twinkling tears "Lani" he whispered

Me: "don't feel sorry for me" he kneeled next to her brushing her chubby cheeks

Dad: "she's perfect don't be ashamed"

Me: "I'm not ashamed"

Dad: "she's not Bradley" he took her and sat next to me "you don't owe anyone any explanation Lani but you talk to your family. How can you not tell me Bradley did this to you?"

Me: "it wouldn't have changed anything he still would have been diagnosed"

Dad: "he would be dead"

Me: "then my daughter would one day grow up to know her uncles killed her father"

Dad: "he might have gave you the sperm but he is not her father let's get that straight and he will not know about her Lani I am being serious" he spoke firmly

Me: "yes dad"

Cleo: "lunch is ready"

Me: "thank you Cleo" she nodded and left "are you hungry?"

Dad: "I am always hungry" I giggled we went to eat I fed Liam "what does Nzuzo say about this"

Me: "we haven't spoken since she was born but he knew there was a chance that she's Bradley and he was okay with it he said she's ours regardless of her blood"

Dad: "and now you not sure" I looked down playing with my food

Me: "he hasn't made contact since she was born dad"

Dad: "Nzuzo loves you he must have his reasons but don't doubt him because you going to find yourself in the arms of another Bradley"

Me: "wow dad"

Dad: "I don't mean it in s bad way" pancake started crying I took her dad took Liam I went to get her bottle from the fridge warmed it up a little then went back to the dinning area feeding her "she's a screamer isn't she" I giggled siting down

Me: "I don't even need a monitor I can hear her from anywhere around the house"

Dad: "I need to rest a little"

Me: "you staying"

Dad: "am I not welcomed in my daughter's home"

Me: "ofcos you are daddy I'm just surprised I didn't even know you in the country"

Dad: "what was I supposed to do when my daughter won't answer my calls or her siblings calls then the sister she lives with won't tell me what's going on"

Me: "I'm sorry daddy" he brushed my hair

Dad: "don't apologize" I nodded

Me: "I'll go fix a room for you just hold pancake and continue feeding her or she will scream this house down" he laughed taking her I went upstairs changed the bedding in one of the guest rooms then went back downstairs I was losing weight just by the going up and down the staircase the house was huge

Me: "the room is ready"

Dad: "thank you Lani" I took pancake he went to get his bag we walked upstairs I showed him the room then took my kids to my room I opened the cartoons for Liam put pancake in her cot I took my phone I had texts from Kendra she was just the best I called her

Harper: "beautiful"

Me: "hey"

Harper: "miss you"

Me: "I guess I will make things worse I have cancel dinner plans my dad just showed up"

Harper: "oh"

Me: "it sucks I know"

Harper: "it's cool I will see you at work tomorrow we can do lunch"

Me: "I thought you off tomorrow"

Harper: "not anymore"

Me: "okay"

Harper: "wana FaceTime"

Me: "I don't have my face on" she laughed

Harper: "don't be silly"

Me: "I'm serious"

Harper: "how is pancake and Liam"

Me: "they good pancake is sleeping and Liam is watching cartoons"

Harper: "as usual"

Me: "you know them"

Harper: "I'm coming over Lani I miss you guys"

Me: "okay"

Harper: "thank you I'll be out at 22:00"

Me: "bring it me a burger from Murphy's" she chuckled

Harper: "what happened to eating clean"

Me: "I'm allowed to have a cheat date"

Harper: "burger with fries and extra cheese it is"

Me: "thank you"

Harper: "so I bought that Zayn album you were talking about"

Me: "did you listen to it? I told you it's nice"

Harper: "it's oryt I'm still more into maroon five" we carried on with our stupid conversation debating about music we had a lot in common but when it came to music we could never reach common ground it would be worse if we in a car together.

At night I went to open for Kendra everyone was asleep

Me: "hey" we hugged she kissed my cheek

Harper: "is it that late" the house was dark besides the passage

Me: "yes everyone is asleep" we went upstairs to my room

Harper: "and why you up"

Me: "because I have a visitor" we sat under the comforter I started eating

Harper: "is the latest suit episode up on catch up"

Me: "should be check" she took the remote we watched tv talking until really late then she left I slept

.

Days turned into weeks and weeks turned into months Liam was 2 and pancake was 7 months I still haven't heard from Nzuzo I still hadn't seen his family I kept on making excuses whenever they wanted us to visit or to meet pancake. I didn't know how to tell them about her, she was such a beautiful happy girl the 1st year was over I was counting down until my husband came home if he was still alive it was Christmas I felt really bad because ever since we came back we had had Christmas with Nzuzo's family but this time around we had at my house just me my kids and two little sisters. It was New Year's Eve I was going out with kendra, Masisi, Kendra's little sister Ivy and Jessica. Jessica and I were close she stopped being friends with Sarah and Noni when they told her to choose sides and she felt she connects with me better so she told them to fuck off. I finished getting ready I was wearing short white jumpsuit with caramel ankle boots and caramel sleeveless coat my weave left lose I had a 16 inch Peruvian with green tips. I grabbed my bag went downstairs as usual I was the last one to get ready I spoke to the babysitter then we left going to 47th avenue we got there got a table they bought their alcohol everyone was drinking but me so I was driving I just got play energy drink. The night went by amazingly it had fun watching them getting drunk and acting like fools

Harper: "come dance with me" I shook my head

Me: "no way" she pulled my arm "Kendra!"

Harper: "yes" she took me to the dance floor we danced as Tory Lanez- luv was pumping through the speaker she was behind me grinding slowly

Me: "Kendra" she turned me around she was really good "where did you learn to dance like that"

Harper: "the bedroom" I laughed the music was shut the count down started "you beautiful" everyone screamed happy new year she held my neck and kissed me I held onto her shirt kissing her back

PART 45

The kiss felt so different it was slow and sweet her tongue swept through my mouth her other hand held my back she brought me closer the music was pumping loudly again someone bumped on me I pulled back from the kiss

Me: "I I ... Uhm excuse me" I turned walked to the toilet it was so full the line was long and people were drunk I just got out walked to out going to the car I got in and screamed I was frustrated that I enjoyed the kiss hitting the steering wheel it felt wrong in so many ways she's my friend and my husband trusts her, after awhile I wiped my tears went out I got back at the table they were all there Jessica was dancing in front of Kendra

Masisi: "are you okay"

Me: "yep!. When are we leaving?"

Ivy: "it still early"

Masisi: "yeah Lani it just turned midnight"

Me: "I'm leaving"

Jessica: "don't be a bore"

Kendra: "we can leave Lani they will call an uber"

Me: "uhm no it's fine I'll stay until everyone wants to leave" Masisi got closer to me

Masisi: "taste this" she put her arm around my neck

Me: "you know I don't drink Masisi what are you playing at"

Masisi: "just taste it"

Me: "no!"

Masisi: "I saw you two kissing and you need this just take" I looked at her wanting to cry "sip" I took the glass and took a sip it actually tasted really nice

Me: "what's this"

Masisi: "belvedere and lemonade with lime" I took another sip she went mix another glass for herself I finished the glass gave her to mix for me again then I sat down nursing my drink around 3 they were all drunk so we left I dropped Jessica off first then went to Kendra's house Ivy and Masisi had passed out in the car I parked she turned in her seat looking at me

Kendra: "Lani I'm sorry I shouldn't have kissed you like that but I love you I'm in love with you and I know you can see that"

Me: "I'm not a lesbian Kendra" she nodded and got off the car opened the back seat she lifted up Ivy and closed the door I drove off feeling like an ass yes I felt some tupa way towards her and I found her beautiful Kendra was an attractive, funny, smart and sexy woman but she was not my type I was strictly dicky and married. We got home I shook Masisi

Masisi: "mmh"

Me: "wake up"

Masisi: "no"

Me: "I'll let you sleep in the car"

Masisi: "kissing Kendra made you grumpy" she got off the car "was she a bad kisser"

Me: "shut up drunkard" she giggled

Masisi: "it not my fault you a bore" I pushed her towards the main door Masisi is taller and bigger than me she's a curvey size 34 while I'm a 30 and shorter after she got in I locked set the alarm I went to check on the kids they were asleep pancake was sleeping with the babysitter in her nursery I went to my room I went to wash my face I brushed my teeth took my iPad sent Nzuzo an email

i don't know why, I don't know how Nzuzo I don't even know if you still alive. we haven't spoke in 8 months our sons miss you I miss you, pancake doesn't even know your voice. I don't know what to say to your family they haven't seen the kids since pancake was born I'm sure they hate me and I don't blame them I know if they see pancake they will think I cheated on you I will be called names, I'm in a position where I don't know which way to go everything is a mess Nzuzo and I need you, I don't know how to tell them I was raped Nzuzo. You know Liam walks now his such runner I have to put him on a leash if I am taking a walk with them and Avery is so grown you should see how protective he is over the twins and pancake. I just want you to know that I love you Nzuzo I've loved you for years and I will never stop I don't know what's happening but I need you we need you and if you mad at me because pancake is Bradley's please don't punish your kids for it. Just call me if you don't want to speak to me call the house speak to your sons please, you are killing me I am dying a slow painful death I feel unloved and unwanted by my husband. I love you for eternity

After sending the email I slept

.

On the 6th I was going back to work I got up went to bath got out lotioned I put on formal peach high waist ankle grazer pants with a matching long sleeve lose crop top I wore nude platform heels I brushed my weave took my bags and the monitor I went to masisi's room woke her up

Masisi: "mmh"

Me: "I'm leaving watch over pancake and she has an appointment at 14:30 with her doctor at the hospital"

Masisi: "okay" I left the monitor on her bedside went downstairs I grabbed an apple and left I got at the office

Me: "Sthembiso get coffee and sandwiches from the cafeteria we got work to do"

Sthe: "okay" I went in my office after Nzuzo read the texts between Sthe and I obviously he spoke to him told him to back off or he will find himself in the hospital with broken ribs and no job I don't know what else he said that's all Sthe told me but Nzuzo scared him because he backed off immediately he kept everything professional I sat down logged into my hospital user checked my emails we had a budget meeting in a few hours I took my iPad checked my personal emails there was nothing from Nzuzo I don't even know why I still checked there were a few about his company which was doing amazingly well. Sthe came back

Sthe: "hope chicken mayo is fine"

Me: "good for me. Sit please"

Sthe: "I'll go grab the iPad first" he put the things down went to his office came back we went over things while eating.

At 11:00 we walked to the conference room my eyes landed on Kendra as soon as I got in we hadn't talked since the new year eve's kiss I greeted and sat down the meeting went on it took close to 5 hours there were lot arguing people wanting more money for their departments some wanting raises by the end of the meeting half of the chiefs hated me because I wasn't agreeing with them but there wasn't much I could do the board was not giving the hospital more money and it was my job to ensure we don't run out of money and the money given to me will last until the 2nd term of the year. When the meeting was over Sthe snd I walked out leaving them arguing amongst themselves

Sthe: "that was hectic"

Me: "they just like making things difficult for no reason I mean I can't give another department more money than the other simply because they feel superior it doesn't work like that" Kendra walked past us "Dr Harper!" She stopped walking "you can leave Sthe we done for the day"

Sthe: "thank you" he continued walking I stood with Kendra

Me: "hi"

Kendra: "dr Khumalo"

Me: "are you still mad at me"

Kendra: "I'm not petty Lani you not a lesbian"

Me: "can we talk somewhere more private where I can sit down"

Kendra: "I'm done for the day we can go to your office or ..."

Me: "we can go to pop up society" she smiled she loved the place

Kendra: "I'll meet you there" we walked to the parking got in our different cars and left we got there got a table and got out burgers with milkshake

Me: "I've missed you"

Kendra: "Lani"

Me: "no Kendra you can't make me get used to you then do this you part of my life now my kids life you don't get to decide that I hurt your feelings so you shutting us down"

Kendra: "I'm sorry" I took a bite chewing slowly she wiped the corner of my lips we looked at each other she leaned in I met her halfway we kissed slowly she shifted closer and deepened the kiss she put her hands under my top her fingers grazing my boob I let out a soft moan she sucked on my tongue I let out another moaning pushing her back

Me: "woah I ..."

Kendra: "you not a lesbian yet you find me attractive and you love my kisses" she cut me off

Me: "that's not what I was going to say" she popped few fries in her mouth

Kendra: "mmh" I sighed

Me: "you a good friend Kendra I don't want to lose you"

Kendra: "you won't and I will stop kissing you"

Me: "I like kissing you" she laughed

Kendra: "I like kissing you too"

Me: "are we cool"

Kendra; "we cool dr Khumalo" I smiled we looked at each other "I want to kiss you again"

Me: "no that was the last time" she chuckled "I'm serious Kendra I'm married"

Kendra: "to someone you haven't spoken to in almost 9 months"

Me: "I don't cry to you so you can throw it back in my face"

Kendra: "I'm sorry it wasn't supposed to come out like that"

Me: "it's cool"

Kendra: "how are the kids"

Me: "good Liam was asking about you and pancake had her doctor's appointment today the rest are still enjoying the holiday"

Kendra: "I'll come over tonight before bedtime"

Me: "okay"

Kendra: "mom sent me a text yesterday"

Me: "she's still worried about you being single"

Kendra: "yes it irritating"

Me: "you should date"

Kendra: "would you like to have dinner with me tomorrow"

Me: "yeah that's cool"

Kendra: "as in a date" I coughed

Me; "we've ate together countless why do you want to complicate things now"

Kendra: "just a dinner date Lani no expectations no hidden agenda although I'm hoping to get a kiss" she said the last part playfully I giggled

Me: "dinner but my lips are off limit" she pushed her back putting her elbows on the table

Kendra: "lips are off limit" we finished eating she paid we left.

Later at night she came over just after dinner she gave Liam a bath while I was bathing pancake after that we watched tv in my room until the kids fell asleep she took Liam to his room I put pancake on her cot my angel was growing so fast

Kendra: "what you thinking about" she asked coming in my room

Me: "just that by the time Nzuzo comes home pancake will be walking and talking" she snaked her arms around my waist I leaned in on her touch

Kendra: "I'm leaving do you need anything"

Me: "this"

Kendra: "what"

Me: "you holding me" she let go and pulled me to bed we got under the comforter spooning "thank you"

Kendra: "I'm here for you Lani" she kissed my head while drawing patterns on my stomach I drifted off to sleep.

.

I woke up first the following day I looked at her sleeping peacefully I shook my head went to shower got out went in the closet I lotioned got dressed in white pencil skirt and olive green tucked in shirt with black heels I brushed my weave got out Kendra wasn't in bed I took my bags went to leave the monitor with Masisi I found Kendra making breakfast in the kitchen

Me: "you seem comfortable" she chuckled

Kendra: "I should be offended but I won't be and you look gorgeously sexy" she kissed my cheek giving me my plate we sat around the counter started eating

Me: "you not working"

Kendra: "nah I'm not"

Me: "cool"

Kendra: "pick you up at 18:40 we have reservations for 19:00"

Me: "it's not a date"

Kendra: "it's a date"

Me: "married people don't date we just good friends going to eat"

Kendra: "it's a date" we laughed I mouthed it's not a date she just shook her head

Me: "you beautiful"

Kendra: "I know"

Me: "cocky much"

Kendra: "I've always been beautiful, the pretty face that face every boy wanted from high school through out medical school even the ones who knew I had a girlfriend thought they could change me"

Me: "you always knew you were a lesbian"

Kendra: "I always knew I was different from my sisters I connected more with my brothers I was fascinated by how they spoke about their girlfriends so when I was in the 7th grade my brothers and I went to a party spin the bottle was played I made sure it pointed between me and this hot girl when it did dang baby it was fireworks so yeah I've always knew"

Me: "I've always knew I'm straight" she laughed

Kendra: "you just like kissing me don't you"

Me: "shut up!" We laughed "I'm going"

Kendra: "let me walk out with you" she walked out she walked me to my car "see you later"

Me: "later"

Kendra: "I'm going to kiss you now" I chuckled shaking my head she cupped my face we kissed shortly "have a good day at work"

Me: "bye" I got in the car drove out with her driving behind me.

At night i was dressed in black ankle grazer ripped jeans, a black tucked in loosely shirt and lime ankle strap heels I took my bag walked downstairs

Me: "we can go" she turned and looked at me with a smile

Kendra: "you look gorgeous"

Me: "I thought you said we late"

Kendra: "let's go" she took my hand

Masisi: "I'm watching you dr Harper!!" She pointed her finger at her we laughed leaving.

We had an amazing dinner then we left God knows I haven't been on a date in years with Nzuzo the kids were always around we just went for family dinners or we would order in

Kendra: "wana go or we could have coffee watch game of thrones I got that season you've been wanting on showmax"

Me: "you know I won't say no to game of thrones"

Kendra: "great" she drove to her house we made coffee and pop corn went to her room got comfortable and started watching tv after 3 episodes I was sleepy

Me: "take me home"

Kendra: "sleep you will leave in the morning"

Me: "I have work"

Kendra: "I'll wake you up"

Me: "can I shower"

Kendra: "want me to scrub your back"

Me: "you wish" I got off the bed laughing

Kendra: "there's fresh towels in the cupboard"

Me: "thank you"

Kendra: "I'll bath in the other bathroom" I nodded went to the bathroom I took a quick shower got out there were pj shorts and top on the bed I got dressed looked for a hairband in my bag I tied my hair went back to bed pressed resume and watched I sent Masisi a text that's I won't be coming back, after awhile she got in the room already in pjs

Kendra: "you need anything before I come to bed"

Me: "nope it's all good" she got in the bed and pulled me to her we cuddled

Kendra: "you smell great"

Me: "we smell the same" I could feel her lips forming a smile on my neck

Kendra: "I know"

Me: "so cocky"

Kendra: "I want to make love to you" I swallowed saliva

Me: "Kendra"

Kendra: "yes" she was tucking hand in my pj bottoms

Me: "don't"

Kendra: "okay" she started rubbing my clit I let out a moan pushed my head back "Lani"

Me: "I need you to stop"

Kendra: "okay" she took out her hand "I'm sorry"

Me: "it's okay just don't do it again" she turned me to face her

Kendra: "I love you" she kissed me we kissed deep and fast breathing heavily she got on top of me getting between my legs she took off my tank top when she sucked in my breast I let out a loud moan she groaned in her throat pushing down my pj shorts

PART 46

As good as it felt I couldn't do it I couldn't let it go even further it was bad enough already I pushed her off me

Me: "no I can't"

Kendra: "Lani" she begged her eyes were red she was even shaking

Me: "no Kendra I'm not doing this with you"

Kendra: "why not"

Me: "I am married!"

Kendra: "to someone who has probably forgotten about you Lani Nzuzo is a player he has fucked half the staff at work he did that while living with Enhle! So you think he is faithful to you now in another continent surrounded by females" I shoved her off me and got dressed in my clothes I took my bag walked out "Lani!!" She was coming after me "you know I'm right but I am sorry it's not my place to have an opinion"

Me: "fuck you!!" She grabbed my arm I yanked it "don't you dare touch me I am not yours to touch"

Kendra: "I'm sorry please I'm really sorry"

Me: "are you taking me home or am I walking home"

Kendra: "I'll take you home" I got out the house went to wait by the garage door I was pacing up and down because I wanted to cry but I WAS NOT ABOUT TO CRY in front of her from now on she is the

enemy how dare she talk like that about my husband after awhile the garage door opened she drove out I got in the back seat

Kendra: "really Lani"

Me: "you better drive or I will walk" she drove after a few minutes we were parked outside my house I tried opening the car door but it was locked "Kendra!"

Kendra: "you are not leaving this car until you listen to me" she climbed over came to sit next to me

Me: "I will brake this car window"

Kendra: "fine by me insurance will pay it off"

Me: "I hate you" she gasped

Kendra: "no you don't"

Me: "I do I curse the day I met you"

Kendra: "no you don't you can't Lani I'm sorry I didn't mean to upset you I was horny and not thinking straight I'm sorry"

Me: "you have no right to look down on my marriage like that"

Kendra: "it's true though you also know that it's true his a fuck boy just because he hasn't fucked anyone since you two got back together or you not aware of it doesn't mean he is not a player"

Me: "open this dr Harper" I spoke with authority

Kendra: "no"

Me: "do you want to go to work tomorrow and find out that your money has gone to cardio"

Kendra: "you wouldn't put your personal issues into work"

Me: "wana bet"

Kendra: "you not petty"

Me: "yes I'm not petty I'm not you I don't drag other people through the mud because I am horny and I want sex"

Kendra: "Lani I love you"

Me: "no you don't please open the door"

Kendra: "I love you and you know I love don't doubt that because you going to piss me off"

Me: "open the door!!!!!!!!!! Now!" She got shocked and reached over the driver's seat opening the doors I got out slammed the door I got in ran straight up to my room I threw myself on the bed crying sobbing loudly. I cried because what I did was as good as cheating, because what Kendra said is true Nzuzo is or was a fucking player yeah sure he cheated on me once and I trust that he will never do it again but now he was across the world probably surrounded by hot females who haven't had to pop out 2 kids from their vjaja or who had time to fuck him whenever or wherever because there are no kids crying in the room or who have not been raped by two different people, light skinned curvey women who talk medical terms with him I cried to the point where I bolted from the bed gasping for air like I was in physical pain the door opened Masisi got in

Masisi: "Yammy what's wrong" she got on the bed "what happened did Kendra hurt you"

Me: "it's Nzuzo"

Masisi: "oh my God Lani I am so sorry" she started crying "I can't believe his gone" my tears dried up the same time

Me: "what? His not dead"

Masisi: "oh" she wiped her tears I looked at her and started laughing she also laughed punching me "what the hell Lani?! You scared me"

Me: "why would you assume his dead" I couldn't stop laughing

Masisi: "you were crying like someone is dead"

Me: "no his not dead" I frowned "well I don't know maybe he is dead"

Masisi: "I'm sure they would have contacted you if he was"

Me: "I hope so Masisi"

Masisi: "he is being an ass though like the fuck"

Me: "I know" we sighed and laid on the bed looking at the roof "Kendra almost fucked me" she sat up in shock I pulled her back we looked at each other

Masisi: "how far did it go"

Me: "she had my boob in her mouth and I was naked"

Masisi: "shit"

Me: "I know"

Masisi: "you should have just done it"

Me: "Sne!!!"

Masisi: "you haven't had sex in over a year you starting to look ugly" I smacked her we laughed

Me: "I feel really bad Sne I cheated on my husband"

Masisi: "you have two choices here, you can tell him or you can not tell him. You have two years to think about it but as you said she almost did so you didn't really cheat on him"

Me: "I'm such a whore"

Masisi: "yes you are"

Me: "hey!" She laughed I joined her "you suck you know that right"

Masisi: "says you! You had your breast in Kendra's mouth"

Me: "shut up"

Masisi: "she freakn hot and sexy as hell I don't blame you"

Me: "dude!! And those breasts what the fuck" we giggled "bring my daughter to me and go to sleep it's late I have work in the morning"

Masisi: "she's asleep Lani she will wake up"

Me: "but I miss her"

Masisi: "boohoo!! Suck it up I'm not waking up my niece"

Me: "whatever leave my room" she kissed my cheek and walked out I took off my clothes went to leave them in the laundry basket in the bathroom went to the closet I put on Nzuzo's t-shirt I switched the lights off went to bed fell straight asleep.

.

Few weeks later it was a Saturday I was making lunch for the kids they were swimming Masisi and Ivy were watching them the intercom rang I went to check the camera it was baba-ncane's car I got so scared I covered the screen with my hand I breathed out the intercom rang again I opened the gate I rushed outside to the pool

Me: "Masisi take pancake to the nursery"

Masisi: "what's going on"

Me: "bab'ncane is driving up"

Masisi: "Lani no!"

Me: "please"

Masisi: "Lani"

Me: "I am telling not asking you Sne" she clicked her tongue and left with pancake I went back in went to the main door I opened it with a smile they got in we exchanged greetings went to lounge it was his aunt, uncle and Sandile he is the only one I was still talking to because of the company and he knew about pancake

Me: "I'll go get something to drink"

Uncle: "sit down makoti" he didn't sound pleased at all I sat down "what kind of people do you think we are?!!"

Aunt: "baba calm down"

Me: "I don't understand baba"

Uncle: "have we not been your parents"

Me: "you have"

Uncle: "so if Nzuzo leav..." Thando came in screaming for me

Thando: "mom where are the hot dogs!"

Me: "greet Thando"

Thando: "hello" she went to them giving them hugs and cheek kisses Thando was just a sweetheart

Aunt: "ma'Khumalo how are you"

Thando: "im fine, mom?"

Me: "go tell Cleo to continue"

Thando: "okay" she walked out

Aunt: "they've grown where are the boys and the little one" I swallowed saliva looking down

Me: "the boys are swimming outside"

Uncle: "why haven't you been home"

Me: "it's work it.."

Uncle: "don't lie!" I looked at Sandile he looked down

Aunt: "she is not a child baba you don't have to yell at her"

Uncle: "she is a child in this family"

Me: "I'm sorry I thought you were being taken care off"

Aunt: "Lani my child sending money every month doesn't mean we being taken care off and we are not a shop that you just pay your account and move on we are family"

Me: "i am sorry"

Aunt: "we know about Langelihle and that her father is that white man who kidnapped you. Why didn't you tell us Yammy? Are we not your parents?"

Me: "I didn't want you to think I went out of my marriage"

Uncle: "you think of us that low even if you had went out of your marriage if Nzuzo didnt tell us then it wouldn't be our business it your marriage issue. We are your parents we have no right to judge but to address an issue that is brought to us"

Me: "I am sorry"

Aunt: "you have really let us down Yammy we didn't even know your new house and Sandile had kept this from us"

Me: "I asked him to mah I just wanted Nzuzo to come back first then he can talk to you and baba"

Uncle: "you were wrong Yamkelani" I could hear pancake wailing my daughter was a screamer and I knew that cry she wasn't going to calm down unless she was in my arms

Me: "I have to attend to her or she won't stop crying"

Aunt: "go" I nodded and ran upstairs I found Masisi trying to hush her I took her

Me: "what happened"

Masisi: "she just started screaming"

Me: "it's okay pancake mommy is here" I brushed her hair blowing air on her face "her nappy is clean"

Masisi: "yes" after about 10 minutes she hadn't stop crying her face was even red mam'ncane got in the nursery

Aunt: "let me take her" I gave her pancake after close to 20 minutes everyone in the house had tried but she was still screaming her voice was even husky I was also in tears

Masi: "I called Kendra" I just nodded Kendra and I hadn't spoken since that night I didn't answer her calls or texts she once tried coming to my office but I told Sthe if it not related to work I'm not available that didn't stop her though she showed up at my house a countless times but I had told everyone to not open the gate for her

Aunt: "who is Kendra"

Me: "she's a doctor she works with Nzuzo"

Aunt: "okay" Kendra came in running I gave her pancake

Me: "she won't stop crying Kendra it been over 30 minutes" she nodded putting her on the changer she took off her clothes started checking her out

Kendra: "her fever is too high Lani open the shower for me make the water hot" I nodded I went to open the shower with Kendra following me

Kendra: "strip"

Me: "are you insane my mother in law is out there" she chuckled

Kendra: "God I've missed you but strip and get in the shower with pancake just don't get her wet the hot steam will help"

Me: "oh" I took off my dress got in the shower with pancake

Kendra: "I'm so turned on right now"

Me: "shut up"

Kendra: "the images of having you pressed against the wall in the shower are too strong to ignore"

Me: "you might have helped my daughter but I still hate you"

Kendra: "and I'm still in love with you" I sighed

Me: "she's falling asleep I'm taking her out"

Kendra: "okay" I got out wrapped a towel around me dried her went to put her to bed I was about to walk out when Kendra pulled me and pinned me against the wall she kissed me deeply I took time to react I pushed her off me

Me: "show some respect my in laws are downstairs"

Kendra: "can I come over later"

Me: "no Kendra we not friends anymore"

Kendra: "I'll come over to check on pancake and bring her some medication"

Me: "don't use my daughter"

Kendra: "I love your daughter, I'll be back later"

Me: "okay" I took the monitor went to get dressed while she left I went downstairs they were eating

Uncle: "how is she now"

Me: "she's better and she's asleep"

Aunt: "that's better" I nodded "I'm hoping you and the kids can visit next weekend"

Me: "we will come but I'll have to speak to Enhle about the twins"

Uncle: "that one should just let you raise these kids"

Aunt: "ayi baba don't get involved in people's business"

Uncle: "okay sthandwa sam" I smiled

Sandile: "we have to go baba"

Aunt: "okahle Sandile"

Sandile: "I have a pregnant wife at home"

Uncle: "okay we can go before makoti starts calling ei naye she's so naggy. Yamkelani bring langelihle home"

Me: "yebo baba" I called in the kids they said their goodbyes then we walked them out they left I threw myself on the couch with a huge sigh Thando crawled up and sat on me she was such a sweetheart unlike Oluhle she was just filled with attitude only spoke to me when she needed something

Me: "yes baby"

Thando: "I'm also tired"

Me: "I see, do you want to sleep?" She shook her head

Thando: "I want to watch tv and sleep in your bed next to pancake"

Me: "but the tv will wake up pancake"

Thando: "okay I'll sleep here" she rested her head on my chest I laid on the couch and opened tv "thank you" I kissed her head

.

Time was something that just flew right by it was now 3 years after Nzuzo had left I still haven't heard from him since 3 weeks before pancake was born Liam was 4 and my little pancake was 2 she was just the most adorable baby girl ever with her dimples and chubby cheeks she was so light skinned and her hair God! It was extremely long and curly I had never cut it. Avery had grown into an amazing little man he was going to do grade 8 now at Glenwood high, Nosi was still at primary going to be doing grade 4 she was such a beautiful respectful soul. it was the exactly 3 years since Nzuzo had left I kept my phone with me the whole time I kept on checking the gate thinking he will come but nothing I even went to sleep holding my phone to my chest thinking he will call saying he is at the airport but nothing. Another week passed it was Christmas we didn't go to Dumisa we had gone the previous night so we were spending Christmas at my house because I thought Nzuzo might come home Kendra came over with her girlfriend Stacy they had been together for a year nothing ever happened between Kendra and I after that night at her house we would just kiss nothing much but when she started dating Stacy we stopped. New Year's Eve we went to Dumisa with the kids Masisi was spending it with Lizwi. Eventually the kids went back to school I went back to work days turned into weeks which turned into months it was now March. The twins were home for the weekend after dinner we all watched a movie after the movie it was bath time then bed time I went around the bedrooms tucking them in then

went to my room I took a bath got out got dressed in Nzuzo's t-shirt then I slept I was a little drained
6 kids are no play.

I was woken up by someone snaking their arms around my body I screamed and jumped off the bed
switching the side lamp on and there he was looking more gorgeous than ever with his beard too
grown and a smile on his face

Nzuzo: "thembalam" I didn't even know if I should kiss him or slap the stupid sexy smile off his face

PART 48

Me: "I don't understand"

Aunt: "Nzuzo" he looked down

Nzuzo: "I have a child Lani"

Me: "I don't understand" he came to kneel next to me

Nzuzo: "I love you baby" I smiled weakly "and I'm sorry love I am so sorry no amount of sorries could
ever make this better or make it go but I'm still sorry"

Me: "Nzuzo you scaring me" he quickly wiped his tears

Nzuzo; "I have a child Lani his 1 I'm sorry" I looked at him with my tears running down my face

Uncle: "makoti we know that this is possibly the worst news, you were not even expecting it but the
child is here now what has happened can not be reversed all we can do is move forward" I wiped my
tears

Me: "I hear you"

Aunt: "the child Lani he needs a mother he needs a home, we could stay with him back at home or
you can take him in. We don't want to burden you"

Me: "whatever decision my husband makes I will support him"

Nzuzo: "Lani?"

Me: "he is your son you wouldn't have come back with him if you didn't want him in your life. So what
do you want to do Nzuzo" he looked at his aunt

Aunt: "ei voestek mani Phiwokuhle khuluma!!!"

Nzuzo: "I want him to stay with me with us and his siblings"

Me: "then bring him home" he put his head on my thighs crying I held his head "it's okay Nzuzo what's
done is done, where is he now?"

Uncle: "at home with us"

Me: "guess when Nzuzo takes you back home he can come back with him"

Nzuzo: "I'm so sorry Yamkelani"

Me: "it's okay baba ka phiwo don't cry"

Uncle: "you a good person my child you have a good strong heart"

Me; "I'll go prepare something to eat you must be hungry" I gently pushed Nzuzo off me he stood up so did I

Nzuzo: "I'll help"

Me: "no it's fine keep mah beno baba company" I went to the kitchen I made the food when I was done I took it to the lounge they ate as they spoke I was just smiling and nodding commenting where I had to until they were done eating I took the dishes to the kitchen I washed them just to avoid going to sit in the lounge and smiling as if everything is fine when I was done I went to check on the boys they were watching a movie in the theater room, Masisi and Nosi were out shopping. When I got in the lounge they said their goodbyes and left I went to my room

You know when you don't know how to feel that was me I had so many emotions I didn't know which one to concentrate on I felt like such a fool. I took a quick shower I needed to leave the house that was the only thing that was on my mind I got out of the shower went to the closet lotioned got dressed in knitted gray high waist skirt with a thigh slit and a matching long sleeve crop top with black ankle heel boot I tied my weave into a messy bun did my make up I went to tell Cleo that I am leaving so she needs to watch the kids I got in my X6 drove out I called Jessica

Jessica: "boo"

Me: "what you doing"

Jessica: "watching Mistresses" I chuckled how fucking fitting

Me: "meet me at Tasha's please"

Jessica: "be there in an hour"

Me: "cool" I dropped the call listened to music my phone rang it was Nzuzo I didn't answer he called again I still didn't answer then his aunt called I also didn't answer but I called Nzuzo back

Nzuzo: "baby you had me worried"

Me: "sorry I left the phone in the lounge"

Nzuzo: "oh wanted to ask if I should get anything"

Me: "nonono we good"

Nzuzo: "okay I love you"

Me: "sho" I dropped the call listened to music the whole way I got to gateway parked my car went to Tasha's got table for two I ordered double shot of belvedere and a can of lemonade with dash of lime by the time Jessica got there I was on my 3rd glass

Jessica: "woah! You drinking"

Me: "it's about time I enjoyed my life don't you think" we laughed she ordered a glass of Moët and we got food

Jessica: "are you okay"

Me: "yeah I'm good, how is ntobeko"

Jessica: "that asshole is cheating" I laughed and not in a lady like manner "thanks! Go on laugh at my misery friend"

Me: "I'm sorry, dump him"

Jessica: "sex is too good"

Me: "his got the type of dick game that will have you singing 'should I go should I stay I'm in control anyway' that's the worst"

Jessica: "boo! That's the kind that will have you so confused his got me singing 'you got me torn in between the two coz I really wana be with you' it sucks"

Me: "that's the Nzuzo tupa dick game"

Jessica: "Dr Khumalo is acting up?"

Me: "nah Nzuzo is good we good" I loved Jessica but she was the last person I would speak about my marriage issues with

Jessica: "I need to find myself a Nzuzo" I giggled

Me: "everyone needs to find themselves a Nzuzo"

Jessica: "I'm so jealous"

Me; "don't be it not all rose colored glasses"

Jessica: "trouble in paradise"

Me: "nah bru I'm telling you that we good"

Jessica: "you can talk to me you know that right"

Me: "oh don't be a bore lets go somewhere after eating" she looked at her watch

Jessica: "we will leave around 22:00 we can go clubbing" it was 20:00 now

Me: "cool by me"

By the time we had planned to go I was drunk and feeling dizzy, we got in our cars as I drove out the parking I felt that I wasn't okay anymore I was even sleepy I called Jessica told her I can't go anymore she clicked her tongue and said whatever as I turned by my street I saw Kendra's car driving in I followed her in when I parked my car she was already standing outside the garage waiting for me she opened my door I got out

Kendra: "to what do I owe this pleasure on a cold very cold Saturday night" I smiled

Me: "you really hot do you know that" she giggled

Kendra: "and you are drunk, let's get you home before Nzuzo breathes fire"

Me; "he came back with a child a 1 year old boy"

Kendra: "oh fuck"

Me: "when am I going to be happy Kendra? I mean who did I do wrong in my previous life?" She held my hand we walked in went to sit in the lounge

Kendra: "he doesn't deserve you Lani"

Me: "and now I have to be a mother to his son the very same son he got as a result of his infidelity, it's not fair Kendra it's not fair. I love Nzuzo yes I messed with kissing you and everything but why does he keep on hurting Kendra" I had tears running down my face she held me

Kendra: "you don't have to mother his son"

Me: "then I'll be known as a hypocrite who expects her husband to raise her daughter and now I can't raise his son! I am chasing him away it also his home he deserves to be there with his siblings"

Kendra: "you were raped he cheated Lani don't compare the two"

Me: "it hurts Kendra it hurts so bad I feel suffocated I need air" she kissed my head rocking me back and forth I even hiccup "I love him and it hurts Kendra"

Kendra: "love shouldn't hurt Lani when it starts to hurt it not right anymore"

Me: "yes he took care of me when I had nobody but I can't anymore he doesn't make me happy anymore all he does is hurt and say sorry now I'm supposed to take it as it comes it not fair"

Kendra: "you don't owe him for what he did for you and Masisi Lani"

Me: "I feel like I do"

Kendra: "you don't"

Me: "I want a drink" she chuckled

Kendra: "what do you want"

Me: "vodka and lemonade"

Kendra: "okay" she let go of me went to the bar

Me: "bring the whole bottle!!"

Kendra: "got it!!" She came back with and a bottle of cognac

Me: "I kinda want meat"

Kendra: "let's go to the kitchen" we went there I sat on the counter she started grilling lamb chops and wors, I was just drinking away she came to stand between my legs I pushed her hair back

Me: "you very beautiful Kendra"

Kendra: "you drunk Lani" I tried kissing her she moved

Me: "you don't want me anymore"

Kendra: "not when you drunk Lani! Not when your life is a mess I will not be your escape goat. All I can give you right now is friendship" I nodded and took a sip of my vodka straight from the bottle

Me: "I'm gonna go home" I jumped off the counter but fell I hit my head "oh fucking shit!!"

Kendra: "are you okay"

Me: "am I bleeding"

Kendra: "no but you going to get a major headache"

Me: "how funny would it be if I had a brain damage and dr Khumalo had to operate on me I'd code right there in the OR"

Kendra: "don't talk like that Nzuzo is a good surgeon"

Me: "I wish he wasn't, if he wasn't he wouldn't have cheated. You know now I understand that whole Cuba and network story was bullshit"

Kendra: "it's true"

Me: "kiss me Kendra"

Kendra: "no"

Me: "am I ugly"

Kendra: "you very beautiful"

Me: "whatever help me stand up" she did I took off my shoes stumbling a little Kendra was standing close to me "are you still slaughtering the lamb" she laughed lifting me up she put me down on the counter

Kendra: "it's coming right up but no more vodka for you Dr Khumalo"

Me: "is it weird that I know how much you get paid I even know how much my husband gets paid"

Kendra: "I wish you didn't know that" she dished up the meat we went to the tv room she opened tv turning into a music channel

Me: "life is hard Kendra men are bad out here"

Kendra: "that's why I'm all about the pussy" I giggled

Me: "I don't wana be hallow Kendra I don't want to wake up one day with gray hair and wrinkles realize that I've waisted my life loving someone who wasn't making me happy" she held the back of my neck and kissed me hard I kissed her back just as hard she kept moving back until she was laying on the couch and I was on top of her I started unbuttoning her shirt she pulled off my crop top I moved up looked at her smiling

Me: "you have the most amazing boobs ever"

Kendra: "for someone who is not a lesbian you sure find me attractive"

Me: "shut up" i unhooked her bra "there are my babies" I cupped her breasts she let out a soft moan I leaned down and kissed her my skirt was sitting on my stomach she tucked her hands under my panty grabbing my ass I moaned in her mouth I felt nauseous I pulled back

Kendra: "are you okay"

Me: "I feel like throwing up" saliva filled my mouth

Kendra: "shit come on" I got off her she held my hand we ran to the bathroom made it there just in time to throw up in the toilet she brushed my hair until I was done, I rinsed my mouth I sat on the floor I was feeling hot and dizzy then it was lights out.

.

I woke up in bed next to Kendra who was up watching the news

Kendra: "morning beautiful"

Me: "do I look as awful as I feel" she kissed my head

Kendra: "no you don't"

Me: "I need to go home"

Kendra: "you won't stay for breakfast"

Me: "I can't Nzuzo must be going out of his mind with worry"

Kendra: "you don't owe him anything"

Me: "Kendra I was drunk yesterday I love my husband"

Kendra: "drunk man tell no tales. Go on freshen up I'll get you something for the hangover your clothes are over there" she got off the bed walked out I was only in my panties I went to the bathroom washed my face I rinsed my mouth, fixed my weave tied it in a bun I got dressed went downstairs calling for Kendra I found her in the kitchen she gave me a plate with the meat I ate it and it was chilly I drank the cold orange juice when I was done she gave me pills I took them

Me: "thank you"

Kendra: "we will talk later" she held my chin and kissed me softly

Me: "bye" I drove out got home I went in I was welcomed by a wailing baby and it was not pancake I found Nzuzo trying to hush him in the kitchen I took him

Me: "where is his bottle" he took it from the fridge "warm it a little" he did then gave it to me I gave him the bottle he sucked for dear life

Nzuzo: "where were you I've been sick with worry"

Me: "what's his name"

Nzuzo: "Ethan Sphelele"

Me: "Khumalo" he cleared his throat "his beautiful" he really was, he was light skinned with big eyes, short thick curly black hair, chubby cheeks

Nzuzo: "thank you" I sat on the high chair

Me: "where is he's mom"

Nzuzo: "back in Cuba she couldn't take care of him so she gave up her parental rights"

Me: "if I'm going to raise him you need to get a lawyer I want it in writing that I'm his mother"

Nzuzo: "just like I want it in writing that I'm pancake's dad" I nodded "I'll get a lawyer tomorrow, where were you Lani"

Me: "I was out I needed to breath"

Nzuzo: "and you had to not sleep at home for that"

Me: "give me a break Nzuzo I am not in the mood, here take Sphe I need to bath so I can feed his too light" he took him I went upstairs he was following me

Nzuzo: "suyadliwa Yamkelan? Who is fucking you?"

Me: "certainly not you"

Nzuzo: "don't you fucking piss me off Lani yafeba wena manje Lani"

Me: "I don't owe you any explanation" i got in the shower I was still enjoying the water when the door was opened roughly

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani where the fuck were you"

Me: "can't I have peace Nzuzo I just want to bath so I can take care of your child the very child you had with whoever you were fucking for 3 fucking years while you had a family on the other side of the world so excuse me if I wanted to breath a little before having to take care of the child that right now I'm only seeing as a result of the hurt you causing so please move from my face"

Nzuzo: "I thought you were okay with Sphe"

Me: "are shiting me Nzuzo?! You came here with your parents telling me you have a child that you got because of your cheating ways and you want me to raise that child. So tell me what was I supposed to do Nzuzo? Nxayi mani leave me alone" I closed the door finished up quickly got out lotioned got dressed in shorts and a tank top I took Sphe went downstairs there was no food besides those bottled purity I just got irritated I went give Cleo the child after feeding him then drove to pick n pay I bought him food then went back to the house I called the agency Cleo couldn't take care of 3 kids by herself I went to my room threw myself on the bed I felt like my hair was falling off "mommy" I turned it was Avery carrying pancake

Me: "get in and close the door" I sat up he give me pancake

Pancake: "mommy" she touched my face

Me: "yes angel"

Pancake: "miss you" I smiled pushed her hair back pancake had grown into such a beautiful little angel

Avery: "dad came back with a child"

Me: "yes your brother"

Avery: "he cheated on you mom"

Pancake: "what's cheated"

Me: "it's nothing pancake and wena Avery stop talking about things you don't know"

Avery: "I'm not a child mom I see things I hear things your room is not sound proofed mom and he is sleeping in another room ever since he came back you can't keep things from me"

Me: "Avery please do not get involved in whatever is going on between your father and I"

Avery: "I hate him mom"

Me: "Avery Khumalo I don't ever want to hear you say that again now go to your room"

Avery: "whatever" he walked out

Pancake: "mommy what's wrong" she wiped my tears "you want cocos" I smiled

Me: "yes mommy wants cocos" she giggled

Pancake: "I also want cocos"

Me: "let's go make them"

Pancake: "yeah" she screamed clapping her hands her hair falling to her face

Me: "let's tie your hair first" I did we went downstairs I made us coco pops Cleo got in the kitchen with Sphe I took him started feeding him as well

.

Days went by things between Nzuzo and I were just bad we hardly spoke unless it was about the kids if I wasn't at work I was with the kids or Kendra Sphe was fitting in just perfectly in the house I was just worried about Avery he was always in his room hardly ate with the family. Nzuzo was back at work I was having lunch in my office with Kendra

Kendra: "Khumalo" she smiled Nzuzo just looked at her with fire burning in his eyes

Me: "Nzuzo do you need something"

Nzuzo: "thought we could have lunch together"

Kendra: "I was just leaving"

Nzuzo: "are you fucking my wife Harper"

Me: "Nzuzo!"

Kendra: "okay that's my cue" she stood up Nzuzo stood in front of her

Me: "Nzuzo come on"

Nzuzo: "are you or are you not sleeping with my wife Harper"

Kendra: "am not"

Nzuzo: "you better stay the fuck away from her if you know what good for you"

Kendra: "whatever Khumalo" she walked away

Me: "seriously Nzuzo!! What the hell is wrong with you"

Nzuzo: "wana have lunch"

Me: "no I want a divorce"

Nzuzo: "don't joke like that"

Me: "I'm serious I can't do this anymore I don't want to do this anymore Nzuzo it exhausting we both deserve better than what we getting from this marriage"

Nzuzo: "don't talk crazy"

Me: "I'm not talking crazy"

Nzuzo: "is this because of Sphe"

Me: "I'm falling in love with Sphe ofcos not"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry Lani please you have to forgive me"

Me: "No I want to be happy I am not leaving you because you cheated I am leaving you because I want to be happy I want to be me. Ever since you saved me from the life I was living ever since you introduced to me to a different side of life I have been in love with you. I dedicated myself to you I loved you even though I was in a relationship with someone else i still loved you I still wanted you. Even now I love you I'm in love with you but I want to be happy and you dontymake me happy anymore I need to find someone or something that will make me happy and unfortunately you are not that anymore. Nzuzo you the father of my children I love you which means I automatically love your children because they are a part of you so I am not leaving you because you have a child with someone else I am leaving you for my own sanity for my happiness. I am not being ungrateful for all that you've done for me and for loving me I appreciate it all I love you Nzuzo and I will always love you but I am done we are done I will not stay with someone who brings misery as much as he brings joy into my life I'm sorry. I love you baba ka Phiwokuhle you know I love from the bottom of my heart I came alive when you came into my life you gave me beautiful boys I appreciate all of that but I can't anymore and I'm asking you as someone who has daughters who want to see his daughters happy I'm asking as someone else's daughter to let me go let me go find happiness"

PART 49

He looked at me long and hard not saying anything I sat down

Nzuzo: "you don't love me anymore"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "that's the first time you've said that in over 3 years I'll see you at home" he walked to me and kissed my cheek

Me: "and whose fault is that"

Nzuzo: "mine and I'm terribly sorry thembalam we going to be okay I promise you"

Me: "I want a divorce"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "Nzuzo did you hear what I said"

Nzuzo: "I heard that you not happy" he walked out leaving me a little confused.

When I got home I was welcomed by loud noises Liam came flying in the foyer followed by pancake and Sphe was right behind them in his walker

Liam: "mommy is home"

Me: "we don't run in the house Liam"

Pancake: "mommy take me" I put my bags on the table took pancake and Sphe

Liam: "what about me mommy"

Nzuzo: "I got you" he was getting in the door he took Liam

Pancake: "take me daddy" she lifted her arms up he took her and Liam

Nzuzo: "hey baby" he gave me a soft peck

Me: "hey" we walked in

Nzuzo: "how was work love"

Me: "it was work, what are you playing at Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'm taking you out for dinner" I gave Sphe to Gugu the new nanny I went back for my bags went up to my room I left them in the closet took off my shoes I went to check on Avery

Me: "hey bae"

Avery: "hey"

Me: "you good? How was school?"

Avery: "I'm good and the exams are kicking my butt"

Me: "want me to help you study"

Avery: "nah I'm good"

Me: "okay" I kissed his head and walked out went to Nosi's room

Me: "hey baby"

Nosi: "hi sisi"

Me: "you good" she nodded I sat next to her "what's wrong" she looked at me up with her eyes covered in tears "hey what happened" I pulled her to me she sat on my lap with her arms around my neck she cried I held her brushing her back and hair until she was done crying "okay now talk to your sister"

Nosi: "where's my father sisi"

Me: "Nosi baby where is this coming from" she looked up at me I wiped her face her nose was pink

Nosi: "we were doing my family in class I talked about you and bhuti then the teacher asked where are my parents I didn't want the kids to laugh at me so I said mom is dead then she asked about my father I went blank sisi everyone laughed at me sisi. Where is he sisi doesn't he love me"

Me: "you know that everyone in this house loves you right"

Nosi: "yes"

Me: "you don't need anybody else we love you I love you and bhuti can be your father he loves you just like your father should love you"

Nosi: "I love you sisi" we hugged

Me: "I love you too now take a nap okay you going to wake up feeling better"

Nosi: "okay" I put her under the cover kissed her head got out I went to my room so I could bath I found Nzuzo there with a towel around his waist he still had water drops on his chest I haven't had sex in over 4 years and Nzuzo liked being half naked

Nzuzo: "you know I'm yours right you don't have to stare at me like I'm the last drop of water in a desert"

Me: "you not mine Nzuzo you everyone else's but mine and what are you doing in my room" we were using different bedrooms

Nzuzo: "I thought if we going to work on us I thought I should come back to our room you know first step towards making you happy again"

Me: "you not staying in my room Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "it's our room thembalam"

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "love"

Me: "put on some clothes" he laughed

Nzuzo: "our reservation is for 20:00"

Me: "I'm not going out with you" he walked closer to me I backed up I honestly didn't trust myself and I really really missed him

Nzuzo: "why you running" he grabbed my waist my body slammed against his

Me: "Nzuzo" I whispered

Nzuzo: "yeah?"

Me: "your towel fell"

Nzuzo: "oh I know"

Me: "and your erection is pressing against my thigh"

Nzuzo: "I know"

Me: "I'm uncomfortable"

Nzuzo: "go to dinner with me please" he was looking down at me "I'm begging you maka Phiwokuhle"

Me: "okay just dinner but you not moving back in here"

Nzuzo: "one step at a time" he kissed my neck I shivered

Me: "stop now" he moved back a little "I need to cook" he moved I went to the kitchen started on dinner he came in took a beer and sat on the counter

Nzuzo: "you a great cook"

Me: "I know"

Nzuzo: "and an amazing wife"

Me: "to an unappreciative man"

Nzuzo: "ouch!"

Me: "aha"

Nzuzo: "will you ever forgive Lani for cheating on you"

Me: "I would forgive you if you give me a divorce"

Nzuzo: "that's not going to happen lover we are married and we have children we going to work on us and I'll make you happy again"

Me: "why don't you move out Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "excuse me" I turned to look at him

Me: "yes move out"

Nzuzo: "for what good reason"

Me: "so I can work on me"

Nzuzo; "what's wrong with you"

Me: "I ... Uhm ... Whatever! Just move out" he smiled

Nzuzo: "the stew is burning" I turned to the pot it wasn't even burning

Me: "that's not funny" he laughed "shut up" I hated his laugh at that moment because it made me want to laugh "stop laughing" he laughed harder I turned around giggling I heard him getting closer to me he wrapped his arms around my waist

Nzuzo: "why you laughing because you said it's not funny"

Me: "you stupid"

Nzuzo: "you love me" someone cleared their throat we turned around it was Avery

Avery: "just need something to munch on"

Nzuzo: "he won't forgive me" he whispered

Avery; "mom who took my gummy worms"

Me: "are they not in there"

Avery: "no and I need does for studying"

Nzuzo: "let's go buy them"

Avery: "no it's fine"

Me: "go with your father Avery"

Avery: "okay"

Nzuzo: "I love you" he kissed my cheek they left I continued with cooking when I was done I went to bath when I got out Nzuzo was sitting on the bed watching soccer

Me: "you back and you in my room on my bed why"

Nzuzo: "what are you wearing I wana match" I giggled

Me: "that's so high school"

Nzuzo: "we used to match before"

Me: "we were young" he jumped off the bed

Nzuzo: "we not old" he held my towel so did I "I'm not going to drop it"

Me: "don't touch it"

Nzuzo: "what are you wearing"

Me: "just a black long jumpsuit and maroon heels"

Nzuzo: "the weather is changing"

Me: "I'll put the maroon coat"

Nzuzo: "let's get dressed"

Me: "you not seeing me naked"

Nzuzo: "I've seen you give birth I know your body more than you know it"

Me: "no Nzuzo respect my space go get dressed in the room you using"

Nzuzo: "okay" he kissed my forehead

Me: "you better stop kissing me"

Nzuzo: "now you acting crazy" he walked I went in the closet I lotioned put on the jumpsuit I took it off got dressed in black ripped ankle grazer a black crop top, put on maroon ankle boots he got in when I was brushing my weave wearing maroon ripped skinny jeans with a maroon t-shirt and black yeezy sneakers with a black coat

Me: "you look good"

Nzuzo: "and you thembalam you look gorgeous"

Me: "do I" I put on my maroon coat he helped me

Nzuzo: "yes you do" I took my bag

Me: "we match so are you happy now"

Nzuzo: "I'm all about making you happy" he held my hand kissed the back of it "let's go Mrs Khumalo"

Me: "okay" we left. We had an amazing dinner he was funny and sweet throughout the whole time after dinner we took a walk then went home I stood by the door of my room laughing he was reminding me of the time we went shopping in jhb for the wedding

Nzuzo: "are you sure you don't want me to come in"

Me: "wana get coffee or something" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "more like something but coffee is fine"

Me: "I'll change meet you downstairs for coffee"

Nzuzo: "stop joking Lani. Can I please sleep in our bed I've missed you"

Me: "I'm still angry at you Nzuzo you still make me sick the thought of having you next to me like that doesn't sit well with me"

Nzuzo: "I'm clean Lani I can show you the results baby but I don't want sex ... Well I want it I've missed you but I just want to hold you" I looked at him I was seriously torn apart I missed him so badly I was madly in love with him

Me: "Nzuzo" he gave me his hand

Nzuzo: "hold my hand through it all" I sighed

Me: "get in" I took his hand we went in I went in the closet undressed and put on his t-shirt when I got out he was getting under the comforter in just his boyleg

Me: "when are you adding Sphe's name on your tattoo"

Nzuzo: "soon I also need to add pancake" he pulled me close I just disappeared into his body

Me: "you can't put pancake there you must write her name"

Nzuzo: "ofcos I'll write Langelihle"

Me: "you and Avery got a chance to talk how did it go"

Nzuzo: "he hates me Lani I don't know how to fix it"

Me: "give him time"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" he turned me we faced each other he kissed the tip of my nose "you want to kiss me don't you" he laughed

Nzuzo: "I do"

Me: "do it" he didn't even wait for a second he smashed his lips on mine we kissed it felt like fireworks were exploding all over I got closer to him even water would have not went through between our bodies he got on top of me I opened my legs just the feel of Mntungwa pressing on my vjaja sent shockwaves through my body

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'll stop I'm sorry" I screamed don't stop on the inside

Me: "we have work in a few hours" he got off me I gave him my back he wrapped his arms around his erection was pressing against my back I might have been angry and disappointed at him but my vjaja wanted Mntungwa in her so bad I went to sleep with a river between my legs and my clit complaining

PART 50

I woke up first I was sleeping on top of him I looked at him he looked so gorgeous with his thick eyebrows his lips slightly parted

Will I ever be able to leave this man? I asked myself the answer was no, I was too in love with him madly in love with him I couldn't even see straight. Yeah sure he messed big time and it will probably take forever for me to forgive him but eventually I will forgive him because I love him with all his flaws. The previous night just reminded me a little bit of the Nzuzo that I was friends with before we got in a relationship.

Nzuzo: "good morning" he kept his eyes closed and pulled me up making my vjaja contact his morning erection as he kissed my neck

Me: "morning"

Nzuzo: "thank you for last night it was amazing" he cupped my face we kissed slowly and passionately I started grinding down on him I was in serious need of some sexual healing my alarm rang I pulled back

Me: "it's morning" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "I can tell, how about you skip work and we stay in"

Me: "funa ukungenzan Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I wana love you pretty young thing" he sang

Me: "I'm not ready for that"

Nzuzo: "then we will spend it cuddling and watching tv"

Me: "Nzuzo no" I said trying to get off him but he held on my butt

Nzuzo: "I won't mess up what we have by cheating again"

Me: "action speaks louder than words"

Nzuzo: "okay thembalam you will see" he kissed me again this time he rolled us over getting between my legs "you so fucking sexy" he said kissing and biting my neck I put my hand inside his boyleg gave Mntungwa a squeeze "shit Lani" I pushed down his boyleg with my feet as he took off my t-shirt he put his finger in me I let out a moan

Me: "baaaby" he put the 2nd one "shucks..." He continued fingering me while he sucked and bit my nipples he didn't stop moving his fingers in and out and in circles as he kissed my body going when he pressed his tongue on my clit I grabbed his ears he chuckled and looked at me "khotha Nzuzo!!!!"

Nzuzo: "yes ma'am" he sucked my clit flicking his tongue on it my toes curled

Me: "oh God don't stop Sweet marry Jesus" I came he licked up from the bottom to the top

Nzuzo: "hi" he said coming to my face he kissed my neck rubbing his cock on my clit

Me: "put it in Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "did you sleep with anyone while I was away" I got a little confused and irritated

Me: "ofcos not" he pushed in I screamed it was so fucking painful

Nzuzo: "did you do anything you were not supposed to have been doing" he wasn't moving

Me: "Nzuzo please" I tried moving but he had his body pressed on me

Nzuzo: "you better be honest with me Lani" I was in tears I was so horny my body was shaking

Me: "nothing happened with anyone Nzuzo please" he held my ankles opening my legs wider he went all in pushing so deep I felt like it going to come out of my mouth "fuck Nzuzooo!!!!"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" he started moving hitting every corner

it his anyway his allowed to, it not like his a boyfriend that's busy eating something that doesn't belong to him having stolen goods it his in every way.

He had let go of ankles they were now locked together on his ass he was moving in a slow pace and I was meeting him with every thrust he stopped moving he pushed my weave back

Nzuzo: "you my life Lani my heart and a person can't live without his heart" I held his face we kissed and started moving again I could it approaching

Me: "baby I need you to move faster" he gripped my hips I held onto him tightly as he moved faster pounding me harder I was moaning and screaming confessing my undying love I shivered biting his shoulder as I came endlessly my orgasim wouldn't stop coming he was groaning on top of me his body jerked and he collapsed next to me he lifted me up putting me on top of him I kissed his tattoo he held my chin and wiped my tears

Nzuzo: "I love you thembalam"

Me: "I love you too sthandwa sam" we kissed

Nzuzo: "am I that good that I had you in tears" I punched him playfully as we laughed "thank you for being faithful"

Me: "I love you so it was easy"

Nzuzo: "that makes me feel so bad"

Me: "serves you right" he chuckled

Nzuzo: "after what I just did for you baby you still shaking from those orgasim and you gonna do me like that" I giggled nodding "so heartless my love"

Me: "let me go check on Avery and Nosi"

Nzuzo: "they old enough and the maids are there to help them, you my love are not getting out of this bed" I kissed his chest trailing my fingers on his tattoos they were really beautiful he cupped my face "my lips are here" we kissed I could feel Mntungwa getting up again I kissed his neck leaving bite marks I went down biting and blowing on his skin I felt his cock growing bigger and harder stretching my mouth to a point of pain he sat up trying to pull me up I shook my head popped out his cock

Me: "stop"

Nzuzo: "baby I'll explode in your mouth if you keep going like that"

Me: "get my mouth pregnant then" we laughed but his laughter turned into a groan when I popped him back in gagging myself he shot his load deep in my mouth I sucked him dry then went up to his face with a smile on my face

Nzuzo: "fuck you" I bursted out in laughter

Me: "oooh oooh is that a thanks I get Mntungwa"

Nzuzo: "I fucking love you" he was still kinda hard I stroked him as we kissed in a hot and rushed way we were humping each other when he was hard enough I turned around he held my waist slamming me down on his cock I cried out loudly "are you okay baby"

Me: "it's a little too deep I just need to adjust a little" he sat up and held my breasts

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" he kissed my neck I started moving he laid back I rode him crazily going up and down and in circles twerking on him he I went faster my muscles clenched he held my waist moving me up and down in a fast pace I came with a loud cry I collapsed on my front he spread my legs got in from behind he went fast and hard tearing me up after coming he laid on top of me breathing heavily

Nzuzo: "sex with you has always been the best"

Me: "I don't know how I feel about that"

Nzuzo: "baby please don't bring the past into this" I huffed

Me: "I'm hungry"

Nzuzo: "I'll go make you breakfast" he got off me I winced in pain "I'm sorry"

Me: "it's good pain" he brushed my weave he was looking at me in that tender and adoration way

Nzuzo: "I'm the luckiest man in this world I married the most amazing woman who made my house a home who is mothering my children. After all these years you still knock me over my feet your beauty still takes my breath away you just perfect too perfect Yamkelani"

Me: "I'm not perfect" he kissed the tip of my nose

Nzuzo: "to me you are" he was brushing my cheek with the back of his fingers "you a heavenly sent angel"

Me: "I love you" we kissed slowly he pulled back and gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "I love you so much more and I'm taking you out we going to have breakfast then have a day filled with fun"

Me: "okay" he got off the bed and carried me to the shower

Nzuzo: "I'm gonna scrub your dirty back"

Me: "it's not dirty"

Nzuzo: "have you seen it"

Me: "yes" he turned me around started washing my back

Nzuzo: "you saying that because you can't see it baby unensila"

Me: "don't play like that"

Nzuzo: "I need a stone to wash this off shit baby not being intimate has turned you into a dirty person"

Me: "voestek Nzuzo" he laughed

Nzuzo: "you can't swear at your husband Yamkelani you know better! I'll tell mam'ncane" he couldn't laughing

Me: "you such a baby Nzuzo I can't believe you brought your parents to tell me about Sphe" he stopped laughing and looked at me he was washing my front now

Nzuzo: "you scare me Yammy as much as you soft spoken and you kind you also a human being you have a breaking point I was scared"

Me: "mmh" he put me under the shower head water rinsing of the foam we kissed.

We lotioned I got dressed in black jeggings a black vests and a black biker with brown timberlands he wore black skinny jeans a black t-shirt and a black biker with brown timberlands we went downstairs found the kids watching cartoons with masisi them carrying Sphe

Me: "shouldn't you be on campus"

Masisi: "I don't feel well I woke up feeling nauseous" I raised my eyebrow

Me: "should I be worried"

Masisi: "I am not pregnant"

Me: "better not be. Why are you up"

Masisi: "you and Nzuzo were too loud!!" I heard Nzuzo laughing in the kitchen

Me: "shut up"

Liam: "mommy was crying I heard her too" he was facing the tv

Me: "I was not"

Masisi: "he wanted to call the police"

Liam: "daddy was hurting you but you didn't want him to stop"

Me: "I..... Nzuzo!" He came in laughing

Nzuzo: "let's go baby, bye kids" he pulled my arm we got out

Me: "Liam says you were hurting me" he drove out

Nzuzo: "was I hurting you or pleasuring you"

Me: "next time we playing the tv on maxi"

Nzuzo: "you loud babe"

Me: "hha!! Says you"

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "whateverz" he pulled my cheek I hit his hand

Nzuzo: "don't be mad my little apple munch" I laughed covering my face with my hands

Me: "that's 2 rand ice block Nzuzo out of all things"

Nzuzo: "okay my snow ball or duff cake"

Me: "you not making it better"

Nzuzo: "you used to love those things you wouldn't stop thanking me when I bought them for you when you were in primary"

Me: "I was a kid!"

Nzuzo; "you love them" I giggled

Me: "yes I did" he looked at me and gave my lap a squeeze

Nzuzo: "my duff cake and apple munch" I smiled shaking my head. When we got to gateway we started at wimpy we had breakfast then we went to watch a movie after the movie we did some shopping I tore his credit card apart it all started out because of a sleeveless shirt coat I saw at zara once I was in he couldn't stop me after zara we went to topshop I personally think they have the best jeans followed by factori after the shopping he carried the paper bags we went to leave the things in the car then had late lunch at circus circus when I ordered a glass of wine Nzuzo went pale I kept my eyes on him daring him to say something wisely he didn't he just ordered his beer when the waiter left he held my hand

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "you love me"

Nzuzo: "I don't like this habit you've picked up"

Me: "aha"

Nzuzo: "please stop"

Me: "I actually enjoy this habit I've picked up" he let go of my hands and ran his hands over his head

Nzuzo: "is this your way of acting out" our drinks came I took a sip of my duet

Me: "it quiet tasteful if you ignore the bitterness"

Nzuzo: "Lani you can't drink"

Me: "I can't?"

Nzuzo: "you shouldn't"

Me: "you drink why shouldn't i"

Nzuzo: "I'm your husband you my wife notice the difference"

Me: "it's not like I'm a alcoholic"

Nzuzo: "you shouldn't be drinking period"

Me: "you trying to ruin our day" he huffed he looked really troubled he was getting pissed off but he also knew better than to lash out while he was still on thin ice

Nzuzo: "how long will this go on"

Me: "I don't see it stopping"

Nzuzo: "can I put some rules on it"

Me: "let me hear them"

Nzuzo: "you only drink when you with me and it will not be an everyday thing"

Me: "was thinking of buying a bottle keeping it at home"

Nzuzo: "no" I just smiled because I was joking anyway

Me: "okay" he shook his head

Nzuzo: "I don't like this" our food came

Me: "isn't life a bitch baby"

Nzuzo: "don't swear Lani"

Me: "sorry" we finished eating went to the play games then we left going home

.

In the morning I was woken up by soft kisses all over my face I held his head smiling

Nzuzo: "morning thembalam"

Me: "morning lover, has the alarm rang"

Nzuzo: "I switched it off" we kissed

Me: "we have work come on get off" he got off we went to bath got out got dressed went downstairs found Avery and Nosi having breakfast

Me: "hey babies"

Avery: "mom"

Nosi: "morning sisi"

Nzuzo: "you guys are good"

Them: "yep" we also started eating after breakfast we left using Nzuzo's car usually I drop them off then Gugu picks them up with my other car and if I'm not going to work she takes them there and picks them up.

We got at the hospital he walked me to my office

Nzuzo: "you love me" I smiled and wrapped my arms around his neck standing on my toes Nzuzo was tall even in heels I was shorter

Me: "you love me" we kissed long and slowly he grabbed my butt lifting me up I wrapped my legs around his waist he deepened the kiss after awhile I pulled back pressed my forehead on his

Nzuzo: "am I getting you back"

Me: "slowly"

Nzuzo: "I'll make you happy again" I gave him a soft peck

Me: "put me down and go save people" he did

Nzuzo: "lunch?"

Me: "yes" he kissed my cheek and left

I got on with my work like I had the easiest job ever. I was just doing some online shopping for Nzuzo and I, I needed some heels Kendra knocked and got in

Kendra: "hey beautiful"

Me: "hey" she sat on the couch

Kendra: "you glowing"

Me: "is that so" I went to sit next to her

Kendra: "I came to check on you Nzuzo was angry the day before yesterday and yesterday you didn't come to work and you were not answering your phone"

Me: "I'm good"

Kendra: "I thought maybe he went all hulk on you"

Me: "Nzuzo wouldn't hit me"

Kendra: "he hit this girl he was having a fling with here at the hospital one time it was really bad" I pretended to be fazed by what she was saying

Me: "he wouldn't hit me I know him with me I don't care about him with other girls it has nothing to do with the Nzuzo I know and married" she just shook her in a disapproving way

Kendra: "he got to you didn't he"

Me: "I don't know what you on about"

Kendra: "his got you under his spell again God Lani you so naive" she stood up

Me: "his my husband Kendra not my boyfriend he made one stupid mistake"

Kendra: "you being so stupid do you know that"

Me: "that's your opinion"

Kendra: "when it comes crumbling down don't get mad when I say I told you so" I shrugged my shoulders "I can't believe you Lani"

Me: "it is what it is" she looked at me then shook her head before walking out I rolled my eyes she was being a little too dramatic for my liking at that moment

.

On Friday we took the kids to Dumisa for the weekend so we gave Gugu and Cleo the weekend off Masisi decided to go spend her weekend with Lizwi she had been acting weird always asleep she was even picking up weight which was kinda bothering me because she was writing her June exams for her masters.

On Saturday Nzuzo and I were just chilling I was wearing cotton shorts and a bra top he was just in short it was hot day we were watching a movie in the theater room i was having wine he was drinking his Hennessy. The intercom rang the intercom was connected to every room in the house

Me: "you expecting someone" he kissed my neck

Nzuzo: "no ignore it if it anyone we know they will call"

Me: "okay" it rang again I laughed and took his hand out of my shorts I tried standing up he pulled me back to sit between his legs

Nzuzo: "don't go"

Me: "ayi Nzuzo!" I hit his arm and stood up I went to the kitchen I walked over to the intercom I looked at the screen before opening the gate I couldn't believe what I was seeing I felt like urinating myself I rubbed my eyes and looked again there he was in the car looking directly at the camera as if he could feel that I was looking at him he waved with a smile and rang again I ran to the theater room

Me: "come!!"

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "come I don't know if I should open or not" he stood up we walked over to the screen

Nzuzo: "what the fuck!!!"

PART 51

We stared at the person in disbelief I pressed on the intercom

Me: "hello"

Guy: "uhm hello I'm looking for Nzuzo Khumalo I was told this is his home" I looked at Nzuzo he opened the gate

Nzuzo: "what the hell is going on Lani"

Me: "be calm baby" I cupped his face brushing his lip with my thumb

Nzuzo: "I can't deal with more drama baby I really can't" I kissed him slowly he moaned and held me closely he was shaking the door bell rang I tried pulling back but he held onto me after the second ring I pushed him off

Nzuzo: "don't open I'm not ready for what's outside that door"

Me: "baby his your brother now come" I took his hands

Nzuzo: "I'll wait here go open" I nodded and went to the door I opened it was even worse

Me: "hi" he just stared at me his eyes going all over my body I cleared my throat uncomfortably

Guy: "uhm hi sorry" I smiled "I'm Reign Crawford"

Me: "Yamkelani Khumalo"

Reign: "sister?"

Me: "wife" he smiled nodding even the smile was the same

Reign was Nzuzo's photocopy even with his long bongo dreads and the eyebrow piercing and the visible tattoo on the neck he was still Nzuzo's photocopy he was just smaller in terms of body weight Nzuzo was buff

Me: "come in" he got in I led the way I couldn't find Nzuzo in the kitchen "baby!!" Nothing I led the way to the lounge "please sit can I get you something to drink"

Reign: "beer is fine" I nodded I went to the kitchen got him a beer and a glass with a bowl of pretzels that's how Nzuzo enjoyed his beer I took it to him "just like how I like it thank you"

Me: "I'll go call him for you" I went to the theater room he wasn't there so I ran up to our room found him in bed I got under the cover held him from behind he held my hands

Nzuzo: "I don't want to meet him baby"

Me: "baby come on"

Nzuzo: "send him away"

Me: "I can't Sthandwa sam come downstairs with me" he turned to look at me he was crying my heart just broke I held him tightly kissing him he let out a sob in my mouth i deepened the kiss he pulled down my shorts I tried stopping him but he shook his head I undid his shorts as he popped out breasts and squeezed them hard I let out a moan he got on top of me after pushing down his shorts he slammed into me I grabbed the sheet arching my back we made love moving in a slow pace our lips never parting until we both came he pulled out and laid on my chest I brushed his head

Me: "come lets go meet your brother" he breathed out heavily

Nzuzo: "okay and thank you I needed that"

Me: "I'm your wife I carter to your needs and besides who doesn't want an orgasim" he chuckled and got off me we cleaned I changed my top putting on a tank top he wore a t-shirt and we went downstairs

Nzuzo: "hey"

Reign: "wow!" They chuckled he put down the picture frame of the kids he was looking at he walked towards us "Reign Crawford"

Nzuzo; "nzuzo Khumalo and this is my wife Yamkelani Khumalo"

Reign: "uhm I don't know what to say"

Me: "I'll go get a refill" I left them staring at each other I got two beers took it to them they were sitting down on separate couches I went to sit next to Nzuzo he kissed my head

Nzuzo: "thank you" I nodded

Reign: "as I was saying I'm from Sandton I live there with my parents well my adoptive parents that is"

Nzuzo: "okay" then there was silence they just stared at each other i pinched Nzuzo "ouch the hell baby! Why you pinching me"

Me: "no I didn't" Reign laughed God! He had the same laugh as Nzuzo and Avery

Reign: "you have beautiful children. Where are they"

Me: "with their grandparents" I nodded

Reign: "i was told our parents passed away"

Nzuzo: "my uncle" he nodded

Me: "are you hungry I could make something for you guys to eat"

Reign: "I'm fine"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "how did you find me"

Reign; "my girlfriend saw you on facebook so I went through your profile didn't find much besides where you work so I hired a private investigator. Did you know about me?"

Nzuzo: "no I didn't know I had a sibling let alone a twin brother" reign looked at the floor for a very long time then he looked up with his eyes filled with tears

Reign: "why was I put up for adoption and not you" Nzuzo and I got taken by the question

Nzuzo: "the people who could answer that are back at home eMzinto"

Reign: "don't get me wrong I love my parents they the sweetest people in the world but I have questions that I can't get out of my mind like I had no idea I have a brother"

Nzuzo: "maybe we should go see bab'ncane he will have answers because I don't have them I'm just as hurt and confused as you are" I brushed his back

Reign: "can we go today" Nzuzo looked at me I nodded even though we were supposed to go tomorrow to get the kids

Nzuzo: "please give us a chance to change"

Me: "make yourself at home your saw the kitchen when we got in the beers are in the fridge"

Reign: "thank you" we went upstairs

Me: "I think we should call mam'ncane first let them know we coming"

Nzuzo; "no" I nodded I got dressed in a olive green tank top dress and white all stars while Nzuzo changed into jeans and t-shirt I went to the bathroom to pee I washed my hands got out

Nzuzo: "here" he gave me a jacket we went downstairs "we can go" we left taking Nzuzo's fortune teller since we were going to come back with the kids the ride was just silent we were listening to music when we got in the gate I saw my children running around pancake fell

Nzuzo: "shit" he parked the car and got off fast running to her she wasn't even crying

Pancake: "daddy!!!!" She got up he was already lifting her up i walked to them

Nzuzo: "are you hurt pancake"

Pancake: "here" she showed him her hands they were just dirty he dusted them off

Nzuzo: "sorry my pancake" I left them outside went in

Aunt: "Yammy?"

Me: "hello mah" we hugged

Thandi: "Yammy is here?" She was coming through the passage

Aunt: "yes" she came to the lounge

Thandi: "hey you" we hugged the main door opened Nzuzo got in carrying pancake and Liam

Aunt: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "mah" Reign came in

Aunt: "mercy Khumalo!!!!" She covered her mouth with her hand

Thandi: "hayi Nzuzo what's happening" mam'ncane sat on the couch she was so shocked I went to the kitchen made her cold sugar water went back in the lounge they were all still in the position I left them in

Me: "drink this mah" she took it and gulped half of it

Aunt: "Nzuzo what is happening"

Nzuzo: "that's what I want to know"

Me: "sit" they sat down so did I pancake got on top of me she gave me a soft peck "Liam take your sister outside and where is Avery and the girls"

Liam: "shop. Come pancake" she went to him they went outside

Me: "where's my last born Thandi"

Thandi: "asleep" then there was silence

Me: "have you cooked?"

Thandi: "no not yet"

Me: "I'll go cook" I stood up but Nzuzo pulled me down

Nzuzo: "don't leave me"

Me: "I'll be in the kitchen" he let go of my hand I went to the kitchen I took out beef put it in the microwave to defrost I boiled the rice started chopping onion and peppers I made tea and sandwiches took it to the lounge they were still sitting in awkward silence I went back in the kitchen made some salads when the beef had defrosted I started cooking the curry made stir fry on the side eventually I was done the kids were in the house only they were speaking Sphe was up I took him from Nzuzo

Me: "baby say something" I whispered

Nzuzo: "mah when will baba be back"

Aunt: "should be in any minute from now" and speak of the devil he got in

Uncle: "awu I can smell the food from the gate I just knew makoti is here" I smiled

Me: "sawubona baba" he sat down and looked around the house his eyes landed on Reign he looked at Nzuzo then back at Reigh

Uncle: "Sbusiso take the kids in the room" Sbu was Sandile's son the oldest grandchild of the family

Sbu: "okay mkhulu. Come kids" they all stood up and disappeared into the passage

Uncle: "Nzuzo who is this copy"

Nzuzo: "ngu Reign Crawford baba like you can see his Jubalani and Thembeke's son" Sphe started crying I stood up went to Thandi's room I gave him his bottle when he was calm I went to the kitchen they were talking voices were rising Nzuzo and Reign were angry I made my son food started feeding him there in the kitchen Nzuzo stormed in

Nzuzo: "get the kids we leaving" bab'ncane got in as well

Uncle: "stop being hot headed Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "you forgot baba! You forgot that I have a brother out there"

Me: "Nzuzo don't speak like that to baba"

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani get my kids we are leaving"

Me: "I'm still feeding Sphe and the kids are hungry we will leave when they done eating now how about you go back there talk calmly with baba and mah show some respect"

Nzuzo: "ei Lani don't piss me off"

Me: "excuse me" he brushed his hair

Nzuzo: "sorry"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "can we leave now"

Me: "after dinner" he looked between his uncle and I then went back to the lounge

Uncle: "thank you makoti" I nodded he went out I finished feeding Sphe went out gave him to Nzuzo

Me: "Thandi help me dish up" she nodded and followed me we dished up and served everyone the food the kids ate in the room. We ate in silence after dinner I washed the dishes then we left the car was filled with the kids noises they were a noisy bunch especially the girls we finally got home

Me: "bath bed I'm coming to check in 30 minutes Avery bath with Liam and Nosi with pancake"

Thando: "can I bath with pancake mom"

Me: "you going to drown her"

Thando: "I won't"

Nosi: "will bath together the 3 of us lets go"

Nzuzo: "I'll come tuck you guys in" they ran up "where should I put him baby"

Me: "I'll take him he needs to bath and eat so he can sleep" I took sphe "uhm where are you staying Reign"

Reign: "I was going to go check in at southern sun" I looked at Nzuzo giving him the look

Nzuzo: "you can stay here"

Reign: "are you sure I mean I don't want to impose"

Me: "you family I'll fix a room for you"

Reign: "thank you" I went upstairs I gave Sphe bath gave him his bottle he sucked on it falling asleep I put him on our bed went to fix a room for reign I checked on the kids everyone was in bed besides pancake who was playing dolls I left her like that her dad was going to deal with her I went downstairs Nzuzo and Reign were having Hennessy still talking

Me: "the room is ready it the last door on the left"

Reign: "thank you"

Me: "I'm going to bed do you need anything"

Nzuzo: "we okay baby thank you I'll be up in a few minutes"

Me: "pancake is kinda waiting for you"

Reign: "why would you name your child pancake" I giggled

Nzuzo: "that's all she ate when she was pregnant so the name stuck"

Reign: "you have a beautiful family" I went upstairs I took a shower got in my pjs I put on a robe went to make Sphe a bottle on my way to the room Nzuzo lifted me up I squealed

Me: "baby" he walked in and put me on the couch

Nzuzo: "I love you so much"

Me: "I love you too" we kissed "so what did baba say" he sighed and sat down on the carpet between my legs I played with his short fade

Nzuzo: "he forgot about Reign baby I mean what the fuck"

Me: "what happened"

Nzuzo: "apparently during the time mom fell pregnant baba omdala's wife had also given birth to twins and one of the twins was killed because twins were known as something taboo something that will only bring bad luck to the family so it was customary that one is to be killed. Mom and dad hid that mom was pregnant with twins from the family so when she gave birth she gave up Reign for adoption because coming back from the hospital with the both of us would have meant one of us would be slaughtered and sacrificed"

Me: "wow"

Nzuzo: "dad only told his younger brother bab'ncane who forgot that Reign even existed"

Me: "how do you feel about the whole situation"

Nzuzo: "I'm angry baby I'm so angry at my parents at bab'ncane at the stupid belief my ancestors had"

Me: "well he found baby so you can work on building a relationship with him"

Nzuzo: "yeah let's go to bed"

Me: "you not going to shower" he smelled his armpits

Nzuzo: "I don't smell, do I?" He brought them to my nose I covered my nose with my hand laughing

Me: "I don't even want to smell it"

Nzuzo: "you could lick this baby I don't smell" I pushed him off

Me: "go bath" he laughed going to the bathroom I got in bed pulled Sphe close after awhile he got in behind me spooning me

Nzuzo: "goodnight my love"

Me: "goodnight baby"

.

The following day I woke up first I went to the bathroom washed my face and brushed my teeth then I went downstairs I plugged in the coffee maker then started making breakfast Reign was the next to wake up

Reign: "good morning love ka twin" I chuckle

Me: "hi Reign" he poured himself coffee

Reign: "you a typical house wife material"

Me: "I'll take that as a compliment"

Reign: "my brother is lucky you beautiful, smart, sexy and you take care of your family"

Me: "thank you I guess"

Reign: "you welcome" he sat on the high chair watching me

Me: "you saw the tv room right" he chuckled

Reign: "yes but you more entertaining Lani" I stopped moving for a second

Me: "okay then"

Reign: "you and Nzuzo don't get bored of each other you two work together and y'all married"

Me: "no we don't we love each other"

Reign: "aha"

Me: "yeah" the kids started coming in I set up the table sent Oluhle to go call her father we had breakfast. After breakfast I cleaned then gave Sphe a bath when he was asleep I took a bath then stayed in my room watching tv with pancake we went out for dinner then went to drop off the twins at Enhle's house when we got home masisi was back her jaw dropped when she saw Reign

Masisi: "aibo Nzuzo !!"

Nzuzo: "what"

Masisi: "and then"

Nzuzo: "oh this is my twin Reign" he waved it off

Me: "come let's go to my room" we went up

Masisi: "aibo and now the hot bad boy"

Me: "Reign..... Wait does this mean you find Nzuzo hot" she laughed

Masisi: "ofcos not Nzuzo is my father" I told her the whole story "get the fuck out of here!!"

Me: "I know"

Masisi: "good thing they didn't grow up together just imagine the chaos they would have caused Nzuzo was chaos enough"

Me: "can we not talk about Nzuzo's player days" she smiled

Masisi: "please don't kill me"

Me: "what did you do"

Masisi: "don't freak out"

Me: "talk"

Masisi: "I'm pregnant"

Me: "excuse me"

Masisi; "I'm pregnant"

Me: "I heard you the first time"

Masisi: "please don't be mad"

Me: "leave"

Masisi: "Lani?"

Me: "leave my room. Get out!!!"

Masisi: "I'm sorry Yammy but please I'm scared daddy will kill me"

Me: "you want me to drag you out? Just get the fuck out of my face" she stood up walked to the door

Masisi: "I'm sorry Lani" she walked out crying

Me: "fucking perfect now Marvin will kill us both"

PART 52

I still had my face buried on the pillow when the door opened I caught his scent before anything he laid on top of me he spread our arms entwining our hands

Me: "you do realize that you heavy right"

Nzuzo: "you don't complain when I'm sexing you" he started grinding on me

Me: "okahle Nzuzo get off me" I half shouted I was so annoyed

Nzuzo: "oookay" he got off me and laid next to me we stared at each other "what's wrong"

Me: "Masisi is pregnant"

Nzuzo: "flip that explains why she ran out crying"

Me: "you know dad and Justin are going to blame me for this I should have just let her stay in London with Justin"

Nzuzo: "baby it's not your fault you didn't send her to Lizwi and told her to spread her legs for him that's all on her not you"

Me: "she's just a baby"

Nzuzo: "she's 22"

Me: "exactly she's a baby"

Nzuzo: "you were 18 when you had Avery"

Me: "it was different time baby things were so different back then Masisi knows better"

Nzuzo: "little Lizwi is on the way now ain't none you can do about it"

Me: "Lizwi better fucking own up to this or he will have me to deal with that's my daughter" he laughed

Nzuzo: "mama bear is coming out" I nodded smiling "wana ride me"

Me: "you need to get a 2nd wife your sex drive it too much for me I can't deal" he got on top of me laughing

Nzuzo: "would you be able to handle sharing me baby" I sighed

Me: "no it would drive me insane" we kissed his hands going all over my body "aaah"

Nzuzo: "mmh" I pushed him off

Me: "baby I'm tired it been a long day I had to take care of the kids by myself I'm really not in the mood right now"

Nzuzo: "is this how it starts"

Me: "how what starts"

Nzuzo: "that whole no sex after marriage thing that Reign was talking about" I just got so irritated I shoved him off me "what?"

Me: "it's once this time only we always have sex we had sex 4 hours ago I'm just tired and what the fuck does Reign know about marriage nxa" I got off the bed he held my arm

Nzuzo: "baby"

Me: "ayi let go of me Nzuzo" I yanked my arm went to take a shower got out he wasn't in the room i lotioned my body toned my face put on his t-shirt I went to bed he must fucking make sure the kids are in bed I fell asleep as soon as my head hit the pillow

.

In the morning I woke up in Nzuzo's arms his face was on my neck he wrecked of alcohol I got out of his arm he stirred a little then slept on his stomach started snoring I shook him

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "wake up its morning"

Nzuzo: "not going to work"

Me: "you have a surgery scheduled for 09:00 wake up" he groaned

Nzuzo: "fuck" he stood up we went to shower he ran out while we were busy in the shower to throw up in the toilet I finished up got out he was still sitting next to the toilet he looked awful

Me: "are you sick"

Nzuzo: "I overdid last night"

Me: "what you mean"

Nzuzo: "Reign wanted to see yandin so we went there things got a little too hectic"

Me: "you went to Mlazi without telling me"

Nzuzo: "you were sleeping"

Me: "so what you couldn't wake me up Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "do I have to report to you now"

Me: "no you don't" I walked out went to the closet lotioned got dressed in navy wide leg 3 quarter pants a tucked in white shirt and white platform heels I tied my weave in a messy bun took my bags got out Nzuzo had went back to bed

Me: "so you won't go to work"

Nzuzo: "please talk to Steven for me"

Me: "but Nzuzo you've had this surgery on your book for weeks"

Nzuzo: "so I'm supposed to go operate on someone's brain while feeling like shit"

Me: "no"

Nzuzo; "then please" I walked out went to check on Masisi she was done with exams I knocked and went in

Me: "Masisi" I shook her lightly she opened her eyes that were blood red and swollen

Masisi: "Yammy" she sat up I sat on her bed "I'm sorry"

Me: "I'm also sorry we will talk when I come back from work I love you"

Masisi: "I love you" I kissed her cheek

Me: "sleep baby" she nodded went back to sleep I walked out went downstairs Nosi and Avery were having breakfast I sat down joining them Reign got in kitchen wearing just boxers briefs his upper body was covered in tattoos i could see him from the dinning room he poured himself a cup of coffee then went up

Me: "okay eat babies we getting late"

Avery: "I'm full"

Nosi: "me too"

Me: "let's go" we stood up and left

Avery: "I'm writing my last paper on Wednesday"

Me: "then Nosi will be the only one going to school"

Nosi: "that sucks"

Me: "we don't use that word" Avery chuckled looking back at her

Nosi: "sorry"

Avery: "was thinking I could go visit Justin after my last paper"

Me: "ask your father after school but it's cool with me"

Avery: "thank you" he kissed my head

Me: "stay in your seat Avery"

Avery: "just tryna show you some affection"

Me: "what you know about affection"

Avery: "Lauren always complaining about it"

Me: "who is Lauren"

Nosi: "his girlfriend"

Me: "what you know about girlfriend Nosi"

Nosi: "nothing" we laughed

Me: "you got a girlfriend Avery"

Avery: "yeah she goes to durban girls"

Me: "why didn't you tell me"

Avery: "because you were going to blow it out of proportion" I smiled

Me: "my bae is growing"

Avery: "mom!"

Me: "please tell me or your father once you think about having uhm You know" he laughed

Avery: "I don't"

Me: "yes you do"

Avery: "nope I do not"

Me: "I'm talking about S.E.X"

Nosi: "I know how to spell sisi" they laughed I huffed

Me: "shut up" they just laughed harder I dropped them off then drove to work Kendra was parking as I was parking she opened my door I got off

Kendra: "dr Khumalo"

Me: "Harper" I got my bags we walked in

Kendra: "you good"

Me: "yeah you"

Kendra: "me too" we got in the lift when we were about to get to my floor she looked at me "wana do lunch"

Me: "yes" I got off walked to my office after greeting Sthe at his desk I sat down called the Steven

Steven: "Dr Khumalo"

Me: "hi Steven"

Steven: "why am I not seeing your husband on my floor"

Me: "he couldn't come in today Steven he is really not feeling seems like he caught a stomach bug"

Steven: "fuck! Don't lie to me he overdid this weekend dammit Khumalo knows how important it is that this tumor is removed before it gets bigger"

Me: "his really sick Steven maybe you can get someone else to handle it"

Steven: "it his patient"

Me: "I'm really sorry Steven"

Steven: "no it's on him not you"

Me: "bye" I dropped the call got on with my work.

After work I got at home Nzuzo was still asleep i changed into joggers and a sport bra I shook him

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "how you feeling" he opened his eyes

Nzuzo: "been throwing up the whole day"

Me: "have you eaten anything"

Nzuzo: "no" I breathed out heavily

Me: "I'll make you a sandwich and green tea"

Nzuzo: "can you get me water as well first" I nodded and stood up going downstairs I made a sandwich and tea put everything on s tray with a glass of water and warm cloth I went back up

Me: "go brush your teeth" he got off the bed I put his food on the bedside I went to open the windows and the curtains

Nzuzo: "thank you baby" he started eating "I am never drinking like that again"

Me: "do you need anything before I start cooking dinner"

Nzuzo: "do we still have those preprepared ribs I'd like some meat"

Me: "I'll get them for you"

Nzuzo: "thank you" I nodded and left I put his ribs on the microwave and started on dinner Reign got in

Reign: "hey"

Me: "hey" he took out a beer

Reign: "how you doing"

Me: "I'm good and you"

Reign: "I'm good too how was work"

Me: "it was good and speaking of work wasn't your plane today"

Reign: "rescheduled bab'ncane wants a meeting with the rest of the elders on Saturday so I'm staying"

Me: "okay"

Reign: "you a really great cook"

Me: "there's nothing on the stove yet"

Reign: "judging from the previous meals"

Me: "okay" I took the ribs

Reign: "those look delicious can I have some"

Me: "sure" I gave him one rack

Reign: "thank you" I nodded went up gave Nzuzo his

Nzuzo: "thank you baby" I went down with the dishes he was using before I carried on cooking until I was done I set up the table and called everyone down for dinner we had over light conversation I hardly ate I was just feeding Sphe and pancake when they were full I went to give them baths then we went to sit in their room they were sharing a room since Sphe slept with Cleo during the week I sat with them playing until they fell asleep I put Sphe in his cot then put pancake on her bed I dimmed the light took the monitor I went to masisi's room she was in bed watching something on her laptop I got in bed with her

Masisi: "you sleeping with me tonight?"

Me: "I think I might Nzuzo is frustrating me"

Masisi: "I saw that at the table"

Me: "yeah, so how far are you and what does Lizwi say"

Masisi: "9 weeks, it wasn't planned and we just found out on Saturday he hasn't really reacted but he says his happy"

Me: "and you"

Masisi: "I wish I could reverse time I'm not ready but it's here now and there's nothing I can do about it"

Me: "dad is going to be fucking pissed"

Masisi: "his going to say Lizwi must marry me or I must move back home"

Me: "what do you want I mean is Lizwi someone you want to marry you guys been together for almost 4 years now"

Masisi: "I don't know Lani I love him and I want to marry him one day but not like this not because dad says so or because I fell pregnant"

Me: "what happened masisi I thought you were on an injection"

Masisi: "I was gaining weight so I changed to pills I missed a few. I'm sorry Yammy I know I disappointed you and I'm really sorry"

Me: "you did Sne I thought you learned from my mistakes on what to not do but it's okay what's done is done" we cuddled continued talking until we fell asleep.

I woke up when I felt someone lifting me up

Me: "mmh"

Nzuzo: "I'm taking you to bed" i snuggled closer he held me firmly and walked to our room he put me under the covers and got in he wrapped his arms around me I buried my face on his chest "I love you baby"

Me: "I love you too" he kissed my head

.

The week went on it was Saturday we were going to Dumisa for the meeting I woke up first Nzuzo was still asleep actually he had just came back home like 3 hours ago when I check the time it was 06:40 and my husband was just coming back from wherever him and Reign were I could smell the alcohol on him I woke him up

Nzuzo: "5 more minutes"

Me: "no get up" I got off the bed picked up his clothes I put the shoes in the closet then went to the bathroom to put the jeans and shirt in the laundry basket his shirt smelt weird so I sniffed it and it smelled like a woman's perfume alarm bells started ringing and they rang straight to cheating I went out the bathroom I shook him hard he woke up

Nzuzo: "im up I'm up" I threw the shirt at him

Me: "you don't learn do you"

Nzuzo: "what you on about"

Me: "who the hell were you fucking Nzuzo you cheating on me again" I started pacing "I'm such a fucking fool God everyone warned me against and like an idiot that I am I thought you wouldn't treat me like you treat those girls" he tried holding me but I moved

Nzuzo: "baby I'm not cheating on you I would never put us through that again"

Me: "then why does your shirt smell like a woman's perfume" he looked at me confused "well?! Don't just stare at me"

Nzuzo: "baby it must be from when Emily hugged me she was at the club with some doctors from work"

Me: "you lying"

Nzuzo: "take my phone and call her"

Me: "so that I'll look like a fool"

Nzuzo: "baby you have to believe me"

Me: "you are cheating on me Nzuzo and I'm sick of it" he took his phone and pressed on it "what you doing" he was calling someone and it was on loudspeaker I looked at the screen it was Dr Pepper

Emily: "Nzuzo it so early in the morning"

Nzuzo: "just wanted to check if you got home safely you were out of it when you left the club"

Emily: "I'm good I'll call you later" he dropped the call

Me: "oh"

Nzuzo: "for fuck sakes I wouldn't cheat on you again"

Me: "just because you saw her at the club doesn't mean it her perfume I'll know when I smell it on her"

Nzuzo: "Jesus Yamkelani!!" I went to shower leaving him there he joined me "Yammy trust me" he tried holding me I slapped his hands I carried on washing my body then I got out of the shower went to the closet lotioned then got dressed in a black body hugging strapless maxi dress and a olive green shirt coat with sandals he got in

Me: "you better hurry if you want to eat breakfast and check if your brother is up" I walked out went to make breakfast he came down with Reign when we were having breakfast we ate and left. I was quiet the whole ride because we were late when we got there everyone was already there we got in greeted then I went to sit with Thandi outside

Thandi: "schools are closing next week Friday"

Me: "must be nice being a teacher" she giggled

Thandi: "I want to come visit actually can I please come visit"

Me: "you family you don't have to ask but ofcos you can come you always welcome"

Thandi: "thanks I need a break from my parents and not to be a gossiper but you know how Thule is" we laughed Thule is Sandile's wife she's kinda not nice or easy to talk to

Me: "that's your sister in law" some kid got in the gate

Thandi: "that's the kid who lives next to your mother's house" he walked to us he greeted

Kid: "sisi Yamkelani your mother sent me she's asking if you can come see her it urgent"

Thandi: "shwele"

Me: "tell her if I find time I will come"

Kid: "okay but she's really sick"

Me: "okay" he left

Thandi: "are you going"

Me: "let me speak to Nzuzo first" I went in the house went to kneel next to him "can we talk outside" I whispered he nodded and stood up we went outside

Nzuzo: "so you not mad at me anymore"

Me: "mxm. My mom wants to see me"

Nzuzo: "oh but you not going right"

Me: "I am I just wanted to let you know"

Nzuzo: "why you don't need to see her"

Me: "I want to"

Nzuzo: "I'm still busy here I can't go with you we will go later"

Me: "Thandi will walk with me"

Nzuzo: "ayi baby"

Me: "yes I'll call you if something happens"

Nzuzo: "take the car I don't want people busy courting you here"

Me: "really Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "yes" he gave me the car keys

Me: "you being dramatic but fine" I took them he leaned in to kiss me but I gave him my cheek he sighed and kissed it

Nzuzo: "I love you" I nodded went to Thandi as he went in the house

Me: "come with me please"

Thandi: "sure"

Me; "nzuzo says I must take the car"

Thandi: "it's like 10 minutes away" I shrugged my shoulders we got in the car and drove off the grass in the yard was enough to hide a baby the paint had broken it broke my heart to see the house my mom was staying in but it was her own doing I knocked a husky voice said get in we did she was sitting on the old worn out couch

Mom: "oh Yamkelani my child" she looked awful she had like 4 strings of hair on her head her eyes were too big for her face she actually looked like something I can use to scare pancake off

Me: "yebo" we didn't even sit she coughed wincing as if it painful to cough, she was no longer light skinned her mouth had sores

Mom: "I am so sorry Yamkelani for all the hurt I've caused you and most importantly for not loving you and protecting you from that cruel man" she coughed again running out of breath "I know you don't owe me forgiveness but I am asking for it Yamkelani I want you to forgive me so that the Lord can take me because I am tired of living this life" Thandi and I looked at each

Me: "okay"

Thandi: "what?! No Lani"

Me: "let it be its fine I forgive you" she started crying

Mom: "I'm sorry my child I'm so sorry God is punishing me for all that I've done to you and Masisi especially you Yamkelani" she started coughing again endlessly

Me: "okay bye" I walked out leaving her still coughing I got in the car I could hear Thandi screaming and shouting at her I sat in the car thinking about this and at that moment I hated my heart for being one would think with the things I've been through I would be a strong woman but I was still a weak little girl in the inside I got out the car Thandi was still shouting

Thandi: "you will burn in hell you sick twisted woman"

Me: "get up" they looked at me "stand up and go take your I.D I'm taking you to the doctor"

Thandi: "no you are not"

Me: "yes I am so wena stand up"

Thandi: "I'm telling Nzuzo that you've gone crazy" she went out dialing on her phone

Mom: "thank you" she was standing even Nosi was bigger than her she was all bones and skin she went to the room walking like a granny I went to stand outside as my phone rang

Me: "yeah"

Nzuzo: "what are you doing Yamkelani"

Me: "I'm taking her to Mzinto to see a doctor"

Nzuzo: "why"

Me: "because she's sick and she gave birth to me" he sighed

Nzuzo: "come pick me up"

Me: "no sort out things there"

Nzuzo: "come pick me up Yamkelani it was not a request"

Me: "okay I'm coming" I hung up

Mom: "I don't want to cause trouble between you and your husband"

Me: "get in the car" I opened the backseat helped her in then went to the drivers seat I drove off

Mom: "so you bought the Range Rover you wanted"

Me: "yes sometimes people's words empower you instead of bringing you down" we got there Thandi got off I moved Nzuzo got in the driver's seat and he drove out the gate in a speed he was so angry he kept clenching his jaws he was holding the steering wheel tightly even mom could tell she didn't say a word after he got in I put my hand on his thigh he looked at me a little then put his hand on mine

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you" we drove to scottburgh in silence we got to the medical pavilion luckily we found a free doctor he ran some tests on her checked her up she had aids it was really bad because it had progressed extremely he transferred her to kingsway hospital so we took her there after going to the mall buying her pjamies and toiletries she was admitted I had to pay for everything my poor debt card suffered Nzuzo didn't want to hear a mother fucking word about it after she settled in we left driving back to Dumisa

Me: "I'm still angry at you so I don't get why you angry"

Nzuzo: "that fucking fantastic we both angry"

Me: "mxm"

Nzuzo: "I'll kick you out of this car if you acting crazy"

Me: "my car"

Nzuzo: "I'm the one driving it"

Me: "you acting crazy"

Nzuzo: "you should have left it alone Yammy have you forgotten what that woman did to you because had she been a mother to you her boyfriend wouldn't have even thought about raping you and now you spending thousands of rands helping her out"

Me: "if she dies and I know that I could have helped somehow do you think I would be able to live with myself"

Nzuzo: "mxm"

Me: "I'm asking"

Nzuzo: "no you wouldn't"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "I just hate her Yammy I hate her so bad"

Me: "I also hate her but I have forgiven her for what she did to me"

Nzuzo: "you too forgiving your heart is stupid"

Me: "it not stupid when I'm forgiving you"

Nzuzo: "no it not"

Me: "must be nice" he looked at me shortly

Nzuzo: "I don't know what's going on in the pretty little head of yours but I am not cheating on you I am not fucking nobody it really was just an innocent hug that I got from Emily. I know what I got at home why in the heck would I go around fucking random bitches"

Me: "why are you going around fucking random bitches"

Nzuzo: "oh God this woman"

Me: "the day you get a taste of your own medicine Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "will be the day our children become orphans"

Me: "you see"

Nzuzo: "you mine Yammy body and soul especially body that clean brazilian waxed pussy is mine those perky breasts mine if someone gets even close to my things Yammy someone is dying"

Me: "yet you be shoving my dick in every pussy whole you come across"

Nzuzo: "I'm not fucking anyone though that's all I'm saying"

Me: "can you drive faster I was supposed to cook dinner"

Nzuzo: "I'm sure Thule and Thandi have cooked"

Me: "when Reign leaving"

Nzuzo: "hawu"

Me: "no I don't mean it in a bad way" yes I do

Nzuzo: "Monday"

Me: "guess yall going out again" he put his hand on my thigh

Nzuzo: "why are you wearing such a tight dress I can't even get to touch my pussy"

Me: "ayi okahle wena" I pushed his hand off he laughed putting it back "I see you want cause an accident"

Nzuzo: "if I die next to you I'll be smiling the whole way to heaven"

Me: "well die by yourself I got kids and I still need to find myself a ben 10"

Nzuzo: "that's not funny"

Me: "we shall see"

Nzuzo: "mxm"

Me: "I'm not ugly Nzuzo and I definitely don't look my age or look like a mother I can still get a guy just because I choose to not entertain guys doesn't mean I don't get approached remember that next time you fuck some random basic girl" he didn't say anything the rest of the ride until we got to Dumisa

PART 53

After he parked the car he got off without a word banging the door

Me: "my poor car" I whispered before getting off I went in the house they were having drinks and talking the other elders had left

Aunt: "dish up for your husband Yammy"

Nzuzo: "I'm full mah" he was busy with his phone not even looking up at whoever was talking

Uncle: "what happened nzuzo what did makoti do to you" nzuzo was seriously sulking you guys he looked up with his eyebrows brought together

Nzuzo: "it's Yamkelani baba she says she will get another man"

Me: "hayi Nzuzo!!" Like the fuck

Nzuzo: "what its true you said you will get a ben 10" I looked around ngibakaza

Aunt: "well if you not treating her right no one will stop her from getting someone who will treat her right"

Nzuzo: "but mah I treat her right she's my queen and I show her in every way that she's my queen"

Me: "you lying, nzuzo goes out to drink and come back smelling like a woman in early hours of morning and Monday he didn't go to work because he had a hangover his boss was not pleased at all"

Uncle: "ayi ayi Nzuzo kanti what are you doing at your house you a husband and a father you can't be behaving like a single man and wena Yamkelani if he cheats on you again leave him go find yourself another man who will treat you right"

Nzuzo: "aibo baba don't speak like that to my wife"

Aunt: "yes she must leave you if you cheat hawu zodlala ngengane ka'Demus" I smiled I felt like sticking my tongue out

Nzuzo: "let's go home"

Reign: "yeah I'm good to go"

Aunt: "don't run"

Nzuzo: "I'm not running I just miss my kids"

Uncle: "okay go well"

Me: "Thandi I'll see you when you come by"

Thandi: "Saturday"

Me: "okay" we said our goodbyes they walked us out we left

Reign: "finally we can hit some club"

Me: "Nzuzo and I are actually going to drop you off at home we have plans tonight that don't involve a 3rd party" Nzuzo looked at me

Reign: "can't you push back your plans I'm leaving Monday"

Me: "no we can't or can we baby" he cleared his throat shifting a little

Nzuzo: "no we can't"

Reign: "whatever bro I mean it not like I live here I stay in another province and I just wana spend time with you before I have to go"

Nzuzo: "and I need to spend time with my wife"

Reign: "she's controlling you"

Nzuzo: "come Reign bra don't be that guy who is always tryna start something" he didn't say anything I brushed Nzuzo's thigh I kissed his cheek

Me: "the way I love you Mntungwa"

Nzuzo: "it's the same way I love you thembalam" Reign plugged in his earphones I just looked out the window giggling quietly when we got home he went straight up Nzuzo and I went to our room I went to change he followed me to the closet

Nzuzo: "so what plans were you talking about"

Me: "dinner"

Nzuzo: "should I change too wait why you wearing something that revealing" I was wearing blue ripped boyfriend jeans with a black see through shirt

Me: "it hardly revealing nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "at least change the shirt" I did put on a low cut black vests and a black trench coat with blue heel pumps

Me: "done" he was sitting in the closet the whole time

Nzuzo: "you look beautiful"

Me: "I told you I'm not ugly" we laughed I went to sit on him

Nzuzo: "you have always been beautiful baby before you were this fragile beautiful thing and now you all strong and confident even more beautiful than ever" I kissed him he grabbed my butt bringing me closer we kissed deeply with it getting deeper with every passing minute he pulled back and gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "let's go you taking me out remember" I laughed getting off him

Me: "does this mean I'm paying"

Nzuzo: "yes"

Me: "a.a baby I'll go broke before month end" we walked out he was laughing

Nzuzo: "good then maybe next time you will think before spending money recklessly" he opened my door I got in he jogged to his side got in and drove off

Me: "she's my mother Nzuzo and I'm actually thinking of taking care off her"

Nzuzo: "taking care of her how"

Me: "renovating that house and making sure she has food proper healthy food and she has someone to take care of her" he sighed irritably

Nzuzo: "just don't be asking me for money"

Me: "it's not like I do anything with my salary besides making sure there's always food in the house I have so much money saved even the rent money from the la lucia house goes straight to my account"

Nzuzo: "maybe you should start paying the maids and for the cars since you busy flexing" I laughed

Me: "my husband is a doctor plus a businessman I should just resign at work and become a housewife" he cracked up in laughter

Nzuzo: "resign wena baby you married to bill gate"

Me: "shopping trips to Paris or New York flying with our private jet"

Nzuzo: "yes baby!" We laughed

Me: "on the reals though my love I need you to be cool with me taking care of her"

Nzuzo: "here what the doctors say first if she's recovering then you can get the renovations done"

Me: "thank you babakhe"

Nzuzo: "so when is Avery leaving"

Me: "he is meeting dad in Jhb on Tuesday then they leaving on Wednesday night"

Nzuzo: "you bought him the ticket already"

Me: "yep" we got to gateways went to have dinner and drinks at Tasha's we had so much fun by the time we left I was a little tipsy when we got home it was dark everyone was asleep I jumped on Nzuzo he laughed holding me tightly he walked upstairs I was sucking and biting on his neck I took off his jacket followed by t-shirt by the time we got to our room I was working on his jeans he threw me on the bed I bounced a little

.

I was woken up by a knock my body was hurting Nzuzo and I passed out on the couch after hectic mind blowing sex marathon I stood up my legs were so sore not to even to mention my poor vjaja I grabbed the throw on the floor wrapped it around my body. I went to open Reign was there he looked at me with a raised eyebrow biting his bottom lip I held the throw tighter

Reign: "your just fucked look is absolutely hot" he whispered

Me: "you such a creepy person" he held out Nzuzo's t-shirt and jacket along with the belt in his hand

Reign: "I see you had fun last night" I grabbed the things and closed the door locking it I went to wake up Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "come to bed"

Nzuzo: "okay" we went to bed I slept on top of him.

I woke up again when hunger took over Nzuzo was already up playing with my hair and staring at me

Me: "mmh hi"

Nzuzo: "hey baby"

Me: "I'm so hungry"

Nzuzo: "no hangover"

Me: "a.a"

Nzuzo: "I want meat like nice juicy meat and some alcohol"

Me: "oh" he rolled us over getting on top of me

Nzuzo: "let's go to mlazi"

Me: "never been there"

Nzuzo: "let's go you me reign and Masisi"

Me: "okay" he smashed his lips on mine we kissed heavily as he entered me. After a lazy session I went to look for Masisi I found her in the tv room watching tv with Reign

Me: "great I found you both here"

Reign: "are we in trouble"

Me: "no Nzuzo says we should go to mlazi so if you game you can get ready"

Masisi: "cool I need to breath" she said standing up

Reign: "I'll meet you guys there I'll go pick up Sarah"

Masisi: "which Sarah"

Reign; "Enhle's friend"

Me: "how do you know them"

Reign; "Nzuzo and I saw them at the club on Friday" Nzuzo got in whistling Masisi and I turned to look at him

Nzuzo: "what did I do"

Me: "Reign is going to go pick up Sarah and he will meet us there"

Masisi: "seeing as how you all met up at the club"

Reign: "why do I feel like I just messed up"

Me: "you think" I walked out the lounge pushing Nzuzo aside

Nzuzo: "baby nothing happened! Nice Reign thank you" he ran up running after me

Me: "I don't want to hear it"

Nzuzo: "baby they were there I swear to you I swear on my parents grave nothing happened"

Me: "okay" he looked at me puzzled

Nzuzo: "you believe me"

Me: "shouldn't i"

Nzuzo: "you should" I nodded I went to stand by the staircase

Me: "Masisi we leave in an hour!!"

Masisi: "okay" she shouted I went back to the room Nzuzo was still standing like how I left him

Me: "let's bath I'm really hungry" it was 14:50

Nzuzo: "maybe you should have a sandwich before we leave"

Me: "no I'm good" we went to shower he was really bothered by how I just moved on from the whole Enhle and the club situation I could tell, he kept asking if I'm okay or not. We got out the shower went to the closet we lotioned I got dressed in thigh high boots and a knitted jersey

Nzuzo: "please put something under the jersey"

Me: "no I have my underwear" the jersey was large enough it stood below my ass there wasn't much of skin showing but it was showing

Nzuzo: "at least put on those bum shorts of yours"

Me: "the jersey will cover the shorts so what will be the point of it"

Nzuzo: "why you being stubborn"

Me: "why you telling me what to wear"

Nzuzo: "fine" i did my make up then I brushed my weave put on a rabbi hat

Me: "I'm done we can go" he stood up from the couch we walked out the closet i went to call Masisi from her room she was wearing denim short jumpsuit and gladiator heels we left

Me: "never been there before I'm kinda excited" Nzuzo chuckled

Masisi: "I've been there couple of times on sundays it usually epic"

Me: "so I've heard"

Nzuzo: "have you called hospital Lani"

Masisi: "who is at the hospital"

Nzuzo: "you didn't tell her"

Me: "we haven't really talked, mom is"

Masisi: "oh I hope she dies"

Nzuzo: "thank you"

Me: "aibo"

Masisi: "seriously, what's wrong with the wicked witch of the west"

Nzuzo; "aids"

Masisi: "haleluya" she sang Nzuzo laughed

Me: "It's not funny that's our mother Masisi"

Masisi: "my mother died when she gave birth to me"

Me: "she's at kingsway if you want to see her Masisi"

Masisi: "oh Lani don't tell me you paying for her medical expenses because I know for sure that she does not have medical aid"

Me: "it my money I will not be told how to use it"

Masisi: "you fucking stupid"

Me: "say what now"

Masisi: "I'm sorry"

Me: "better be"

Masisi: "but Lani after how that woman treated you"

Me: "I've forgiven her"

Masisi: "well don't expect me or Nosi to forgive her"

Me: "it your choice"

Masisi: "what do you think Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I think Lani is being stupid but it's her mother and if she forgives her it her choice and I will support her choices"

Me: "thank you baby" I kissed his cheek "you the best husband" he turned gave me a baby kiss quickly

Masisi: "I don't want to die"

Me: "don't be jelly"

Masisi: "arg please" we got at mlazi kwaV at yandin finding parking was a nightmare we got off Nzuzo paid our entry fee we got in

Masisi: "smile"

Me: "what"

Nzuzo: "camera"

Me: "mxm" they laughed we found a table

Nzuzo: "so what you drinking"

Masisi: "red wine"

Me: "you pregnant"

Masisi: "red wine is fine ask Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I don't know"

Masisi: "it fine really"

Me: "I want Moet and Chardonnay"

Nzuzo: "okay" he kissed my cheek and left

Masisi: "so mom?" I told her how I found her and the hospital situation and renovating her house "so basically you want to take care of that woman"

Me: "she's our mother Masisi and she needs help right now I can give her that the Lord said forgive"

Masisi: "he also said do onto others as you want them to do to you" we laughed

Me: "you so stupid and there's Reign and Sarah"

Masisi: "with Jessica I thought they weren't friends anymore"

Me: "I don't even want to comment" they came to us all smiles

Them: "hey"

Masisi&I: "hey" they sat down

Reign: "where is Nzuzo"

Me: "get alcohol and meat"

Reign: "what you drinking baby" Masisi and I looked at each other

Sarah: "Moet rose right Jes"

Jessica: "yeah" he stood up and left "so why didn't you tell me you coming here Lani"

Me: "it wasn't really planned I'm sorry"

Jessica: "it's cool boo"

Sarah; "Lani" I smiled thinking of how she choose Enhle's side

Me: "Sarah"

Sarah: "I'm sorry"

Me: "water under the bridge"

Sarah: "thank you" the Dj was playing nice old school music

Masisi: "so you went clubbing with Enhle on Friday"

Me: "Sne don't start shit"

Masisi: "I'm just saying you went clubbing on Friday with Enhle and you chilling with Lani on Sunday life is just perfect for you is it not"

Sarah: "I .."

Me: "oh here they are" I pointed to Nzuzo and Reign as they came to us with the alcohol

Nzuzo: "meat will be ready in 20" they sat I held his neck and kissed him "mmh" he deepened the kiss putting his hand between my thighs

Jessica: "okay we get it you guys are happy and in love but it sickening" I pulled back

Me: "don't be green jes" we chilled just having fun.

I stood up so did Nzuzo

Me: "I'm fine you don't have to keep going to the toilet with me" he had went to the toilet with me the last 3 times

Nzuzo: "I do let's go" he held my hand we went there I waited for my turn it was now nighttime and it was a little too crowded I got in and out fast I looked around nzuzo wasn't there so I waited thinking he went in as well

Guy: "hi"

Me: "hi"

Guy: "I'm Lusanda"

Me: "Lani"

Guy: "you beautiful" someone held my waist when I turned it was Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "and married, you done baby"

Me: "yeah" we walked away

Nzuzo: "I think we should leave now"

Me: "fine with me" we got to the table

Nzuzo: "we leaving" everyone agreed besides Reign so we all left Reign was driving in front of us as we drove pass mega city his car swerved on the road it was as if his losing control he hit another car that was passing and his car flipped over Nzuzo braked fast and hard I caught Masisi as she was about to fly out the windscreen Nzuzo ran out going to Reign's car just as it burst into flames sent Nzuzo flying

PART 54

I ran out of car

Me: "Nzuzo!!! Nzuzo!!!" I couldn't stop crying "Nzuzo!!!" I heard someone coughing I ran there but it was Reign I started punching him "look what you did you bastard"

Reign: "I'll look for him Lani" I kept hitting him even kicking him he held my arms flooding them then smashed his lips on mine I gasped in shock he shoved his tongue in my mouth I tried pushing him off but he was holding me tightly "are you fucking insane" Masisi screamed and Reign let go of me I slapped him so hard my hand felt hot same time

Me: "you sick twisted man hoe I want you out of my house" I kicked his cock he went on the ground groaning

Nzuzo: "baby Lani!!!" He screamed from the other side of the road I ran toward his voice screaming for him when I saw him I threw myself at him crying loudly "are you hurt baby"

Me: "no are you hurt"

Nzuzo: "I just hit my back have you seen Reign"

Me: "yes his fine"

Nzuzo: "and Masisi"

Me: "her too, kiss me" I looked up at him he leaned down and kissed me I swept my tongue through his mouth deepening the kiss we pulled apart when Reign started screaming for Sarah and Jessica sirens started ringing we walked up to where Reign and Masisi were

Nzuzo: "dude what the hell happened"

Reign: "the steering wheel locked fucking rental car now it blew up into flames can't even prove it"

Masisi: "we can't find Sarah and Jessica"

Reign: "when I noticed that the wheel was locked I tried braking but it was too late so we all jumped out as it was about to hit the other car" the police came along with fire trucks and ambulances

Nzuzo: "you pass the drinking limit you going to get charged for drunk and driving"

Reign: "my father will handle that shit" he took out his phone and walked away as the police came to us. After endless questions we went to the hospital after they found Sarah and Jessica we said Masisi was driving Nzuzo's car since she had like half a glass of red wine Reign was charged and he left with the police guys but he said we shouldn't worry his father is on his way. We waited for masisi to get checked out since she hit her stomach but she was good the baby was good Sarah was admitted she

hit her head badly so we left her when her parents came to the hospital we went to drop off Jessica then drove home Lizwi's car was already parked outside the gate when we got there

Me: "really Masisi it after midnight the poor guy has work in a few hours"

Masisi: "I almost lost our child he is worried" Nzuzo parked "I'll see you guys or I'll call" she got off the car Lizwi met her halfway Nzuzo drove in he parked outside the garage we went in the house straight to bed all in silence I could tell he was worried about Reign I didn't know what to say to him so I just kissed him he kissed me back I got on top of him

I was not laying on top of him after riding him

Nzuzo: "thank you" I giggled drawing patterns on his tattoos

Me: "you shouldn't thank me for making love to you"

Nzuzo: "I'm worried about him"

Me: "he said his dad was on his way baby he can handle it"

Nzuzo: "I'm still worried his the only brother I have"

Me: "I thought I had lost you when I couldn't find you" he held me tightly kissing my head

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry but I'm here safe beneath you"

Me: "I was so scared the way you just flew baby please never scare me like that Nzuzo we have children they need you I need you think of that next time" he wiped my tears kissing my eyes

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby"

Me: "just don't put your life at risk Nzuzo I would die if I lose you Nzuzo and I know you don't want our children growing up without parents"

Nzuzo: "baby nothing is going to happen to me I promise you" we kissed "I love you thembalam"

Me: "I love you too" he brushed my head as I slowly dozed off.

.

Monday we were skipping work we woke up I called Sarah to check on her she was going for surgery she had brain bleed after that I called the hospital to check on mom she was slowly recovering the doctor was happy with her improvement. After making the calls I went back to the room I had been standing by the balcony I went to shower got out got dressed kissed Nzuzo then went downstairs I found Cleo feeding Sphe and pancake while Gugu was cleaning in the kitchen

Me: "morning"

Them: "morning"

Pancake: "mama" she lifted her arms

Me: "oh it mama now not mommy" she giggled nodding

Pancake: "take me"

Me: "you eating baby and I have to make breakfast for daddy"

Sphe: "mam" I stopped moving

Me: "did he just say his first word" tears were already filling my eyes

Cleo: "yeah"

Pancake: "mama Sphe" he looked at her giggling

Sphe: "mama" I got him off his chair

Me: "oh baby!" I kissed him all over his face pancake was clapping "let's go flex for daddy" I walked upstairs I woke Nzuzo up

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "he said his first word love" he sat up and took him

Nzuzo: "he said dad right"

Me: "hha! You wish he said mama"

Sphe: "mama"

Me: "you see" I kissed his head

Nzuzo: "say dad Sphe come on dude"

Me: "don't pressure my baby"

Sphe: "mama" I clapped my hands he giggled buried his face on Nzuzo's chest nzuzo laughed

Nzuzo: "gay tendencies Sphelele"

Me: "ayi Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I'm joking kiss me" I gave him a soft peck

Me: "I'll go make you breakfast" I tried taking Sphe

Nzuzo: "I'll come down with him" I nodded went downstairs I started on making breakfast Reign came in the kitchen with a white man

Reign: "hey"

Me: "hi you back"

Reign: "yes I just came to get my bag and dad wanted to meet Nzuzo. Dad this is Yamkelani Nzuzo's wife you can call her Lani and Lani this is my father Stefan Crawford"

Me: "it pleasure meeting you Mr Crawford"

Stefan: "just call me Stefan and it a pleasure meeting you as well just wish it was under different circumstances"

Reign: "Is Nzuzo upstairs"

Me: "yes"

Reign: "I'll be back dad" he left

Me: "would you like something to drink"

Stefan: "cup of coffee please"

Me: "okay" I poured him the coffee then took him to the lounge I went back to the kitchen to carry on with breakfast the kids had already eaten so when I was done I went to call Nzuzo Reign and Stefan from the lounge we had breakfast in the dining room

Reign: "so that's why dad saying suing the rental company will be better"

Nzuzo: "if you can get proof that their car was foul then yeah that's better because they will charge you for the car" I zoned out just the sight of Reign made me wana scream I couldn't believe he just shoved his tongue down my throat I looked at him actually his lips the way they moved was so annoying I was brought back to life by Nzuzo pinching me

Me: "what"

Nzuzo: "you've been staring at Reign, what's wrong?"

Me: "uhm nothing sorry" I stood up went to the kitchen I started cleaning up Nzuzo followed me in

Nzuzo: "what happened"

Me: "nothing"

Nzuzo: "I know you Lani so out with it what's wrong"

Reign: "Nzuzo dad and I are leaving" he said getting in

Nzuzo: "let me shower quickly I'll go with you"

Reign: "sure" Nzuzo went up I carried on "Lani"

Me: "please go away" he walked closer

Reign: "I'm sorry I shouldn't have kissed you"

Me: "okay"

Reign: "I don't know what I was thinking you wouldn't stop panicking I also panicked. Please don't tell Nzuzo I've just found him and I know he will cut me off so please can we just forget it ever happened"

Me: "it's okay just stay away from me" he nodded

Reign: "don't worry I'm going to the hotel today and that's where I'll be staying whenever I'm here"

Me: "okay" he stared at me I looked down he walked closer I backed up "go away Reign"

Reign; "I'm attracted to you Lani" Liam came in running followed by pancake Reign moved back

Liam: "mommy can we have popsicle"

Pancake: "please"

Me: "okay" they screamed I went to the freezer took out 2 popsicles "sit on the chairs I don't want you guys messing up my couches"

Pancake: "take me" I lifted them up putting them down on the high chairs

Liam: "thank you mommy"

Me: "you welcome babies" I looked back Reign had left I sighed I finished up then went upstairs Nzuzo was coming out of the closet when I got in the room

Nzuzo: "I'm gonna go with Reign and his dad baby is that okay with you or do you need me"

Me: "it's okay I'm going to check on mom anyway the doctor says she's getting better they might discharge her soon" he held my chin we kissed

Nzuzo: "okay I love you"

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "I'll be back soon" he kissed my forehead and left I took a bath when I got out my phone was ringing it was dad

Me: "hello daddy"

Dad: "hey Lani how are you?"

Me: "I'm okay dad and you"

Dad: "me too look I miss my grandkids"

Me: "you don't miss me" he chuckled

Dad: "ofcos I miss you that's why I'm coming there"

Me: "when"

Dad: "today when I'm done with my meeting I'll catch a plane come there"

Me: "okay let me know when you take off so I can pick you up"

Dad: "I'll call an uber don't worry yourself about me"

Me: "I do worry dad but okay"

Dad: "I love you"

Me: "love you" I dropped the call went to get dressed I went to fix a room for dad then drove to kingsway after going to gateway I arrived there went to her room she was up watching tv shame she did look a little better she smiled when she saw

Mom: "Yamkelani"

Me: "hi how you feeling today"

Mom: "a little better the doctors are positive, you didn't come with your husband today"

Me: "no I didn't his busy helping his brother out"

Mom: "oh okay"

Me: "I brought you food I know how hospital food can be"

Mom: "hayi I'm at a hotel here everything is nice and perfect thank you" I nodded "I'm sorry Yamkelani I don't deserve your kindness"

Me: "yes you don't" she looked away nodding

Mom: "I see your children when they visit the Khumalos the boy that looks like his father and the twins what are they name"

Me: "the boy is Avery and the twins are Thando and Oluhle, there's also two other boys Liam and Sphe then a girl Langelihle"

Mom: "yoh so many children your husband is strong" I laughed

Me: "yes he is"

Mom: "I also saw Nosipho she is so grown and beautiful"

Me: "yes she is"

Mom: "do they know I'm here"

Me: "I haven't told Nosi but Sne knows"

Mom: "she hates me"

Me: "kakhulu"

Mom: "I understand she was never like you so tell me what do you do"

Me: "I'm a chief financial officer at st Augustin hospital that's where my husband also work as neurosurgeon"

Mom: "sounds fancy" I smiled

Me: "it's not"

Mom: "Masisi yena she's not married yet"

Me: "no but she's pregnant and she's doing her masters in law her boyfriend is very nice person his an engineer at eskom"

Mom: "she stays with you or she's with Marvin"

Me: "she's with me"

Mom: "how is Marvin"

Me: "daddy is great he is coming to my house today" she looked down playing with her fingers

Mom: "I loved that man I loved him with every part of me then he broke me apart"

Me: "I don't feel comfortable talking to you about this"

Mom: "I understand"

Me: "the weather is beautiful outside do you want to get fresh air"

Mom: "please" I nodded went out I asked for a wheelchair I was not about to walk with her while she takes 2 minutes to take a step I helped her sit on it then I pushed her we went to sit outside we spoke for hours until the doctor called her in because it was time for her check up I stayed after the check watched her eating it was so sad she was in a lot of pain my phone rang it was dad

Me: "hey daddy"

Dad: "your sister is pregnant" I huffed

Me: "yes"

Dad; "I want you both at home when I get there I'm about to board"

Me: "okay I'll see you later" I sent Masisi an sms that she needs to come home "I have to go now I'll visit you again when I can"

Mom: "okay and thank you Yamkelani for everything thank you so much" I nodded and left I arrived at home to so much chaos there were toys all over the lounge I got so annoyed because Gugu and Cloe know that the kids are only allowed to play in their rooms with toys. I went to the kitchen started making dinner while busy with dinner I caught his scent before anything he snaked his arms around my body and kissed my neck

Nzuzo: "mfazi wam"

Me: "mmh" he was leaving soft wet kisses all over my neck

Nzuzo: "I missed you today" I turned to face him

Me: "I also missed you" I put my hand at the back of his head and pushed his face to mine we kissed "eewu mommy" we pulled apart it was Liam with his face covered Nzuzo chuckled picking him up

Nzuzo: "what's wrong son"

Liam: "you and mommy are kissing it gross"

Me: "there's nothing gross" Nzuzo leaned down and kissed me Liam was squealing trying to get out of his father's arms

Liam: "daddy no!!!" Nzuzo held my back bringing me closer sandwiching Liam between us "oh God daddy please" I heard giggles I pushed Nzuzo back dad and Avery were standing by the entrance

Dad: "what you doing to my grand baby"

Liam: "grandpa take me" Nzuzo put him down laughing

Nzuzo: "Marvin hello" they exchanged greetings I went to give dad a hug then they all went to the lounge.

After dinner we sat in the lounge dad, Masisi and i. Masisi started apologizing immediately while crying dad just looked at her until her loud sobs turned into silent cries

Masisi: "dad please" the look he was giving her was even scaring me I felt like I was the pregnant one Sphe started crying in the tv room

Me: "have to check on him"

Masisi: "don't leave me Lani"

Dad: "am I monster Sne" i mouthed sorry to her and went to take Sphe

Me: "what's wrong big boy" I gave him his bottle then went up to my room with him Nzuzo was watching tv

Nzuzo: "Marvin done shouting at you two" I giggled getting under the cover with him

Me: "Sphe saved me with his cry I left Masisi to deal with her father alone"

Nzuzo: "I'm sure she's crying as we speak Marvin has always been a little too hard on her"

Me: "it's her fault though Masisi was too rebellious during high school" he was brushing Sphe's hair

Nzuzo: "shame, once the girls go on their periods we buying them those steel panties from the Guru"

Me: "considering how you were with girls you the last person to talk about steel panties"

Nzuzo: "you not being funny" I giggled kissing his head

.

The following day we were at spur having dinner the whole family

Pancake: "mommy" she pulled my shirt I was talking to Nzuzo "mommy!"

Me: "what pancake"

Pancake: "I need to pee"

Nzuzo: "you just went to pee pancake"

Pancake: "but daddy I need to go again" she started pressing her thighs together I stood up and carried her we walked to the toilets I helped her pee then washed our hands

Me: "next time I'm putting you in a nappy"

Pancake: "no mommy I'm a big girl"

Me: "whenever we go out you will be wearing a nappy" she started crying I heard someone chuckling behind us I turned it was some guy

Guy: "Lani hi"

Me: "hhu"

Guy: "Lusanda we met mlazi"

Me: "oh yes"

Pancake: "I want dad"

Me: "bye"

Lusanda: "at least give me your number"

Me: "I'm married" I walked away but he held my shoulder

Lusanda: "please"

Me: "I can't" I continued walking we got to spur as soon as we got to the table pancake cried louder Nzuzo took her

Nzuzo: "what's wrong pancake" she looked up from his chest with her face already red

Pancake: "mommy says I'm going to wear a nappy" Liam cracked up first

Liam: "you a baby like Sphe" everyone around the table laughed making her cry harder

PART 55

I woke up in my husband's warm arms and his morning erection digging on my ass I turned he stirred a little then opened his eyes blinking a couple of times

Nzuzo: "morning thembalam"

Me: "morning sthandwa" I kissed him he held my ass bringing me even closer I let out a moan he got on top of me entering me slowly he pulled out of the kiss

Nzuzo: "I love you so much Yammy" he spread our arms on the bed

Me: "I love you just as much if not more Nzuzo" he went deeper pushing me forward "aah"

Nzuzo: "keep your eyes open my love" I opened them he was staring at me with a smile on his face his eyes twinkling "you the most beautiful woman I have ever met mfazi wam I worship you" he pulled back and went in again slowly "I thank God everyday for making you for me we are soul mates" we made slow love with him making love to my spirit as well.

We were now in a car leaving after we had gotten ready for work

Nzuzo: "will you be late if we start with breakfast"

Me: "no my day is actually clear I just have paper work to do"

Nzuzo: "we should exchange jobs" I giggled

Me: "you hate numbers"

Nzuzo: "true, speaking about numbers this supply tender that I got do you think after buying the steel will there still be enough money to put up at transnet"

Me: "doesn't the transnet deal need 257 thousand rands up front"

Nzuzo: "it does"

Me: "if eskom pays on the date it supposed to pay since I've sent the invoices yeah it will be enough, we can't take all the money we have right now on the business account and put it at transnet"

Nzuzo: "just let me know when everything comes through babe" he parked outside mugg n bean we went in holding hands got a table ordered breakfast

Nzuzo: "Avery says he is settling in well in London"

Me: "you spoke to him"

Nzuzo: "we facetimed early in the morning you were still asleep"

Me: "you should have woken me up Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "sorry you just looked so beautiful and peaceful" I smiled

Me: "don't do that"

Nzuzo: "how is the renovation going"

Me: "the house is freshly painted and the roof is renewed just waiting for them to finish tiling the floor then I can furniture it"

Nzuzo: "how is she taking the whole thing" mom was discharged from the hospital she was on treatment and really well

Me: "she's really overwhelmed by everything and extremely happy my stupid heart likes seeing her happy"

Nzuzo: "just don't lose yourself in all of this baby and don't let her use you"

Me: "I won't"

Nzuzo: "good" he wiped the melted cheese off my lip then licked off his finger

Me: "thank you" he winked I rolled my eyes chuckling "charmer"

Nzuzo: "yours baby only yours"

Me: "better be" I finished my coffee as he called for the bill

Nzuzo: "you so territorial"

Me: "you mine I'm entitled to it" he held my cheek i leaned on his hand we kissed shortly he paid and we left going to work he walked me up to my floor

Sthe: "Dr Khumalo"

Nzuzo: "sho" he opened my door I got it so did he pulled me to him after he put my messenger bag on the desk "I love you mrs Khumalo"

Me: "I love you too" we kissed heavily he grabbed my butt making me stand on my toes i deepened our kiss after awhile he pulled back and gave me a soft peck

Nzuzo: "see you later"

Me: "bye" he left I got busy with my work.

I was disturbed by loud voices coming to my office the door opened Masisi got in with Thandi and Akhona the two were visiting for the holidays

Me: "I'm at work"

Masisi: "it's 13:15 kanti when is your lunch"

Thandi: "Nzuzo said it at 13:00"

Me: "what do you want" I said get up from my chair

Akhona: "treating you to lunch sisi" I brushed masisi's stomach anyone could tell she was pregnant now unless wearing baggy clothes

Me: "you 3 got money"

Thandi: "I work duh"

Akhona: "who is the hottie at the front desk"

Me: "his older then me so don't even think about let's go" I took my bag

Akhona: "love has no age"

Me: "Nzuzo has a fist" they laughed I locked up we left "I won't be coming back Sthe lock up the off at 16:30"

Sthe: "okay Lani"

Akhona: "hi Sthe" he smiled waving I just shook my head we got in the lift going to the parking we got in the car Masisi drove off we went to California dreaming we ordered

Thandi: "you and Nzuzo should do something about your room" I looked up from my plate

Me: "meaning"

Masisi: "y'all like having sex and we all can hear" I felt my face heating up in embarrassment I looked down

Me: "I'll search online for people who can sound proof our room" they giggled

Thandi: "it just that his our big brother it kind of uncomfortable to listen to you know worse for me the room I am using is next to yours"

Me: "eish yeah neh I am sorry"

Akhona: "ooh thembalam" she mimicked Nzuzo's voice

Me: "shut up" they laughed "we all adults in this table let's behave like adults please"

Thandi: "so how are things between you two Yammy"

Me: "we have our days like any other couple but we love each other that keeps us going"

Akhona: "your relationship gives me relationship goals" we laughed

Thandi: "don't be silly"

Masisi: "every relationship differs"

Akhona: "Yammy is strong though to have stayed with Nzuzo after that all leaving situation"

Thandi: "marriage is different from dating Akhona just because you changing men every month doesn't mean you can change husbands as well" Akhona pouted

Me: "what Akhona varsity life is getting to you?" Akhona was doing her 2nd year at Dut in civil engineering

Akhona: "no I am perfectly fine I just don't take bullshit from no nobody I mean how can someone call themselves your man when they spend even a day without talking to you"

Me: "let's not talk about my marriage" they all nodded

Masisi: "so Lizwi is talking about sending his uncles for lobola" I choked on my juice started coughing

Thandi: "wow congratulations"

Me: "wow!"

Masisi: "I told him he shouldn't"

Me: "good"

Masisi: "what?!"

Me: "I ... I mean you not really ready or are you"

Masisi: "I'm not that's why I said he shouldn't wait Yammy I thought you liked Lizwi"

Me: "I like Lizwi I love him for you but marriage Masisi Gosh you just not ready for that" I thought about my marriage I mean I loved Nzuzo with every part of me but I honestly think if I was not married to him if I did not have his sons I would left him already at times I felt trapped I felt as if I needed more or I deserved more but then I would remember how he loved me even in my rags how he wanted me with my uncleanliness how he saved me from my demons how he made love to my soul that had been ripped apart how he collected all the little pieces of my broken spirit and moulded it into what it is right now I remember the sleepless night I spent wailing in his arms over what I had been through I remember us wiping each other's tears while crying over my past. There were days where I just spent feeling empty and during those days he did everything in his power to feel up the emptiness I was feeling those were the dark secret days we spent in our room not talking just in his arms everyone thought we locked ourselves in because we want to stay in bed and make love the whole days while the opposite was happening he loved me and I loved him

Masisi: "I know that's why I told him not yet" I nodded she wiped a tear from my face that I didn't even feel coming out I gave them a fake smile

Me: "I need to buy furniture let's go to the shops" We finished lunch Thandi paid we left

Later on I was in bed just staring at the wall when Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "hey lover"

Me: "hi" my voice came out in a whisper I heard him dropping his bag and taking off his shoes he got in the bed behind me and held me in his strong arms

Nzuzo: "are we in a dark and twisty place" I didn't say anything he kissed my head "I love you my beautiful wife, you my heaven on earth my peace" he held me tightly

Me: "I love you"

Nzuzo: "wana turn around for your husband" I shook my head "I would like to see you beautiful face and those adorable dimples that makes my whole world brighter" I slowly turned for him he smiled "my little apple munch" pulled my cheek "what's wrong? You were fine when I left you in your office what happened" I sighed

Me: "I'm fine I'm not in a dark twisty place" relief washed over his face I hated it when I was in that place but he was patient he never said it just that his face couldn't hide things

Nzuzo: "good" I touched his head

Me: "how was work"

Nzuzo: "just normal baby it a good day everyday when no one dies"

Me: "yes it is"

Nzuzo: "I'm hungry I didn't have lunch"

Me: "I'll go cook"

Nzuzo: "Masisi and Akhona are already cooking"

Me: "should I make you something light" He kissed me

Nzuzo: "I'm good" I nodded "let's go to the beach"

Me: "it's late"

Nzuzo: "it's not" he said getting off the bed he pulled me up "come on" he walked to the closet holding my hand and took out my bum shorts and a tank i chuckled

Me: "you want me to wear this outside the house"

Nzuzo: "yes" I got dressed while he also changed into shorts and a tank top we wore our flip flops he took our jackets we left we went to the beach got there just in time to catch the sun setting

Me: "it's beautiful my love" he cupped my face we kissed I pulled back I wanted to watch it

Nzuzo: "I miss your dimples" he started nudging me I pushed him lightly "my apple munch and duff cake"

Me: "stop" I tried fighting my smile

Nzuzo: "gone are those day you called a shower hot rain" I turned around giggling softly he tried grabbing my hand I started running while laughing we fell as he caught me he started tickling me I laughed hard

Me: "Nzuzo stop" he didn't I was even in tears eventually he did he cupped my face

Nzuzo: "I love you" I nodded he stood up and lifted me up after he wiped the sand of himself he came to wipe it off me as well busy squeezing my ass I was just giggling non stop then he did what I was not expecting he lifted me in a speed ran to water throwing me in I got gasping for air I was soaked wet my box braids felt heavy

Me: "you beautiful idiot!!" I screamed while laughing he was also laughed

Nzuzo: "your beautiful idiot"

Me: "the water is freezing Nzuzo" he lifted me up I wrapped my legs around his waist

Nzuzo: "it's not that cold" we kissed as he slowly sank into the water until it had covered us completely after awhile he brought us out of the water I pulled back from the kiss and took a deep breath in "you too beautiful for words thembalam everything about you captives me"

Me: "stop" he smiled and gave me a soft peck then let go of me we swam a little then went home

.

It was Saturday I was taking the furniture to Dumisa and ofcos as usual Nzuzo was coming with me he never wanted me to go see my mother by myself saying she's too unpredictable and evil. We parked Nzuzo got off and started directing the delivery truck so they could park closer to the door and they did I kissed his cheek

Me: "thank you" he held my waist and kissed shortly i pulled back mom was already outside she was getting better everyday treatment was really doing her good we exchanged greetings I started

directing the people on where to put what and how to put it Nzuzo was assisting them after awhile everything was done mom was crying the house looked really nice. I had bought her a new bedroom suite then two single beds for the other room those beds that a connected by a headboard, in the lounge it was a huge L shaped black couch a red fluffy carpet with a coffee table and a tv stand with a large samsung curve screen we were just waiting for the guy who was coming to connect the dstv, in the kitchen i had built in cupboards installed so I just bought a stove and fridge and dinning table

Mom: "thank you Yamkelani I don't even know what to say" she wiped her tears with the back of her hand

Me: "just tell me you grateful and I won't come here to check on you only to find that you've sold everything" she nodded quickly

Mom: "I am very grateful and I promise you I won't sell even a single thing even these expensive plates" she said touching the plates I was putting in cupboard

Me: "then good as long as you don't make me regret this everything will be fine" I heard Nzuzo talking to someone outside so I went to check it was the dstv guy I greeted Nzuzo pulled me close to him the guy kept staring at me which was making Nzuzo angry

Me: "I'll be inside baby" I kissed his cheek

Nzuzo: "okay love" I went back in mom was looking out the window

Mom: "uneskhwele neh"

Me: "I think his entitled to it"

Mom: "maybe but it can be dangerous I hope he doesn't hit you"

Me: "Nzuzo would never hurt me"

Mom: "I used to think that about your father until he hunt me down I guess you told him about how you were raised" for the love of God it really made me angry how she couldn't say that her late boyfriend made me perform wifely duties on him in every way

Me: "you mean when I told him that you let your boyfriend rape me repeatedly" she cleared her throat looking around the kitchen "you mean how you let your daughter share a dick with you"

Mom: "Yammy ..."

Me: "just don't talk to me about my dad because he is the most sweet and gentle man ever" she nodded wiping her tears

Mom: "I'm sorry"

Me: "I'm done packing this"

Mom: "thank you everything is beautiful"

Me: "I think we going to leave now the man is already paid"

Mom: "can't you stay for a little longer"

Me: "Sorry we have plans Nzuzo's friend is hosting a braai so we have to be there"

Mom: "ok my child thank you again thank you so much"

Me: "I'll see you month end when I bring you food"

Mom: "can you bring your children with you I would like to meet them"

Me: "I will have to speak to Nzuzo first"

Mom: "okay" we walked out Nzuzo was speaking to his phone when I got to him he told whoever he was speaking to bye

Nzuzo: "you done baby"

Me: "yes" we said our goodbyes and left went to greet mam'ncane and bab'ncane we had tea and muffins mam'ncane is a great baker we left a little later going back to durban we went to the house freshened up and changed we went to his friend Mzwa's house in morning side we got there we were directed to the backyard

Mzwa: "awu the Khumalos" I smiled

Nzuzo: "sho sho mkhwane" they shoulder hug then mzwa hugged me

Mzwa: "you late"

Nzuzo: "just a little"

Mzwa: "the woman are inside Lani I'll take you to my wife"

Nzuzo: "nah she's cool with me" mzwa looked at him with that amused expression

Mzwa: "don't be a baby nzuzo"

Me: "it's fine love, please show me the way Mzwa"

Nzuzo: "I don't want you to go"

Me: "don't be a baby" Mzwa and I chuckled he took my hand we went in the house I had seen him a couple of times but never met his wife he introduced me to a group of ladies that were in the kitchen then called his wife Nonku over they went to talk outside

Me: "can I help with anything"

Nonto: "we almost done sisi so it okay" I nodded sitting down on the high chair they continued with their conversation I kinda felt out of place I wanted to take out my phone but I didn't want to look like those people when Nonku came back Nzuzo was following her he stood behind me kissed my neck

Nzuzo: "you look bored"

Me: "I'm not"

Nzuzo: "should I get you something to drink or you not drinking"

Me: "you drink I'll drive"

Nzuzo: "okay but come sit with me" he took my hand helping me get off the chair we went outside where the guys were with just 2 other girls Nzuzo introduced me to everyone then sat down I sat on his lap "I love you" I kissed his forehead

Me: "I love you"

Vusi: "you such a woman Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "for my wife yeah"

Gcina: "emotional freak"

Pearl: "I think it sweet"

Mzwa: "you like sweet things" he pulled her close quickly gave her a short wet kiss I looked at Nzuzo confused because this person has a wife inside

Nzuzo: "people's marriages differ baby we will talk at home" he whispered then gave me a soft peck

Me: "yoh ku tough out here" he chuckled we chilled after awhile Nonku and the other girls came out she went to sit on her husband's lap the night went on beautifully

.

Monday morning I woke up Nzuzo was asleep he wasn't working I kissed his lips went to shower got out lotioned got dressed in a black pencil skirt a tucked in maroon shirt with maroon ankle strap heel tied my braids into a bun took my bags I walked out the closet I shook Nzuzo a little

Nzuzo: "love"

Me: "I'm leaving I love you"

Nzuzo: "love you too" we kissed I left got to work ordered breakfast the day went on after a couple of hours Sthe and I were walking around the hospital looking for ways to cut on the money we got to the surgery floor I thought my eyes were deceiving me when I saw Enhle wearing a nurses uniform

Me: "excuse me sthe" I walked to her "Minenhle" she turned

Enhle: "Dr Khumalo hi"

Me: "what are you doing here"

Enhle: "I work here"

Me: "why? I mean since when?"

Enhle: "a little over a month now I'm nurse and the pay is good here" she smiled that devilish smile of hers

Me: "out of all the departments around the hospital you just had to be here in Nzuzo's department"

Enhle: "feeling threatened? You know this is where we met before I got pregnant I worked here we had sex almost in every private surface around here"

Me: "okay Minenhle play your game if you want but I am honestly bored by you bra what's the deal don't you get approached by man after all these years you still running after my husband so do what you want to do baby girl and we will see where it gets you"

Enhle: "whatever"

Me: "don't make me make your life miserable around here" I turned to walk away

Enhle: "Lani!"

Me: "bye Felicia"

PART 56

I was honestly furious I tried to hide my anger the rest of the day work went on as normal 16:00 couldn't come earlier I packed and went home I was welcomed by my 3 babies as usual I kissed their cheeks then carried Sphe

Pancake: "mommy Liam pooped himself"

Liam: "she is lying" he pushed her

Pancake: "yes you did"

Liam: "did not!!" He pushed her harder she started crying

Me: "Liam do not make your sister cry" I put my bags down carried pancake as well

Liam: "I'm sorry pancake didn't mean to make you cry"

Pancake: "it's okay"

Me: "now what happened" Liam looked down

Liam: "I didn't mean to mom the toilet was too far"

Me: "so you messed yourself up" he nodded

Liam: "Cleo gave me castor oil I'm sorry mommy"

Me: "it's okay big boy" I kissed his head then put pancake and Sphe down they ran off with Sphe busy knocking his walker on the wall I went pass the lounge greeted then went up to my room

Nzuzo: "baby is home" he was watching tv

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "uryt? What's wrong?"

Me: "why didn't you tell me Enhle works at your department" I put my bags down started taking off my pants

Nzuzo: "I didn't think it was important baby" I sat on the bed he pulled me to sit between his legs

Me: "when were you going to tell me"

Nzuzo: "I don't know babe I really didn't pay any mind to it I'm sorry if it upsets you"

Me: "you should have told me Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "yes I should have and I'm seriously sorry my love I didn't think it was important to you"

Me: "okay" he held my chin making me turn so I could look at him

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" he whispered before gently kissing me I pulled back "you mad at me?"

Me: "a heads up would have been nice"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry baby, what can I do to make it right"

Me: "nothing" he moved from behind me came to kneel between my legs

Nzuzo: "please don't be insecure about Enhle actually about any other woman out there, I'm your husband in every way baby and I am really sorry I didn't tell you I seriously saw no reason because she doesn't affect us baby I'm sorry"

Me: "I'm sorry I'm being stupid" I kissed him he kissed me back harder pushing me to lay on the bed I pushed him back when he deepened the kiss

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "I had a crazy day at work I'm not in the mood"

Nzuzo: "okay baby" we kissed shortly then cuddled watching tv

Me: "how was your day"

Nzuzo: "was good spent time with the kids had a tea party with pancake and melen and Abby" her dolls I giggled "apparently Tyra is fighting with Abby so she wasn't invited to the tea party"

Me: "Tyra is always mean so I'm not surprised"

Nzuzo: "Tyra said Abby's hair is ugly" we laughed

Me: "see! I told you she's mean baby"

Nzuzo: "I took Sphe for a hair cut"

Me: "I noticed he looks very cute just like his daddy"

Nzuzo: "are you saying I'm cute mrs Khumalo" I nodded giggling

Me: "you know you cute"

Nzuzo: "babies and puppies are cute"

Me: "and you"

Nzuzo: "you tell me"

Me: "you are hot"

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "you such a sucker for compliments" his phone rang he reached for it and declined the call

Nzuzo: "only when it comes to you baby only for you"

Me: "why did you decline that call"

Nzuzo: "nobody is important when we together" I kissed his chin

Me: "you love me"

Nzuzo: "you love me" a soft knock came through "go away!!"

Pancake: "phephe wants mom" Nzuzo looked at me

Nzuzo: "she's lying"

Me: "I know" I went to the closet while he went to get the door I got dressed in Nzuzo's boxers and vests I went out Sphe and Liam and pancake were in bed

Me: "I thought only Sphe wanted mommy" pancake giggled

Liam: "we missed you"

Sphe: "mamam" he smiled I got on the bed and took him

Me: "how's my little boy" I tickled him he laughed

We had the most adorable children ever!

Liam: "daddy open Cartoon Network"

Pancake: "new crew!!"

Nzuzo: "there's a tv downstairs I'm watching Fitz"

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "fine" he opened the cartoons we just watched cartoons

.

Few days later it was Friday I got back from work I was met by suitcases in my room the first thing that came to my mind was that he is leaving me again

Me: "baby!"

Nzuzo: "closet" I walked there

Me: "what's with the suitcases"

Nzuzo: "we leaving" I looked at him puzzled "Mauritius"

Me: "hhu"

Nzuzo: "that honeymoon we never went to" he held my waist "we take off in 2 hours"

Me: "uhm I ... Wow!" He kissed me hard and short

Nzuzo: "yes baby"

Me: "you the best"

Nzuzo: "you make it easy go shower quickly"

Me: "how long will we be gone we have work"

Nzuzo: "just a week I spoke to sthe and hr"

Me: "you amazing" I kissed him and ran to take a quick shower I got out lotioned got dressed in black nike joggers and a matching sweater with white superstars I tied my weave into a messy bun.

I got downstairs Nzuzo was loading our bags I picked up Sphe while pancake wrapped her body around my leg

Me: "love what did you pack for me"

Nzuzo: "lot of tiny strings" I chuckled

Me: "I'm serious"

Nzuzo: "Masisi packed for you"

Pancake: "mommy don't go"

Nzuzo: "pancake we spoke about this"

Pancake: "I don't want her to go daddy don't make me" Nzuzo laughed

Nzuzo: "don't make you what"

Pancake: "I don't know" I smiled and lifted her up

Me: "where is Liam"

Pancake: "sleeping"

Nzuzo: "let's go baby" I went back in the lounge put the kids down pancake started crying Masisi took her I said my goodbyes to everyone and sandile drove us to the airport.

We got there went straight to sleep in our bungalow it was on the sea.

I woke up at night Nzuzo was still asleep I went to stand outside the place was amazingly beautiful the lightening and the way the stars were reflecting on the water, I walked down the stairs sat on the bottom putting my feet on the water it was nice and warm "baby" I looked up he was standing there

Nzuzo: "come up baby they going to bring us dinner soon" I nodded and went up

Me: "it's beautiful out here baby can't wait for the sun to come up"

Nzuzo: "you beautiful" he kissed me I deepened the kiss grabbing his cock he moaned and lifted me up he started biting my neck while walking into the room he threw me on the bed I bounced a little giggling "if we start this now we going to be disturbed by food"

Me: "plus I am starving so we should wait" he nodded and got between my legs

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" we kissed just kissed until our food came we ate. The minute we finished he pulled me by my leg I giggled

Nzuzo: "this has been a very long week" we started kissing he took off my tank top he kissed my neck slowly while playing with my breasts squeezing them he moved from my neck went to my one boob circles his tongue around my nipple before sucking it in I let out a soft moan he went to the other boob did the same he went down kissing every part of my body making me squirm when he got to my legs he flipped me over and squeezed my ass before running his tongue up my leg to my inner thigh that he gave a bite I cried my body was sensitive to his every touch he spanked me before biting that very same spot I cried out he kneeled then lifted me up wrapping my legs around his neck then indulged my vjaja

.

We had amazing week we spent most of it making love in the water, sightseeing learning about the culture Nzuzo rented a car we drove around even bought street food, we took up surfing and it was not as much fun I hurt my ankle.

We got at home Saturday night everyone was asleep I went over checking and kissing my babies's foreheads then we slept.

It was Tuesday we were still asleep we both had a day off when Nzuzo's phone rang I shook him

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "your phone" he checked the screen

Nzuzo: "it Enhle I'll call her in the later" he pulled me closer kissing my head, my phone rang it was Enhle

Me: "it Enhle" he took my phone

Nzuzo: "hello Fuck Enhle what happened" he said getting off the bed "I'm coming" he dropped the call

Me: "what happened"

Nzuzo: "oluhle was knocked by a car the ambulance just took her to work" I followed him to the closet we got dressed

Me: "I'm driving"

Nzuzo: "Lani" he warned

Me: "yes" I grabbed his amg car keys while he took his phone we ran to the garage I drove off Nzuzo was shaking when we got to the hospital he ran to the casualty while I found parking I got in there just in time to watch my husband trembling down and Enhle's high pitched voice with Dr Cyrus apologized I read between lines and found my own hands shaking I covered my mouth with my hand I was about to go kneel next to Nzuzo when he pulled Enhle to him they cried together Enhle held onto his t-shirt sobbing loudly while Nzuzo tried assuring her that everything will be fine his got her they will get through this together I just stood there not knowing what to do

PART 57

I went to kneel next to them

Me: "we need to take Enhle home then pick up Thando" Nzuzo nodded "I'll go get the car" I stood up and walked out my heart was hurting I loved Oluhle as much as she had her mother's attitude she was still Nzuzo's daughter and I loved her I got to the parking started the car drove to causality entrance they were standing there Nzuzo opened the door for Enhle he closed it after she got in then he came to my side

Nzuzo: "go on I have things I need to sort out"

Me: "no Nzuzo get in please Enhle needs you right now and Thando is going to need you even more whatever you need to sort out will happen tomorrow if it urgent I can handle it but please they need you not me" he looked back at Enhle she was crying silently "please Mntungwa" he nodded and went to get in I drove off started at Enhle's home Thando was sitting outside crying she launched herself at me when she saw us I held her tightly

Me: "it's okay baby"

Thando: "she's going to be okay right mom" I put her down then kneeled in front of her

Me: "how about you let daddy talk to you and I'll go pack your bag so we can go home" I wiped her tears then kissed her forehead she went to Nzuzo he lifted her up we got in the house "you should also pack a bag Enhle I don't think it's okay for you to stay alone right now"

I know what you guys are thinking but there's no way I was about to let her stay alone and give them a chance to grieve here together I'd rather have her under my roof where I know she won't get a chance to turn this into something more

Enhle: "thank you but I'll be fine I am call Noni"

Me: "I insist you family and we all need to be together right now" she nodded went to her room Thando was still crying she didn't even know her twin was dead I went to her room started packing her bag I was packing her shoes when I heard her high pitched cry then she started shouting I went out to the lounge

Enhle: "Thando baby come on"

Thando: "I hate you! This is all your fault"

Nzuzo: "Thando do not blame your mother it nobody's fault"

Thando: "it is daddy and I hate her"

Me: "Thando" she looked at me and let out a whimper "come" she walked to me i lifted her put her on my back I finished packing for then called for Nzuzo he took her bag Enhle was sitting in the lounge crying I put Thando down "go to the car with your dad okay" she nodded and went out I went to sit next to Enhle "I don't know what to say Minenhle because I don't understand your pain I've never felt your kind of pain but I did love Oluhle like my own and I know Thando is just hurting but she doesn't hate you she could never hate you you her mother" she nodded "let's go" she stood up Nzuzo was in the driver's seat I stood next to the door

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "baby"

Nzuzo: "please don't start" I opened the door he sighed then got out I got in

Thando: "don't touch me!!!"

Enhle: "I'm sorry" I drove off when we got home Liam and pancake screamed they were happy to see Thando

Liam: "where's lulu" Thando just ran upstairs crying "I'm sorry mommy I didn't mean to make her cry"

Me: "it's okay big boy you didn't do anything" he nodded "go on go play" they disappeared I called Cleo asked her to show Enhle a guest room luckily Akhona had left I went out to the car Nzuzo hadn't gotten off I went in "baby"

Nzuzo: "she killed my child Yamkelani"

Me: "no she didn't"

Nzuzo: "she did!! She should have been protecting them but she hit her with a car"

Okay that I didn't know!!

Me: "baby I'm sure she didn't mean to come let's get in so I can feed you and you can rest you need the energy"

Nzuzo: "she was just running after her because they wanted bread Lani just bread! And she drove over her" he cried I jumped over the gear and sat on him I held his head he squeezed tightly crying "I hate her baby I hate her so badly and I want my daughter with me"

Me: "it's okay I'm here no matter what you need just tell me I'll make it happen"

Nzuzo: "can you take away the pain"

Me: "I can make it better for now" he kissed my breast "come let me take you to bed" he nodded we got off the car went up when we got in our room he picked me up we kissed I pulled his t-shirt "daddy" I pulled out the kiss Thando was sitting on our bed I jumped off her dad

Thando: "I'm sorry my room makes me sad" I sighed and went to bed I pulled her close to me she started crying again "mom it hurts so bad" I kissed her head

Me: "you know when it hurts just think about Oluhle and know that she's here" I pointed at her heart "she will always be here you know she is a part of you a huge part of you and she will always be with you forever and always"

Thando: "mom killed her she killed my sister she's always shouting at us and now she killed her"

Me: "baby she didn't kill her she would never hurt you or your sister okay don't say that and remember sometimes I also shout at you when you wrong" she nodded "it's because I love you and I want you to be a good girl so does your mom"

Thando: "I love you too" she got out of my arms "daddy" he looked away sniffing then turned to look at her

Nzuzo: "yes baby"

Thando: "are you also sad"

Nzuzo: "yes" she nodded he came to bed we all laid down I stayed with them while they cried silently until they fell asleep I got off the bed went to check on Enhle she was also asleep i went downstairs found Masisi and Thandi watching tv

Masisi: "why is the evil witch in your house"

Me: "Oluhle passed away" they gasped "yes Enhle drove over her I'm not sure of the details"

Thandi: "mercy!!"

Masisi: "how can she do that"

Me: "let's not be judgmental it was a mistake"

Thandi: "oh God"

Me: "please call mah Thandi and let them know"

Thandi: "okay" she took her phone I went to the kitchen made some food for Nzuzo and Thando I put it in the oven then went to bath then got in bed.

I was woken up by someone slapping lightly I opened my eyes found Thando she was carrying pancake

Pancake: "wake up mommy come on wake up"

Me: "I'm up what's wrong"

Pancake: "I want you"

Me: "but I'm sleeping" she frowned I got off the bed "where is daddy"

Thando: "he left"

Me: "ok go I'm coming" they left I called Justin told him what happened and that he needs to bring Avery home then I went to check on Enhle she was with Noni crying

Me: "do you need anything"

Noni: "no we fine" she spoke with an attitude I raised my eyebrow

Enhle: "no thank you Lani but I'm okay now I'll be leaving can Thando please stay"

Noni: "you want her to kill Thando as well ?!!!"

Me: "excuse me"

Enhle: "Noni please I don't have the energy" I walked out I went downstairs

Me: "where is Nzuzo"

Thandi: "he went home"

Me: "did he eat"

Thandi: "no" I sat down with a sigh

Me: "I don't know how to help him" Masisi brushed my back I looked at her biting my lip I wanted to cry "Noni thinks some how I killed Oluhle" I just cried

Thandi: "she's fucking crazy" she said standing up

Me: "please don't thandiwe"

Thandi: "no she can't come here in your house and make crazy accusations" I put my head on masisi's laps her stomach was getting huge

Masisi: "don't cry sis"

Me: "I'm hungry" she chuckled

Thandi: "I cooked steam bread and ushu" I sat up wiping my tears

Me: "please dish up for me and save some for your brother"

Thandi: "okay" she went out

.

The following day I was woken up by my phone ringing I answered

Me: "hello mah"

Aunt: "hello Yammy just wanted to ask when will you and the kids be coming home"

Me: "today mah"

Aunt: "okay Enhle came yesterday she's sitting on the mattress and now the other elders are coming today I need help sandile says his wife can't come today she will only come friday"

Me: "I'll come mah I'll be there in two hours"

Aunt: "okay" she dropped the call I looked besides me Nzuzo was asleep I don't even know when he came home I woke up went downstairs prepared breakfast for everyone then I woke up everyone we ate Cleo and Gugu got the kids ready I had emailed Hr last night after everyone was done we all left besides Masisi taking two cars with since we were going to be busy we also took Cloe and Gugu with us.

Those two days were just cold Nzuzo kept to himself and it broke my heart to see him like that Thando was always with pancake who had no idea what was going on along with Liam, Avery was just like his father he only cried when we told him that Oluhle passed away after that he hardly said a word to anyone he just followed Nzuzo around.

It was Friday I woke up went to the main house I started on making breakfast mam'ncane woke up and helped me when it was done I prepared bathing water for Nzuzo took it to him he took a bath while I ironed his clothes all in silence he finished up I went to get his breakfast the other women were already serving everyone

Nzuzo: "thank you baby" I put it on the coffee table he pulled me to sit on his lap

Me: "I need to go clean up so we could go to the shops"

Nzuzo: "eat with me" I nodded we shared his food in silence when we were done eating we kissed he started kissing my neck i unbuttoned his shirt and sat on him with my legs spread out he pulled "bab'ncane said I shouldn't it's not right for now" I nodded

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "but I really want you right now" he pressed his erection on me I giggled

Me: "sorry" someone knocked

Nzuzo: "yeah"

Pancake: "daddy" I got off him went to open the door our kids were standing

Me: "get in" Avery was carrying Sphe they all got in

Avery: "we want to speak to dad"

Nzuzo: "what's wrong" I left them there went to clean the main house mam'dala came in while I was washing dishes

Her: "you always working but I heard you brought your maids with you"

Me: "to look after the kids mah not do what I'm supposed to be doing"

Her: "you spoiling actually nzuzo is spoiling you yazi you finishing his money on stupid things" I just nodded "did you bake" mam'ncane got in

Aunt: "I bake I always bake what do you want from Yammy" she giggled uncomfortably

Her: "hayi me and the woman outside wanted tea and scones"

Aunt: "you know where everything is do it yourself. Yammy bath so we can go buy groceries we need to be back before the body arrives"

Me: "okay" i went out going to our back room nzuzo was still there with his kids I took a bath in the bedroom they were all in the lounge watching tv in silence I got dressed in a maroon long sleeve 3 quarter dress with maroon ankle boot I tied my weave in a ponytail then I went out

Nzuzo: "where you going"

Me: "scottburgh buy groceries"

Nzuzo: "should I leave the card with you"

Me: "no I got it" he nodded he stood up

Nzuzo: "Avery if you leave here make sure it locked okay"

Avery: "okay" we walked out I put my head on him he held my waist

Nzuzo: "we late bab'ncane sent for me an hour ago I just can't get myself to go" I stopped walking so did he I just hugged him we hugged for a very long time he kissed my head "I'm fine it not the time later when we get home" I nodded and stood on my toes we kissed shortly then went to the main house I waited for Thandi to finish up then we left me her and mam'ncane Nzuzo had already left with the uncles and Enhle we got to Scottburgh did the groceries then left when we got home Sandile's wife and Noni were cooking they were too friendly with each other Thandi looked at me I just shrugged my shoulders i just went to Nzuzo's back room the kids were asleep only Avery was up watching soccer

Me: "you guys ate"

Avery: "yeah" I nodded left my bag then went to the main house.

A little later the haze came with Nzuzo driving behind it he got off they carried the small coffin to the hut Nzuzo's eyes were bloodshot red we had a short service then I went to help in the house.

Late at night we chopped and prepared to cook early in the morning I went to bed at 01:00 nzuzo was already asleep he just pulled me to him we slept

.

I woke at 05:00 we started cooking I made the curries at 08:00 we were done with the pots we made breakfast for everyone I had already given nzuzo water to bath and got his black slim fit suit out ironed his white shirt after serving people I went to bath I got dressed in black turtle neck dress and black heels I left my weave lose we had the service in the tent it didn't take long after it we went to where she was going to be buried it was in the yard they had to put Thando in the grave first when sandile held her she started screaming and crying

Thando: "I don't want to let me go uncle let me go mom make him stop please make him stop dadddddyy" it was heartbreaking I hadn't cried at all but that made me cry so bad she was crying inside the grave when sandile took her out she ran to me I lifted her we just cried I went to my room she wouldn't stop crying her body was shaking I held her until her loud cries turned silent eventually she fell asleep I covered her with a blanket then went out locking her in they were serving people i made

sure dad Justin and Masisi have food then went to look for Nzuzo I ran into my mom by the gate she was leaving I called Nzuzo his phone went straight to voicemail his car was gone and no one knew where he was.

Nzuzo came back at night people had left you couldn't even tell there was a funeral earlier on we had cleaned he was drunk I was in bed with Thando and Sphe when he got in he got out the bedroom I waited for him to come back but he didn't I got off the bed went to the lounge he was passed out on the couch I took off his shoes and covered him with a blanket just stared at a little then I went back to bed I just pulled my kids close and fell straight asleep I was exhausted

PART 58

I woke up in the morning the kids were still asleep I went out the bedroom Nzuzo was still passed out in the couch I went to the main house I boiled water for soft porridge mixed the maize when it was cooking I made Nzuzo coffee I shook him

Me: "baby"

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "I got you coffee" he sat up

Nzuzo: "thank you mfazi wam" he took it and kissed my cheek I went back in the main started cleaning by the time I was done the kids and mam'ncane were up I dished up she took her husband's porridge to him I took Nzuzo's to his back room he was asleep

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "baby"

Me: "would you like soft porridge it still hot I got you fresh lemon" he opened his eyes they were red

Nzuzo: "I want to sleep please"

Me: "just eat a little then you can sleep I'll make sure no one disturbs you" he sat up and started to eat I sat next to him I watched him until he finished

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry I should have called I needed to be alone" I sighed and took the dish "Yamkelani"

Me: "yes"

Nzuzo: "it won't happen again I'm sorry"

Me: "where did you go"

Nzuzo: "this place in Mzinto called Plaza"

Me: "okay" I got off the bed

Nzuzo: "please don't shut me out I'm sorry"

Me: "just please be vulnerable with me cry with me it's okay to let me be the strong one for now you can be strong out there in front of people if need be but when we are in our bedroom it's okay to tremble down to cry loudly I'll be here being strong for you as you've been strong for me all these years just do not turn into alcohol please because the only thing it will do is waste your money and give you a hangover" he nodded "sleep"

Nzuzo: “come sleep with me” I went to leave the dish in the lounge locked the door then went to bed he pulled me to him covering my body with his his “I love you” he kissed my head I kissed his chest

It was a little later when I was woken up by a knock I tried getting out of Nzuzo’s body that was wrapped around me without waking him but he woke up

Nzuzo: “we sleeping!!”

?????: “mkhulu is calling you two maka Oluhle’s family is leaving”

Nzuzo: “we coming”

?????: “okay bab’omdala” he got off the bed got dressed in joggers and tank top with flip flops

Nzuzo: “let’s go” I got off the bed he took my hand we went to the main house Enhle’s family was there with bab’ncane and mam’ncane we sat down

Her dad: “we just wanted to thank you all for your hospitality”

Uncle: “you and your family are welcomed here any day it would have been better if we had not gotten together under such circumstances”

Her dad: “yes but now we must ask to leave” her mother cleared her throat “oh yes as we talking our daughter with us we would like to take our granddaughter as well”

Uncle: “Nzuzo?”

Nzuzo: “they can leave with their daughter but my daughter is not going anywhere”

Her dad: “we understand that you angry because of all these feelings you might have towards Minenhle but Thando is her daughter not your wife’s daughter and she needs her mother”

Nzuzo: “my child is not going anywhere why must she go with the very same woman who killed her sister” Enhle let out a muffled sob

Enhle: “Nzuzo please” he stood up and walked out

Her mom: “yerrrr this boy is rude”

Aunt: “Yammy”

Me: “I’ll speak to him mah but for now he is angry and Thando is also angry she won’t want to go right now but I can assure you he won’t take her away from you Enhle just leave her with us for now”

Noni: “why so you can kill her as well you witch !!”

Uncle: “girl you will not raise your voice in my house and you will certainly not disrespect my daughter in front of me”

Noni: “she killed her we all know that”

Me: “have a safe journey and excuse me” I walked out quickly I breathed hard when I got outside I held myself trying to fight my tears but I lost they came out fast and hard I mean how long was it going to take until people started listening or actually believing Noni and I’ll be known like the lady who performed some witchcraft and got her husband’s daughter killed “mommy why you crying” I looked down it was Liam I wiped my tears

Me: “I got sad in my eyes Liam”

Liam: "let me blow it out" I smiled and kneeled next to him he blew in my eyes "there we go now you going to feel better" I kissed his forehead

Me: "thank you big boy now go play" he went away hooping I went to Nzuzo he was back in bed "love"

Nzuzo: "she's not taking my daughter I'll sue her for full custody if need be"

Me: "sit up and look at me" he did I stood between his legs "I love you" I kissed him he kissed me back slowly

Nzuzo: "I love you too"

Me: "she just lost Oluhle she's in an amount of that can not be explained you know the pain you are feeling times it by 3 she drove over her daughter and she died the very same daughter she carried and mothered for nine years baby if you take Thando away from her she will fall apart it bad enough that she has to go back to a house where everything will remind her of Oluhle every aspect of her day to day activities she will see Oluhle she won't be able to run away from the memories her whole life was about those two girls she just lost one of them she can't lose Thando as well baby she will never recover if she does. Please sthandwa sam please Mntungwa do not make her suffer like this let her get a little used to Oluhle not being around then we can take Thando"

Nzuzo: "I hear you thembalam" we kissed he pulled me up to the bed getting on top of me he took off my dress and bit my neck I cried out softly he kissed me from my jaw line going down while taking my underwear off I bit my inner thighs hard making me squeal he put my thighs on his shoulders then took me to muff town sliding his tongue in and out after coming he took off his clothes and entered me deeply going in all at once my body jerked he pushed back my weave

Nzuzo: "I couldn't have asked for a better wife Yamkelani you a blessing in my life thank you for loving me" we kissed and he started moving

.

It was the following week sunday when we went back to our house Reign Dad and Justin had left the kids were going back to school on Monday we had been grieving but life wasn't waiting for us we had to go back to work. We went home everyone went to settle in their rooms I went to Thando's room she was sitting on Oluhle's bed crying I got on the bed and held her she was really not dealing with this well if she was not crying she was with her siblings

Thando: "it hurts mom I want her back"

Me: "it will get better I promise you"

Thando: "I don't want it to get better I want her back mom we have to go take her out of that hole she doesn't like the dark and that place is dark she can't see anything" she cried harder my own tears fell

Me: "please stop crying baby please you get sick" she shook her head

Thando: "I don't care it should have been me not her I told her I'll go ask for the bread but she ran out because we heard the car driving off I should have gone out before mom got in the car"

Me: "it nobody's fault Thandolwethu you know how God has Angels right"

Thando: "yes to protect us"

Me: "yes he needed more Angels that why he took Oluhle and now you have your very own Angel that loves you so much and will make sure you never ever get hurt because she will always be there fighting away the evil" she nodded

Thando: "Oluhle is an Angel?"

Me: "a beautiful Angel looking down on you protecting you and loving you"

Thando: "she's protecting pancake as well and Liam and Avery and Sphe you and daddy"

Me: "yes all of us and your mom as well she's our Angel and she will always be in our hearts"

Thando: "okay"

Me: "do you want me to change your room"

Thando: "no leave it like this"

Me: "okay but daddy is going to take you back to your mom now" she shook her head

Thando: "no! I don't want to please don't make me go I want to stay here please"

Me: "baby your mom needs you for now you know like how Oluhle is our angel you are also your mom's angel and she needs her Angel with her to help her and to love her always she really misses you and Oluhle she loves you so much and she needs you to make her happy. You like it when you mom is happy right"

Thando: "yes"

Me: "she needs you to make her happy"

Thando: "okay I'll go"

Me: "okay good now go daddy is waiting for you and I will come get you on Friday okay"

Thando: "okay" she hugged me tightly I held her tighter kissing her forehead the door opened Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "ready to go Thando"

Thando: "yes daddy" he took her bag then carried her

Nzuzo: "I'll be back soon" he gave me a soft peck and they left I went to my room where I sat and sat for hours watching tv waiting for Nzuzo his phone was ringing unanswered I didn't want to annoy him I eventually fell asleep.

I woke up in the morning he was passed out next to me dressed in what he was wearing yesterday stinking of alcohol I just sighed went to shower I got out woke him up

Nzuzo: "mmh"

Me: "you have work" he nodded and went to bath I made the bed opened the windows then went to get dressed he got in the closet as I was finishing up

Nzuzo: "can you make me an omelet please put some chillies in it and those diced mutton sausages"

Me: "cheese"

Nzuzo: "nah" I nodded tied my hair "coffee strong and black" I went out with my bags left them on the counter Avery and Nosi were having cereal I made his omelet he came down when I was putting it in the plate he took his coffee I watched him going to the bar he poured little bit of Jameson in it I just looked at him

Me: "should we wait for you"

Nzuzo: "no go I'll need the car I have a late shift"

Me: "let's go kids" we took our bags and left I dropped them off then went to work in the middle of the day Gugu texted me a list of things we were out of at home so after work I went pass pick n pay bought what I needed to when I was taking out my wallet to pay it fell just as I was picking it up someone touched my hand while trying to pick it up I looked at the person it was some guy he just smiled

Me: "thank you" I took my wallet and paid

Guy: "Lani" I looked at him while pushing the trolley "can I help you with that"

Me: "how do you know my name"

Guy: "wow! I'm Lusanda we met weeks back in Yadini"

Me: "oh jah I remember"

Lusanda: "so can I"

Me: "no I'm good" I opened the boot

Lusanda: "nice car it's powerful I got the same but in blue it looks better in black though" I was driving my x6 it was black

Me: "thank you my husband bought it for me" he chuckled while loading my plastics in the boots

Lusanda: "can I have your number please I am seriously begging you it's the 3rd time now I'll go on my knees if need be please"

Me: "I am married"

Lusanda: "and I'm engaged I just want friendship my fiancé and I just moved we here from new castle we in need of friends" I gave him my card

Me: "she calls not you"

Lusanda: "as you wish dr Khumalo. Mmh cfo of st Augustine hospital fancy"

Me: "don't be extra" I closed the boot

Lusanda: "let me let you go"

Me: "bye" he opened the door for me I got in

Lusanda: "see ya dr Khumalo" he closed the door and backed away I reversed from the parking and drove off. I got home Cloe helped me with the plastics I left her in the kitchen went to change into leggings and a sport bra then went downstairs found the kids watching cartoons Avery and was busy on his iPad I went to the kitchen took out some frozen hakes left it to defrost while I warmed myself pie poured juice then went to eat in front of the tv. Later I cooked we had dinner watched tv I tucked

in the kids after checking on Avery and Nosi's homeworks then I went to my room I called Nzuzo but he didn't answer I just fell asleep.

I was woken up by Nzuzo getting into bed it 04:35 he was kak drunk

.

3 weeks went by it was the same thing he left home in the morning and came back drunk in the early hours of morning he went to work drunk on several occasions on the weekends it was worse he left Fridays and came back early Monday morning I just didn't know what to do.

This day I was at work and Steven came to my office because Nzuzo had operated on some man while he had been drinking the man died he said I should talk to Nzuzo because next time it happens he will speak to the chief and Hr will be brought in he might lose his job I thanked him for not talking to the chief i assured him that it won't happen again I called Nzuzo

Nzuzo: "mfazi wam I'm busy" he sounded as if his in a toilet

Me: "where are you"

Nzuzo: "at work"

Me: "come to my office"

Nzuzo: "eish I'm busy mani Lani yin kanti"

Me: "can you come home early today"

Nzuzo: "yeah sure" he dropped the call I just wasn't in the mood anymore i packed up it was already 15:00 an hour before knock of time I left I got home home changed into yoga pants a sport bra and Nike roshers I took my iPod and car keys drove to the gym where I spent two hours then I went back home took a cold shower then cooked dinner we had dinner without Nzuzo as usual the kids had even stopped asking where he is after dinner we watched tv then they went to bath later I tucked them in. I got in my room went over some emails I had an email from Luanda the past weeks he had been calling and texting or sending me emails daily but I ignored him because I specifically told him that his fiancé should call me not him. I was watching a repeat of E! News when Nzuzo got in it was after 12:00 I couldn't sleep he was drunk

Me: "Nzuzo I asked you to come earlier"

Nzuzo: "don't even nag me"

Me: "Nzuzo what is going on with you Steven came to my office you operated on someone's brain while you had been drinking"

Nzuzo: "are you fucking Steven?! Why is he coming to you with things that don't concern you? Hhu Yamkelani?!!!" He just got extremely angry he pulled me by my leg when I got off the bed I pushed him off

Me: "don't you dare touch me like that Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "are you fucking Steven"

Me: "ofcos not. Nzuzo what is happening to you baby you falling apart let me help you" I tried touching his face but he pushed me away

Nzuzo: "don't you fucking touch me!!!! I just came home all I want is food and some pussy" he pushed me to the bed and got on top of me

Me: "Nzuzo get off me mani" he spread my legs using his hips I started crying "Nzuzo get off me" he ripped my pj top off I cried louder "Nzuzo fuck off!!!!"

Nzuzo: "you don't want me because you fucking Steven" he looked at me I couldn't stop crying he got off me I held my torn top together my body was shaking "I Uhm ... I'm sorry" he walked over the couch and passed out I just cried myself to sleep

.

The following day when I woke up he was gone. He didn't come back home for two days. When he finally showed up I was asleep it was Saturday morning I woke up when I felt him getting under the covers I went back to sleep I woke up later on he was standing outside the balcony with a beer on his hand I went to him

Me: "hi"

Nzuzo: "sho" I looked at him he had a huge bite mark on his neck I just felt defeated I didn't even know what to say I went back in took a shower while crying I stayed in the water until the hot water ran out I got out got dressed in leggings and a tank top I went back to bed

Nzuzo: "I'll be back"

Me: "are you cheating on me"

Nzuzo: "don't start with shit Yamkelani"

Me: "it's not shit when it real" he walked to the closet I followed him "nzuzo answer me who are you fucking!!"

Nzuzo: "don't shout at me I'm not your child"

Me: "fuck you Nzuzo what do you want from me!!" I yelled with tears running down my face

Nzuzo: "I'm out of her I don't have time for this"

Me: "go on Nzuzo Khumalo go destroy your life even further go fuck random bitches and see if I care but I'm sure Oluhle is proud of you wh..." I didn't even finish my sentence he slapped me so hard I tasted blood in my mouth "fuck you nzuzo" he slapped me again this time I went flying I hit the wall and fell he lifted me up holding my jaw tightly he raised me up with my back pressing on the wall

Nzuzo: "count your words when you speak to me Yamkelani because I will kill you" he threw me on the wall as if I'm a piece of paper I hit shoulder and fell on my face he walked I stayed on the floor crying loudly after awhile I stood up went to the mirror my shoulder was seriously aching it was navy I gasped only to regret it pain shot from my jaw straight to all over my body my forehead was getting swollen I just locked the door and went to bed after taking pain medication I cried myself to sleep.

I was woken up by my phone it was ringing non stop the room was dark guess I slept the whole day it was a landline I answered

Me: "hello"

Caller: "mrs Khumalo"

Me: "yes"

Caller: "I am calling from parkland hospital regarding your husband there has been an accident..."

PART 59

Me: "is he dead?"

Caller: "no ma'am he crashed his car on the wall"

Me: "was he alone in the car"

Caller: "yes ma'am"

Me: "is there anything you need from me"

Caller: "just admin thing ma'am"

Me: "is he badly hurt"

Caller: "no ma'am"

Me: "then he will do the admin now please excuse me I'd like to go back to sleep"

Caller: "aah Uhm ... Yes ma'am"

Me: "call me if he dies"

Caller: "okay" I dropped the call and went back to sleep.

I spent Sunday in my room as well I texted Masisi to bring me food and to drive Thando home.

.

Monday I woke up took a shower my shoulder was still hurting and navy but it was a little better after showering i lotioned then got dressed in a black boyfriend jean and black shirt with white ankle strap heel after putting ice on my forehead yesterday it got better I took my bag and went downstairs Avery and Nosi were having breakfast I made myself cereal and sat down

Avery: "are you okay you locked yourself in your room the whole weekend"

Me: "I'm okay"

Nosi: "I had a form that needed to be signed for excursions but sisi Sne signed it"

Me: "okay baby"

Nosi: "your eyes are red sisi are you okay" Avery looked at me i quickly looked down

Me: "yes let's go"

Avery: "his making you cry again isn't he"

Me: "no"

Avery: "are you two divorcing is that he is never home"

Me: "what am I to you Phiwokuhle"

Avery: "my mother"

Me: "what does that mean" he clenched his jaw

Avery: "I don't get to ask you questions about your relationship with dad" he stood up took his bag "I'll be in the car" he grabbed my car keys from the counter

Me: "eat up Nosi"

Nosi: "I'm done" she took their dishes to the sink then took her bag leaving I went to put my dish in the sink followed them out Avery was sitting in the drivers seat playing music loudly he knew how to drive his father had been teaching him I got in the passenger side he drove off dropped off Nosi then he drove to his school we both got off

Me: "come here"

Avery: "please not in front of the learners" I fixed his blazer wiped his face "mom!" I gave him a soft peck

Me: "I love you"

Avery: "I love you too" he started walking towards the gate I got in the car and drove to work. Time flew by I got so buried in my work Sthe knocked and got in

Sthe: "you have a visitor a mr lusanda Sobukwe"

Me: "let him through"

Sthe: "okay" he went out I stood up pulled down my dress Lusanda got in carrying take away bag from mugg n bean

Lusanda: "hey"

Me: "hi, sit please" I pointed to the couch we went to sit down he put the paper bag on the table

Lusanda: "you look beautiful the office suits you"

Me: "thank you what brings you by"

Lusanda: "I brought lunch there's chocolate I know how you woman love that" he took everything out I remembered that I skipped lunch saliva filled my mouth

Me: "which one is mine" it two dishes ribs n chops and steak

Lusanda: "whatever you want or we can share both plates" I took the chops and started eating "if I knew you a lover of food I would brought you lunch long time ago" I giggled

Me: "been buried in work I missed lunch, why are you here?"

Lusanda: "lunch"

Me: "no a real reason you just using food" he chuckled

Lusanda: "thought we could hang out you know friends check up on each other"

Me: "you not my friend"

Lusanda: "ouch Yamkelani"

Me: "where's your woman"

Lusanda: "at work"

Me: "and why are you not at work"

Lusanda: "I'm my own boss so I can do as I please"

Me: "must be nice"

Lusanda: "why were you not answering my calls or replying to my text dang it woman I even sent emails" he said in a funny Texas accent I giggled

Me: "told you to let your woman be the one making contact my husband wouldn't appreciate a man calling me"

Lusanda: "tell him we friends"

Me: "if he got in here he wouldn't appreciate you being here as well"

Lusanda: "he likes to pop in and check up"

Me: "he works here" he chuckled

Lusanda: "must be nice! Office sex and all"

Me: "haibo" he smiled his teeth were absolutely perfectly white and lined

Lusanda: "you cute"

Me: "so I'm a pussy ... I ... I mean kitten" he was dead with laughter "stop! You know what I meant"

Lusanda: "oh Dr Khumalo you are totally cute and all tiny I need to fatten you up"

Me: "I like myself the way I am so does my husband"

Lusanda: "I know you married you don't have to keep on reminding me unless you tryna remind yourself"

Me: "I am not"

Lusanda: "don't be defensive"

Me: "what do you do"

Lusanda: "Own Sobukwe & attorneys firm but I also dabble there and there"

Me: "what's there and there"

Lusanda: "I'd tell you but I would have to kill you"

Me: "touché"

Lusanda: "so who is Yamkelani"

Me: "a mother first then a quiet respectful person lastly a wife"

Lusanda: "sounds like you've lost yourself in motherhood"

Me: "you don't know me"

Lusanda: "being a mother shouldn't be how you define yourself"

Me: "arg please"

Lusanda: "what do you do for fun"

Me: "play with my kids" he chuckled

Lusanda: "exactly"

Me: "whatever" I laughed

Lusanda: "you should laugh more you have beautiful dimples"

Me: "well thank you adv Sobukwe and thank you for the food" I said moaning in appreciation the cake just melted on my tongue

Lusanda: "you welcome" I smiled and carried on digging in until it was finished he was just staring at me

Me: "what?" He was just laughing

Lusanda: "you got chocolate on your tooth"

Me: "oh God" I looked away covering my mouth with my hand

Lusanda: "don't" he removed my hand I removed it with my tongue

Me: "and now?"

Lusanda: "can I" I shook my head

Me: "I'll go rinse my mouth excuse me" I stood up and walked out going to the bathroom I rinsed my mouth then checked my teeth I went back to the office he was still on the couch with his legs crossed "all clean now"

Lusanda: "I see"

Me: "really thank you for the food but I need to go back to my work" he stood up and fixed his pants he was wearing a powered blue 3 piece slim fit and navy Versace slippers

Lusanda: "answer my calls please"

Me: "okay" he nodded

Lusanda: "thank you" he took his phone "I'll check on you later"

Me: "later" he kissed my cheek and left I cleaned up and went back to my work.

When I got home after work I started in the kitchen took out meatballs so I could dinner Avery got in

Avery: "mom" he kissed my cheek

Me: "hey baby"

Avery: "what you making"

Me: "pasta"

Avery: "your husband is home"

Me: "Avery don't" he shrugged his shoulders took out a pocket of chips from the cupboard

Avery: "pancake fell someone left the gate unlocked upstairs and she rolled down the stairs" I muttered a curse

Me: "what the hell?!!"

Avery: "she didn't get hurt just shocked I put her in bed"

Me: "thank you" I brushed his hair going out the kitchen I went to check on pancake she was asleep with her thumb in her mouth my little pancake looked so much like her father she just had my dimples rather than that she was Bradley I brushed her long curly hair then kissed her head I walked out going to my bedroom Nzuzo was watching tv under the covers with the balcony door open

Nzuzo: "h h Hey love"

Me: "hi" I went in the closet he followed me

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry Lani I'm so sorry" I changed into bum shorts and his hoody with my ugg's "Lani you know me you know I would never lay my hands on you"

Me: "okay"

Nzuzo: "okay?"

Me: "yes" I walked out the closet he followed me he was limping

Nzuzo: "I don't understand" I went out going downstairs I made myself a sandwich and poured juice I sat on the high chair started eating Gugu got in

Gugu: "hello sisi"

Me: "who left the gate unlocked upstairs"

Gugu: "I don't know sisi"

Me: "well someone needs to know my daughter can't just roll down the stairs while there are means of protecting her from that"

Gugu: "I'm sorry I'll ask Cloe"

Me: "thank you" Nzuzo got in he sat next to me he reached for my hands but I moved them

Nzuzo: "give us space" Gugu went out the kitchen

Me: "is there anything you need"

Nzuzo: "Yammy I'm sorry no words could express how sorry I am for all that I've put you through these past weeks I was coward I dealt with Oluhle's death in such a horrible way and when you said she must be proud of me I just lost it I felt so guilty not only because of her but because of my other children they don't deserve a coward for a father and you certainly don't deserve a coward for a husband and hitting you .."

Avery: "you hit her" we turned he was standing by the door

Me: "Avery"

Nzuzo: "son"

Avery: "you fucking bastard you hit my mother!"

Me: "Avery!!! Watch your mouth" he walked closer with so much anger in his eyes I stood up "Avery stop"

Avery: "I hate you I fucking hate the soil you walk on you twisted fucker"

Nzuzo: "Avery I am still your father you will address me like one"

Avery: "it was better off when you were just a name on a story with no face" I just sat down feeling defeated Avery walked out

Nzuzo: "that child has no sense of respect whatsoever"

Me: "that is all your fault it's all on you"

Nzuzo: "Lani" he touched my shoulder but i inflicted

Me: "no! He is at that age where he needs his father more than anything but you out here being an abusive drunkard man hoe what do you expect" I stood up went upstairs I tried opening his door but it was locked "Avery open this door little mr you have some apologizing to do to your father" I knocked but he didn't open "Phiwokuhle!!!!"

Avery: "leave me alone"

Me: "I will have this door taken down and I'll see how you lock yourself in when you don't have a door" he started playing music "Avery!"

Avery: "give me space please" I sighed

Me: "okay" I went to my room I was exhausted I was so exhausted I just wanted to die I got under the covers and cried I just cried loudly I was tired of being married to Nzuzo I was tired of having to defend him to his son of pretending like I'm happy all the time behind the huge expensive house in mhlanga and besides the expensive cars or the designer clothes I was slowly losing myself. I got off the bed went to the closet I pulled down his luggage set and started packing up his clothes he got in just as I was going to the bathroom to pack his toiletries

Nzuzo: "what's going"

Me: "you leaving"

Nzuzo: "excuse me"

Me: "you are leaving my house I already packed your bags here" I gave him his toiletry bag

Nzuzo: "I am not going anywhere"

Me: "yes you are please leave my house"

Nzuzo: "it's my house as well"

Me: "so what? I must leave? Then fine I'll go tell the kids to pack because their daddy is chasing us out"

Nzuzo: "Yammy please don't do this"

Me: "leave Nzuzo this time you've gone too far and I don't want this anymore I don't want this marriage I don't want this life Nzuzo" he went on his knees and held my thighs crying

Nzuzo: "please Yamkelani please my wife I am begging you thembalam please don't do this to us we made vows you promised to hold my hand through it out"

Me: "you made a vow to be faithful to me to also protect me yet you threw me against the wall because I asked you who you sleeping with"

Nzuzo: "Lani please" I went on my knees I wiped his tears they wouldn't stop coming out "mfazi wam"

Me: "I love you I love you so much" I held his face and kissed him he let out a muffled sob and held me tightly we kissed his tears wetting both our faces he laid on the floor I got on top of him we kissed deeper I pulled back and looked at him he shook his head

Nzuzo: "don't please don't please" I stood up

Me: "please leave"

Nzuzo: "are you breaking up with me"

Me: "we married not dating but if you want to know if you allowed to be with other people then do that if you want to"

Nzuzo: "Lani"

Me: "go on and do you Nzuzo it not like you weren't already fucking other women"

Nzuzo: "I want us to work"

Me: "I think we beyond repairs now please leave"

Nzuzo: "where will I go"

Me: "the hotel or your girlfriends place I don't know"

Nzuzo: "I don't have a girlfriend"

Me: "hotel it is then"

Nzuzo: "can I leave after dinner Id like to tuck in the kids first"

Me: "okay" I went out going downstairs I cooked dinner after dinner Nzuzo went to get Liam pancake and Sphe in bed then he came in the room I was watching tv

Nzuzo: "they asleep although pancake was a little restless"

Me: "thank you"

Nzuzo: "when do I get them"

Me: "you can take them Saturday morning bring them in time for bed time"

Nzuzo; "you really doing this to us Yamkelani you breaking us apart"

Me: "this is not my fault nzuzo you have no idea how badly I am hurting right now" I wiped my tears

Nzuzo: "if you hurting then don't do this please I'll work on me I promise I'll never touch alcohol again or even look at another female please mfazi wam please I need you now more than ever"

Me: "Nzuzo just go"

Nzuzo: "I can't breath I can't do anything without you I'll be lost I feel paralyzed without you please" I looked away crying silently "I love you I love you so much my heart beats for you Yammy please forgive I'll never put us through this again"

Me: "Nzuzo go" he nodded he carried his duffle bag put the other one on the suitcase and pulled two of his suitcases out I got under the covers after locking the door and cried myself to sleep

PART 60

I was in bed after my alarm rang I was just staring into the dark It been a week since nzuzo moved out and I don't want to lie I missed him so bad I had gotten used to him not being at home since he had started drinking badly but then it wasn't this bad because I kept hoping and thinking I will wake up with him in bed the following day but this time I knew there are no chances of waking up next to him. I prayed I fasted the whole week asking God for guidance or at least a sign on what I should do how I should handle this Nzuzo tried he called everyday even though he would shower up at my office everyday with lunch he wasn't helping me in this situation because I needed a break from him I needed him to just vanish into thin air. It times like this I wished a had a mother someone to talk to who will advise me I knew I could talk to mam'ncane but then she was still Nzuzo's mom she was probably going to tell me to stick through it. I got off the bed made it then went to shower letting the hot water hit my body hard my mind drifted off I thought about the last time I took a shower with nzuzo I touched my wet lips sucking in my fingers before I took them out and touched my jawline going down to my neck down I imagined his tongue licking of the water to my boob giving it a squeeze I threw my head back letting out a soft moan I took my hand further down to my vjayjay rubbed my clit slowly I let out a moan then quickly stopped I finished up showering dried myself went out going to the closet I got dressed in caramel skin tight pants a tucked in white shirt and white platform heels I brushed my short weave took a caramel coat and my bags I went downstairs found Avery and Nosi laughing while having breakfast I made myself a bowl of cereal

Nosi: "you are such a liar Avery" I sat down started eating

Avery: "I am not lying" I let them talk as my mind drifted off to my stupid thoughts of Nzuzo until Nosi shook me

Me: "mmh"

Nosi: "we done sisi"

Avery: "let's go"

Me: "okay" I took my bag and my keys we got in the car I drove off dropped Nosi off then went to drop Avery off after that I went to work ran into Kendra in the lift

Kendra: "Dr Khumalo"

Me: "Dr Harper"

Kendra: "are you okay? You missed your appointment yesterday"

Me: "yeah I'm good do you have an opening tomorrow I can come was just busy yesterday"

Kendra: "I'll text you after seeing my diary"

Me: "okay" she got closer to me

Kendra: "I miss you"

Me: "so do I"

Kendra: "we should hang out we have a lot of catching up to do"

Me: "text me"

Kendra: "will do" the lift stopped at her floor she got off I went up to my floor

Sthe: "morning Lani"

Me: "hey please follow me we need to have the new statistics released to the board in a few hours I have to add a few things"

Sthe: "okay" I got in my office

It was hours later when Nzuzo got in with food I just huffed

Me: "Nzuzo we spoke about this how is the separation supposed to work when we at each other's faces all the time"

Nzuzo: "you wanted this separation shit and you have to eat so come" he took my hand led me to the couch

Me: "you need to stop coming to my office unless it work related" we sat down he took out the burgers and fries from the wimpy paper bag

Nzuzo: "you can't stop me from taking care of you"

Me: "I can take care of myself" we started eating

Nzuzo: "you don't have to that why you married me"

Me: "were you taking care of me when you slapped and threw me against the wall almost dislocating my shoulder" he looked down

Nzuzo: "how many more times do I have to apologize Yamkelani"

Me: "a billion times but it still wouldn't be enough because you hurt me Nzuzo it more than a physical thing you gave me an emotional scar"

Nzuzo: "Yammy"

Me: "you fucked someone else while I was laying in your bed keeping your home warm and taking care of your children"

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry" Sthe knocked and got in

Sthe: "uhm Mr Sobukwe is here"

Nzuzo: "let him in"

Me: "aibo Nzuzo it my office"

Sthe: "Lani"

Nzuzo: "I said let him in" I nodded Sthe went out

Me: "what's wrong with you?" I wanted to shout

Nzuzo: "the only people you meet Lani are doctors and I know you always keep this time slot free" the door opened and Lusanda walked in looking all hot in a maroon 3 piece slim fit suit with a black coat and Italian shoes

Lusanda: "oh hey I didn't know you with someone" I stood up

Me: "I also didn't know you were going to come by, this is Nzuzo and Nzuzo this is Lusanda"

Nzuzo: "the husband" Lusanda chuckled

Lusanda: "I'm the friend" he offered his hand Nzuzo looked at it a little before shaking it

Nzuzo: "you the guy from Yadini I remember you what do you want with my wife"

Me: "haibo Nzuzo stop!"

Lusanda: "look Lani I'll call you okay let me leave you with your husband who moved out" with that he walked out

Nzuzo: "are you fucking him Yammy is that why you telling him about our business"

Me: "I didn't tell him and he is engaged" I honestly didn't tell him

Nzuzo: "I'm not stupid Yamkelani! How did he even know where you work let alone your office"

Me: "I .."

Nzuzo: "you been in contact with that idiot for months Yamkelani are you fucking him?! How many times?"

Me: "I do.."

Nzuzo: "talk dammit"

Me: "I don't owe you an explanation" he walked towards me I moved back until I almost fell over the chair

Nzuzo: "talk"

Me: "leave my office Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "Yamkelani don't test my patience"

Me: "are you going to hit me again" he moved back

Nzuzo: "ofcos not"

Me: "then leave my office" he sat on the couch

Nzuzo: "we not done eating"

Me: "I'm full"

Nzuzo: "sit.down.now"

Me: "no Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "don't make me pull you down" I sat down on my chair behind the desk "Yamkelani don't push me"

Me: "you will not bully me nzuzo and don't make me call my lawyer" he stood up and left I breathed out went to lock my door I took my food and continued eating I had a text from Lusanda asking if I'm okay I called him

Lusanda: "hey are you okay he seemed really angry"

Me: "I'm sorry I'm so embarrassed"

Lusanda: "no it understandable don't be"

Me: "why didn't you tell me you going to come by when we spoke last night"

Lusanda: "it's wasn't planned I'm sorry"

Me: "it's okay don't apologize"

Lusanda: "did he hurt you"

Me: "no he didn't, how did you know that he moved out"

Lusanda: "you told me don't you remember" I tried to think about it but I honestly couldn't remember

Me: "no I didn't tell you"

Lusanda: "you probably just forgot"

Me: "maybe"

Lusanda: "I actually came to invite you for lunch on Saturday at my house we having a few friends over"

Me: "I can finally meet your woman"

Lusanda: "yes so you in"

Me: "yes I'll see you on Saturday"

Lusanda: "great! Will text you the address be there around 11"

Me: "cool bye"

Lusanda: "bye" I dropped the call and went on with my work I was still busy when I got a FaceTime call from Claire I answered

Me: "hey what's wrong" she was crying

Claire: "his leaving me Lani"

Me: "oh God what happened"

Claire: "I messed up Lani I messed up so bad now he wants a divorce and he wants to take my children Lani my kids!"

Me: "what did you do because he is not cruel" she sniffed

Claire: "remember Will my personal assistant"

Me: "yes"

Claire: "oh God how can I be so stupid"

Me: "oh Claire tell me you didn't"

Claire: "it was once Lani then he walked in the office while we were busy now he thinks it been going on for a long time"

Me: "talk to him Claire explain beg for him to forgive you but I can't believe you would do that to him his the nicest guy ever do you know how much damage being cheated on does to a person"

Claire: "please don't make me feel worse" I sighed

Me: "I'll call him and speak to him later now get some sleep it late there"

Claire: "I can't sleep I've been crying the whole day he locked me out of the house I'm in a hotel I haven't seen my kids since I left in the morning"

Me: "I'm sorry Claire" she nodded and ended the call

Being cheated on is no fun it damages your confidence and you ability to trust you even start questioning yourself because you think if I was just little more beautiful or little more sexy even a little smarter he/she wouldn't have cheated maybe if I had been more loving or paid more attention to her/him we wouldn't be in this position when actually in more than 70% of the time it not your fault that your partner couldn't be faithful he/she decided willingly to bring a 3rd party to your relationship because of their own unsatisfiable greed or because of their own insecurities because they would rather have a spare someone a fall back plan then to be alone if or when you decide to live him/her

.

It was Saturday morning when I woke up Nzuzo wasn't getting the kids today he was going to spend the day here with them because he had moved out of the hotel he was staying at a B&B I went downstairs to make breakfast after brushing my teeth and washing my face Thando got in carrying Sphe and holding pancake's hand

Thando; "morning mommy"

Pancake: "mommy" I gave them hugs Sphe just smiled showing his few teeth this child was too cute for words

Thando: "what you making" she looked over in the pans "we having you pancake"

Pancake: "pancakes" she giggled I gave them a pancake each

Sphe: "thasss"

Pancake: "thanks Sphe" he laughed

Sphe: "thassss" I giggled I gave him a peck he held my cheeks with his tiny hands

"Isn't this just beautiful" I looked at him he was getting in he greeted the kids kissing their head then he came to kiss my cheek

Nzuzo: "how are you"

Me: "I'm good and you"

Nzuzo: "missing you" I nodded and went on to making breakfast while he spoke with the kids a little later Masisi and Nosi and Avery also came down we had breakfast Masisi and Avery were not speaking to Nzuzo we finished breakfast I cleaned up the kitchen and the dinning area then I went to bath taking

a nice long really long hot bubble bath I got out lotioned then got dressed in ripped black boyfriend jeans a black low cut vest and an olive green sleeveless coat with black ankle strap heels I brushed my weave got my black Chanel sling bag I went out my room going downstairs I went to the theater room to say bye to the kids Nzuzo followed me out

Nzuzo: "where are you going to"

Me: "Lusanda's house he and his fiancé are hosting a small lunch tya thing"

Nzuzo: "I'm coming with"

Me: "you were not invited and you were rude to him last time you saw him"

Nzuzo: "then this would be a good chance to make that right"

Me: "the kids miss you Nzuzo you here to spend time with them"

Nzuzo: "I can do that tomorrow"

Me: "no we need to start living our separate lives"

Nzuzo: "don't do that Lani don't go into another man's house without me your husband"

Me: "you were not acting like my husband these past months now you want to act like him because you feeling a little insecure and you threatened by Lusanda who is in a committed relationship and I am still your wife in the eyes of the law and our families I will not do things that will look down on my marriage I am not you I know my beliefs now please excuse me I'll be back before you leave" I walked away leaving him standing there. I drove to pick n pay bought a bottle of wine then drove to Lusanda's house I pressed the intercom but the gate just opened I drove in the driveway was surprisingly too empty for a house that was supposed to be hosting visitors

Me: "must be really early" I spoke to myself I parked went to knock Lusanda opened wearing jean shorts and a t-shirt

Lusanda: "hey wow you look beautiful"

Me: "thank you" he moved aside I got in "I am really early am I not"

Lusanda: "you are just in time"

Me: "where's everyone" he brushed his hair up and down

Lusanda: "well it just you and I"

Me: "hhu"

Lusanda: "everyone canceled last minute"

Me: "what?!"

Lusanda: "yeah weird right" I looked at him getting slightly annoyed

Me: "don't lie"

Lusanda: "okay I'm sorry there was no little lunch party I just wanted to spend time with you I know you wouldn't have agreed I'm sorry"

Me: "where's your wife"

Lusanda: "let me open that wine so it can breath"

Me: "no talk!"

Lusanda: "there is no fiancée" I looked at him in disbelief "I'm sorry okay"

Me: "you lied"

Lusanda: "it not like you gave me an option Lani you wouldn't even give me a minute of your time"

Me: "you lied" I said softly I was sick and tired of men lying to me

Lusanda: " I'm sorry" I turned to walk away but he held my arm "I'm sorry please don't go"

Me: "I am such a fool like I just never learn I'm too naïve I trust to easily please let go of my arms"

Lusanda: "I'm sorry I'm truly sorry and believe me you didn't make any mistake by trusting me Lani just give me a chance"

Me: "lusanda let go please" he did

Lusanda: "please stay just for a few hours please I'll cook for you"

Me: "no thank you" I walked out he followed me

Lusanda: "what are you so afraid of who damaged you so badly that you think nzuzo is the only person you can be with or that every male is out to get you he maybe your sanctuary but those things are made to change if the time comes" I got in my car and drove off I got home went straight up to my room without anyone seeing me I changed into my pjs went downstairs warmed the pizza and the fried chicken that was left over from last night I took a corkscrew went up I opened the bottle of wine opened the tv after getting under the comforter I started eating and drinking straight from the bottle I was halfway through the bottle when the door opened and Nzuzo got in

Nzuzo: "what's wrong"

Me: "nothing" he got on the bed

Nzuzo: "are we in the dark and twisty place"

Me: "no" he took the bottle from me and took a sip then gave it back to me i took a larger sip then put the bottle down on the bedside

Nzuzo: "what did he do to you"

Me: "he lied I'm tired of being lied to" he got under the comforter with me I put my head on his shoulder he kissed my head I looked at him we stared at each other he got closer to my face we kissed he got on top of me pulling me down I took off his t-shirt he looked at me i raised my hip

Me: "please" he took off my pjs then kissed me all the way down squeezing my breasts they felt so full their were really sensitive he took me to muff down after coming he took his jeans off then entered me gently he didn't move we kissed he pulled back then pressed his forehead on mine

Nzuzo: "I'm sorry I am so sorry I'll do better I promise I'll be better"

Me: "Nzuzo"

Nzuzo: "I love you"

Me: "I love you too" he pulled back until he was almost all out then pushed back in spreading my legs apart going all in I cried out arching my back he muttered a curse I held his head he looked at me and smiled

I loved him with my all he was my peace my safe place

THE END